

**THE 22 CHRIST KINGS OF ZION:
STUDIES IN THE SECRET MYSTERIES OF THE
DIVINE SONS AND DAUGHTERS OF GOD
AND THEIR MANIFESTATION IN THE
MATERIAL WORLD**

**by
Woodrow Edgar Nichols, Jr.**

**I
THE NEW TESTAMENT TEACHING ON DIVINE SONSHIP**

Paul, the Apostle to the Gentiles

Wherefore I am made a Minister, according to the Dispensation of God which is Given to me for you, to Fulfill the Word of God; even the Mystery which hath been Hid from Aeons and from Generations, but is now made Manifest to his Holy Ones: to whom God would make Known what is the riches of the Glory of this Mystery among the Gentiles; which is
Christ in You, the Hope of Glory.

...And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he Quickened together with him, having Forgiven you All Trespases; blotting out the Handwriting of Ordinances [Indictments under the Ten Commandments] that were against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way,

Nailing it to his Cross.

– Colossians 1:25-27; 2:13-14

...Knowing that a man is not Justified by the Works of the Law, but by the Faith of Jesus Christ, even we have Believed in Christ Jesus, that we may be Justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the Works of the Law: for by the Works of the Law shall no Flesh be Justified. [Almost all the modern translations do this verse wrong: i.e., the NIV changes the sense to “Faith in Christ,” not the “Faith of Christ.” However, John G. Gager in Reinventing Paul (Oxford: Oxford Press, 2000; pp. 84-85) cites Lloyd Gaston’s version of Galatians 2:16 from, “Paul and the Torah” (Vancouver: 1987): “knowing that no one is justified by works of the law, **but rather by the faithfulness of Jesus Christ, we too became believers in Christ Jesus, in order that we might be Justified by the Faithfulness of Christ,**

and not by Works of the Law,” showing his agreement with the sense of the King James Version, to wit, that it is the the Faith of Jesus Christ that saves us, not our own.]

...O Foolish Galatians, who hath Bewitched you, that ye should not obey the Truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you? [The World-View of the Bible includes Belief in Witchcraft and Spell Casting, Blessing and Cursing, and Prophecy; in other words, Belief in the Supernatural Realm as part of Reality.]

This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the Works of the Law, or by the Hearing of Faith?
Are ye so Foolish? having begun in the Spirit,
are ye now Made Perfect by the Flesh?

...For ye are all the Sons of God by Faith in Christ Jesus....There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, male nor female; **for ye are all One in Christ Jesus.**

...But when the Fulness of Time was come, God Sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the Law, to Redeem them that were under the Law, that we might Receive the Adoption of Sons, and because ye are Sons, God has sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, **Abba, Father.** Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a Son; and if a Son, **then an Heir of God through Christ.**

...Stand fast therefore in the Liberty wherewith Christ hath Made us Free, and be not entangled again with the Yoke of Bondage.

...Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are Justified by the Law; ye are Fallen from Grace.

„,For, Brothers, ye have been Called unto Liberty; only use not Liberty for an occasion to the Flesh, but by Love serve one another. For All the Law is Fulfilled in one Word, even in this:
Thou shalt Love thy neighbor as thyself.

...But if ye be Led of the Spirit,
ye are not Under the Law.

...But the Fruit of the Spirit is Love, Joy, Peace, longsuffering,
gentleness, Goodness, Faith, meekness, temperance:

against such there is no Law.

And they that are Christ's have crucified the Flesh
with the affections and lusts.

If we Live in the Spirit, let us also Walk in the Spirit.

Let us not be desirous of Vain Glory, provoking
one another, envying one another.

– Galatians 2:16; 3:1-3, 26, 28; 4:4-7;
5:1, 4, 13-14, 18, 22-26

Howbeit we speak Wisdom among them that are Perfect:
yet not the wisdom of this Kosmos, nor of the Archons of this Kosmos,
that come to nought: but we speak the Wisdom of God in a Mystery,
even the Hidden Wisdom, which God Ordained before the Kosmos unto our Glory:
which none of the Archons of this Kosmos knew: for had they known it,
they would not have crucified the Lord of Glory.

But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither hath entered into the
heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that Love him.
But God hath Revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit Searcheth All Things,
yea, the Deep Things of God. [John Zebedee calls this “The Depths of Satan,”
and accuses Lydia the Prophetess of being a Jezebel for teaching these
Hidden Mysteries: Revelation 1:18-:24; cf., Acts 16:14-15.]

For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man
which is in him? even so the Things of God Knoweth no man,
but the Spirit of God

Now we have Received, not the Spirit of the Kosmos, but the Spirit which is of God:
that we might Know the Things that are freely Given to us of God. Which Things also
we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Spirit
teacheth, comparing Spiritual Things with Spiritual. But the Natural Man receiveth
not the Things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him; neither can he
know them, because they are Spiritually Discerned. But he that is Pneumatic Judgeth
All Things, yet he himself is judged of no man. For who hath Known
the Mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him?

But we have the Mind of Christ.

...Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have Reigned as Kings
without us: and I would to God ye did Reign, that we also
may Reign with you. [Perfected Holy Ones, Understanding
the Nature of Grace and their own Forgiveness, Reign as
Kings in their Perfect Man Spirit.]

...All Things are Lawful unto me, but All Things are not Expedient:
All Things are Lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the Power of any.

...All Things are Lawful for me, but All Things are not Expedient:
All Things are Lawful for me, but All Things edify not.
[The idea that Antinomian Universalists reject the
Moral Law is absurd, as verses below prove it. We
only reject the Law of Moses as the basis of Salvation.]

...Though I speak with the tongues of men and of Angels,
and have not Giving Love, I am become as sounding brass,
or a tinkling cymbal.

And though I have the Gift of Prophecy, and Understand All Mysteries,
and all Knowledge; and though I have All Faith, so that I could remove Mountains,
and have not Giving Love, I am nothing.

And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body
to be burned, and have not Giving Love, it profiteth me nothing.

Giving Love suffereth long, and is kind; Giving Love envieth not;
Giving Love vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, doth not behave unseemly,
seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no Evil;
rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the Truth;
beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things,
endureth all things.

Giving Love never faileth: but whether there be prophecies,
they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease;
whether there be Knowledge, it shall vanish away.

For we Know in part, and we prophecy in part.
But when that which is Perfect is come, then that which
is in part shall be done away.

When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child,
I thought as a child: but when I became a man,
I put away childish things.

For now we see through a glass darkly: but then face to face:
now I Know in part; but then shall I Know even as also I am Known.

And now abideth Faith, Hope, Giving Love, these three;
but the Greatest of these is Giving Love.

[I have translated the Greek “agape”, as Love in Action,
Active Love, hence Giving Love, often associated with
God’s Love, i.e. Unconditional Love.]

...Moreover, Brothers, I declare unto you the Gospel which I have Preached unto you,
 which also ye have Received, and wherein ye stand;
 by which also ye are Saved, if ye keep in memory what I have preached unto you,
 unless ye have Believed in vain.

**For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received,
 how that Christ died for our Sins according to the Scriptures;
 and that he was buried, and that he Rose again the Third Day
 according to the Scriptures.**

[Paul adds the alleged Appearances of the Risen Christ to Peter,
 the Twelve, James the Just, and over 500 unknown
 people at one time, before he figured out that Peter,
 the Twelve, and James the Just, were Liars and
 sheep stealers, after which he condemned them as
 Ministers of Satan (Cf. II Cor. 11:12-15: see below).]

...But now is Christ Risen from the Dead, and become the
 Firstfruits of them that slept.

For since by Man came Death, by Man came also
 the Resurrection of the Dead.

For as in Adam all Die, even so in Christ
 shall All Men be Made Alive.

– I Corinthians 2:6-16; 4:8; 6:12; 10:23;
 13:1-13; 15:1-4, 20-22

Now he which Establish us with you In Christ,
 and hath Made us Christs, is God;
 who hath also Sealed us, and **Given the Earnest
 of the Spirit in our hearts.**

...Ye are our Epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men:
 forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the Epistle Ministered by us,
 written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the Living God; **not in
 Tables of Stone [the Ten Commandments]**, but in fleshly tablets of
 the heart. And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward:

...Who also hath Made us able Ministers of the New Testament; not of
 the Letter, but of the Spirit: **for the Letter killeth, but the Spirit Giveth Life.**

But if the Ministry of Death, Written and Engraven in Stones, was
 Glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the
 face of Moses for the Glory of his countenance: which Glory was to be
 Done Away: how shall not the Ministry of the Spirit be rather Glorious?

– II Corinthians 1:21-22; 3:2-4, 6-8

The New Covenant of Grace

Therefore by the Deeds of the Law there shall no Flesh
be Justified in his Sight: for by the Law
is the Knowledge of Sin.

But now the Righteousness of God Without the Law is Manifested,
being Witnessed by the Law and the Prophets:
even the Righteousness of God which is by Faith of Jesus Christ
unto All and upon All them that Believe:
for there is No Difference:
for All have Sinned and Come Short of the Glory of God.

...But to him that Worketh not, but Believeth on him
that Justifieth the ungodly,
his Faith is counted for Righteousness.
Even as David also describeth the Blessedness
of the man, unto whom God Imputeth
Righteousness Without Works,
saying, Blessed are they whose Iniquities
are Forgiven, and whose Sins are Covered.
Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not Impute Sin.

...But not as the Offense, so also is the Free Gift.
For if through the Offense of One Many be Dead,
much more the Grace of God, and the Gift by Grace,
which is by the One Man, Jesus Christ,
hath Abounded unto Many.
And not as it was by One that Sinned,
so is the Gift: for the Judgment was by One to Condemnation,
but the Free Gift is of Many Offenses unto Justification.
For if by One Man's Offense Death Reign'd by One:
much more they which Received Abundance of Grace
and the Gift of Righteousness shall Reign in Life by One,
Jesus Christ.

Therefore, as by the Offense of One Judgment came
upon All Men to Condemnation:
even so by the Righteousness of One the Free Gift
came unto All Men unto Justification of Life.
For as by One Man's Disobedience Many were Made Sinners,
so by the Obedience of One shall Many be Made Righteous.

Moreover, the Law entered, that the Offense might Abound.
But where Sin Abounded, Grace did Much More Abound:
 That as Sin Reigned unto Death, even so might Grace
 Reign through Righteousness unto Eternal Life
 by Jesus Christ our Lord.

...There is therefore No Condemnation to them which are In Christ Jesus,
 who Walk not after the Flesh, but after the Spirit.
 For the Law of the Spirit of Life In Christ Jesus
 hath Made me Free from the Law of Sin and Death.

...For as many as are Led by the Spirit of God, they are the Sons of God.
 For ye have not received the Spirit of Bondage again to fear; but ye have
 Received the Spirit of Adoption, whereby we cry, **Abba, Father.** The
 Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the Children of God.
 And if Children, then Heirs; Heirs of God, and joint-Heirs with Christ.
 ...For I reckon that the sufferings of this Present Time are not worthy to be
 compared with the Glory which shall be Revealed In us. For the Earnest
 Expectation of Creation waiteth for the **Manifestation of the Sons of God.**

....And we Know that All Things Work Together for Good to them that Love God,
 to them who are the Called according to His Purpose. For whom he did Foreknow,
 he also did Predestinate to be Conformed to the Image of his Son that he might be

the Firstborn among many Brothers [and Sisters.]

– Romans 3:20-23; 4:5-8 [Quoting Psalm 32:1-2];
 5:15-21; 8:1-2, 14-17a, 18, 28-29 [A key part of 3:22a,
 “unto All and upon All them that Believe,” has been omitted
 by every modern Bible, leaving the next verse: “for there is
 no difference” ambiguous. The NIV takes this heresy further
 by stating the dichotomy explicitly but adding their own
 interpretation as if it were real scripture: “There is no difference
 between Jews and Gentiles.” This is pure speculation, hoping
 the unsophisticated reader will take it on face value; however,
 this devilish addition eliminates the Universal Effect of Christ’s
 Death on the Cross. The modern versions also change Saving
 Faith to ourselves, rather than that of Jesus Christ by changing
 the KJV’s “even the Righteousness of God by Faith OF Jesus
 Christ,” to “The Righteousness from God comes through
 Faith IN Jesus Christ.” Of course the NIV goes even further,

changing the KJV's "But now THE Righteousness of God,"
to, "But now A Righteousness of God," thus making it just
one of many. The same is true for Galatians 2:16 and Phil. 3:9.

Let the NIV be Accursed!]

Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath Blessed us with
all Spiritual Blessings in Heavenly Places in Christ: according as he hath Chosen us
in him before the Foundation of the Kosmos that we should be holy and without blame
before him in Love: having Predestinated us unto the Adoption of Children
by Jesus Christ to himself according to the Good Pleasure of his Will.

...Having Made Known to us the Mystery of his Will, according to his Good Pleasure
which he hath Purposed in himself: that in the Dispensation of the Fulness of Times
he might gather together in One All Things In Christ, both which are in Heaven,
and which are on Earth; even In him. In whom also we have obtained an Inheritance,
being Predestinated according to the Purpose of him who Worketh All Things
after the Counsel of his own Will....that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ,
the Father of Glory, may Give unto you the Spirit of Wisdom and Revelation
in the Knowledge of him; the Eyes of your Understanding being Enlightened;
that ye may Know what is the Hope of his Calling, and what the Riches of the Glory
of his Inheritance in the Holy Ones. And what is the Exceeding Greatness of his Power
to us-ward who Believe, according to the Working of his Mighty Power,
which he Wrought in Christ, when he Raised him from the Dead,
and Set him at his own Right Hand in the Heavenly Places, far above all Principality,
and Power, and Might, and Dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this
Kosmos, but also in that which is to come; and hath put All Things under his feet, and
gave him to be the Head over All Things to the Church, which is his Body, **the
Fulness of him that Filleth All in All.**

...But God, who is Rich in Mercy, for his Great Love wherewith he Loved us, even when
we were Dead in Sins, **hath Quickened us together with Christ, (by Grace ye are Saved;)
and hath Raised us Up together, and Made us Sit together in Heavenly Places in Christ
Jesus;** that in the Ages to Come he might show the Exceeding Riches of his Grace in his
Kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. For by Grace are ye Saved through Faith; and
that not of yourselves: it is the Gift of God: not of Works, lest any man should boast.
For we are his Workmanship, Created in Christ Jesus unto Good Works, which God hath
before Ordained that we should walk in them.

...For this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles, if ye have heard
of the Dispensation of the Grace of God which is Given me to you-ward; how that by
Revelation he made Known the Mystery...whereby when ye read, ye may Understand
my Knowledge in the Mystery of Christ; which in Other Aeons was not made Known

unto the sons of men, as it is now Revealed unto his Holy Apostles and Prophets by the Spirit; that the Gentiles should be Fellow-Heirs, and of the Same Body, and Partakers of his Promise in Christ by the Gospel; whereof I was Made a Minister, according to the Gift of the Grace of God Given unto me by the Effectual Working of his Power. Unto me, who am less than the least of all Holy Ones in this Grace Given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the Unsearchable Riches of Christ; and to make all men See what is the Fellowship of this Mystery, which from the Beginning of the Kosmos hath been Hid in God, who Created All Things by Christ Jesus: to the Intent that now unto the Principalities and Powers in Heavenly Places might be Known by the Church, the Manifold Wisdom of God, according to the Eternal Purpose which he Purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: in whom we have Boldness and Access with Confidence by the Faith of him. Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my Tribulations for you, which is your Glory. For this I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, of whom the Whole Family in Heaven and Earth is named. That he would Grant you, according to the Riches of his Glory, to be Strengthened with Might by the Spirit in the Inner Man; that Christ may Dwell in your Hearts by Faith; that ye, being Rooted and Grounded in Love, may be able to Comprehend with All Holy Ones what is the Breadth, and Length, and Depth, and Height; and to Know the Love of Christ, which passeth Knowledge,

that ye might be Filled with the Fulness of God.

– Ephesians 1:3-5, 9-11a; 2:4-10; 3:1-19

Let this Mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: who being in the Form of God, thought it not robbery to be Equal with God: but made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the Form of a Servant, and was Made in the Likeness of Men: and being found in Fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto Death, even the Death of the Cross. **Wherefore God hath Highly Exalted him, and Given him a Name which is Above every name: that at the Name of Jesus every knee should bow, of Things in Heaven, and Things in Earth, and Things Under the Earth: and that Every Tongue should Confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the Glory of God the Father.**

The Righteousness of the Law versus The Righteousness of God by Faith

...And be found In him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the Law, but that which is through the Faith of Christ, the Righteousness which is of God by Faith.

...For it is God which Worketh in you both to Will and to Do his Good Pleasure,,, that ye may be blameless and harmless, **the Sons of God**, without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse generation, among whom ye Shine as **Lights in the Kosmos**.

For our Conversation is in Heaven, from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his Glorious Body, according to the Working whereby he is able even to Subdue All Things unto himself.

– Philippians 2:13, 15; 3:9, 20-21.

John Mark, the Beloved Disciple, Son of Clopas and Mary, the Nephew of Barnabas

But as many as Received him, to them Gave he Power to Become the Sons of God, even to them that Believe on his Name: which were born, not of blood, nor the will of the flesh, nor the will of man, but of God.

...And Jesus walked in the Temple in Solomon's Porch...Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him. Jesus answered them, Many good works have I showed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me?

The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.

Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your Law, I said, Ye are gods?

If he called them gods, unto whom the Word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken: say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and Sent into the Kosmos, Thou blasphemest: because I said,

I am the Son of God?

...And one of them, named Caiaphas being the High Priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people and that the whole Nation perish not. And this spake he not of himself; but being High Priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that Nation; and not for that Nation only, but that also he should gather Together in One the **Children of God that were scattered abroad**.

Jesus Explains the Nature of the Second Coming

...And I will Ppray the Father, and he shall Give you another Paraclete, that he may Abide with you for ever; even the Spirit of Truth, whom the Kosmos cannot receive, because it Seeth him not, neither Knoweth him: but ye Know him; **for he Dwelleth with you, and shall be In you**. I will not leave you without a Paraclete: **I will Come to you**. Yet a little while, and the Kosmos seeth me no more; **but ye shall See me**; because I Live ye shall Live also. **At that day ye shall Know that I am In my Father; and ye In me, and I In you**.

...But the Paraclete, which is the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will Send in my Name, he shall Teach you All Things, and bring All Things to your Remembrance, whatsoever I have Said unto you....Howbeit when he, the Spirit of Truth, is Come, he will Guide you into All Truth: for he shall not Speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall Hear, that shall he Speak: and he will Show you Things to Come. He shall Glorify me: for he shall Receive of mine, and shall Show it unto you. All Things that the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he shall Take of mine, and shall Show it unto you.

...There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a Ruler of the Jews: the same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest except God be with him. Jesus answered and said unto him, Amen, Amen, I say unto thee, Except a man be Born Again, he cannot See the Kingdom of God. Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? Jesus answered, Amen, Amen, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water, and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God. That which is born of the Flesh is Flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is Spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be Born Again. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is Born of the Spirit. Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be? Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a Master of Israel, and knowest not these things? Amen, Amen, I saith unto thee, We speak that we do Know, and Testify that we have Seen; and ye receive not our Witness. If I have told you Earthly Things, and ye Believe not, how shall ye Believe, if I tell you of Heavenly Things? And no man hath Ascended up to Heaven, but he that Came Down from Heaven, even the Son of Man which is in Heaven. And as Moses lifted up the the Serpent in the Wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up: that whosoever Believeth in him should not perish, but have Eternal Life. For God so Loved the Kosmos that he gave his Only Begotten Son, that whosoever Believeth in him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life. For God Sent not his Son into the Kosmos to condemn the Kosmos; but that the Kosmos through him might be Saved....But he that doeth Truth cometh to the Light, that his deeds may be Manifest, that they are Wrought in God.

...**But the hour cometh, and now is**, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in Spirit and in Truth: for the Father Seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in Spirit and in Truth.

...Then said Jesus to those Jews which Believed on him, If ye continue in my Word, then are ye my Disciples indeed: and ye shall Know the Truth, and the Truth shall Make you Free. ...If the Son therefore shall Make you Free, ye shall be Free indeed.

...Then Pilate entered into the Judgment Hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the King of the Jews? Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of me?

Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own Nation and the Chief Priests have delivered thee unto me: What hast thou done?

Jesus answered, My Kingdom is not of this Kosmos: if my Kingdom were of this Kosmos, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews; but Now is my Kingdom not from hence.

Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a King then?

Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a King.

To this End was I born, and for this Cause came

I into the Kosmos, that I should bear Witness

unto the Truth. Every one that is of the Truth

Heareth my Voice. Pilate saith unto him,

What is Truth?

– John 1:12-13; 10:23, 31-36; 11:49-52;

14:16-20, 26; 16:13-15; 3:1-17, 21; 4:23-24; 8:31-32, 36;

18:33-38a. [Two main cults emerged in Jerusalem after the

Death of Jesus. John Mark and Mary Magdalene were members of the first one formed on the Third Day following their Visions of the Risen Lord, where they Received the Holy Spirit from Jesus himself (John 20:19-22); the second was formed by the Apostles Inspired by the Spirit of the Law at the Festival of Pentecost, which celebrated the Giving of the Law to Moses (Acts 2:1-4). I have identified the author, the Beloved Disciple as John Mark, but others have identified the Beloved Disciple as Mary Magdalene, which I find somewhat persuasive, but when Jesus on the cross looks down on Mary and the Beloved Disciple, he says to Mary, “Woman, behold thy son!” (John 19:26), indicating a male.

Of course, he could have meant this esoterically, because in the Gnostic Gospels Jesus promises to make Mary Magdalene a Perfect Man. I have also identified the unnamed young man escaping arrest in the Garden of Gethsemane as John Mark: “And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about his naked body: and the young men laid hold on him: and he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked” (Mark 14:51-52). Paul calls him Mark, who was a fellowlaborer in Paul’s Asian ministry (Philemon 24) and gives him a good report in Colossians 4:10: “Aristarchus my fellowprisoner saluteth you, and Mark, sister’s son to Barnabas, (touching whom ye received commandments: if he come unto you, receive him.” I believe he is the main source behind the Gospel of John and the leader of the Johannine community in Asia centered in Ephesus.]

Jesus On the Resurrection of the Children of God

Then came to him certain of the Sadducees, which deny that there is any Resurrection; and they asked him, saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any man’s brother dies without children, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. There were therefore seven brothers: and the first took a wife, and died without children. And the second took her to wife, and he died childless. And the third took her; and in like manner the seven also; and they left no children, and died. Last of all, the woman died also. Therefore in the Resurrection whose wife of them is she?
for seven had her to wife?

And Jesus answering said unto them, The children of this Kosmos marry, and are given in marriage: but they that shall be accounted worthy to obtain that Kosmos, and the Resurrection from the Dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: neither can they Die any more: for they are equal unto the Angels; and are the Children of God, being the Children of the Resurrection. Now that the Dead are Raised, even Moses showed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. For he not a God of the Dead, but of the Living: for all Live unto him.
– Luke 20:27-38 [Luke omits the opening words of Jesus from

Mark 12:18-27 and Matthew 22:23-33: “Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the Scriptures, neither the Power of God.” Luke also omits the closing of Mark: “ye therefore do greatly err.” And the closing of Matthew: “And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.” This doctrine could mean a contradiction of Genesis 6 and Enoch, where fallen angels have sex with human women and have giant offspring; or it may not contradict if Jesus just means that there is no sex among the Angels themselves.]

The Resurrection is a Spiritual (Pneumatic) Event

Now if Christ be Preached that he Rose from the Dead, how say some among you that there is no Resurrection of the Dead?

But if there be no Resurrection of the Dead, then is Christ not Risen: and if Christ be not Risen, then is our Preaching vain, and your Faith is also vain. Yea, and we are found False Witnesses of God: because we have Testified of God that he Raised Up Christ; whom he Raised not Up, if so be that the Dead Rise not.

For if the Dead Rise not, then is not Christ Raised: and if Christ be not Raised, your Faith is vain, and ye are yet in your Sins....

But some man will say, How are the Dead Raised Up?
and with what body do they come?

Thou Fool, that which thou sowest is not Quickened, except it Die; and that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain: but God Giveth it a body as it hath Pleased him, and to every Seed his own body....

So also is the Resurrection of the Dead. It is sown in Corruption; it is Raised in Uncorruption:
it is sown in Dishonor; it is Raised in Glory;
it is sown in Weakness; it is Raised in Power:

it is sown a Natural Body; **it is Raised a Spiritual Body.**

And so it is Written, The first man Adam was Made a Living Soul; the last Adam was Made a Quickening Spirit.

Howbeit that was not first which is Spiritual, but that which is Natural; and afterward that which is Spiritual.

The first man is of the Earth, Earthy; the second man is the Lord from Heaven.

As is the Earthy, such are they also that are Earthy;
and as is the Heavenly, such are they also that are Heavenly.

And we have borne the Image of the Earthy, we shall also bear the Image of the Heavenly.

Now this I say, Brothers, that flesh and blood cannot Inherit the Kingdom of God; neither doth Corruption Inherit Uncorruption.

– I Corinthians 15:12-17, 33-38, 42-50 [Paul’s analysis is partially based on his belief in a Second Coming and an Apocalypse, where we know from hindsight that he was in Error in this belief.

But his understanding of the Resurrection is important because he envisions it as a Spiritual Event and in a Spiritual Body.

For we also Know that we have the First Fruits of the Resurrection Here and Now with Christ In us, the Hope of Glory.

Thus the Dogma that Christ Rose Bodily from the Dead means that he now exists in a Spiritual Body, not one of flesh and blood.

Otherwise the Resurrection would be a Night of the Living Dead, a real Horror Show (cf. Matthew 27:52-53). Thus Paul imagines

that Jesus Rose on the Third Day in a Spiritual Body, a reason why he never mentions an Empty Tomb. Luke directly contradicts

such a view, having Jesus deny that he is a Spirit after his Resurrection:

“Behold my hands and feet, that it is I myself; handle me and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have. And when they had thus spoken, he showed them his hands and feet. And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any food?

And they gave him a piece of broiled fish, and of an honeycomb.

And he took it, and did eat before them (Lk. 24:39).” But such

a view is purely Platonic in its Flesh/Spirit dichotomy, for after all, the Angels were able to have sex and offspring with human women (Gen. 6:1-4),

and the fact that they can eat food with humans was proved with Abraham

at Mamre, where he picnicked with three Angels, one of whom

was YHWH (Gen. 18:1-6). This same Platonic view can be

found in John 20:17, 27-28. Spirits and Angels clearly can

Materialize, so watching them eat in no way interferes with

the fact that they are still Spirit Beings.]

The Horror of Flesh and Blood Bodily Resurrection:
Night of the Living Dead

Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the Ghost. And, behold, the Veil of the Temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the Earth did quake, and the rocks rent; and the Graves were opened; and many Bodies of the Holy Ones who Slept Arose, and came out of

the Graves after his Resurrection, and went into the Holy City,
and Appeared unto many.
– Matthew 27:50-53

The Man Who Would be King:
James the Just Lords It Over Paul, Barnabas and Titus

Then all the multitude kept silence, and gave audience to
Barnabas and Paul [Luke omits Titus from his account;
cf. Galatians 2:3, suggesting a strong rivalry for leadership
over the Pauline communities in Greece after the death
of Paul, with Luke representing the Churches in Macedonia,
and Titus representing the Churches in Achaia], declaring
what miracles and wonders God had wrought among the
Gentiles by them.

And after they had held their peace, James answered,
saying, Men and Brothers, hearken unto me:

Simon hath declared how God at the first did visit the
Gentiles to take out of them a people for his Name.

And to this agree the words of the Prophets; as it is written:

**After this I will return, and will build again the
Tabernacle of David, which is fallen down; and I will
build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up: that
any residue of men might seek after the Lord, and all
the Gentiles, upon whom my Name is called, saith the
Lord, who doeth all these things.** [Quoting Amos 9:11-12;
to wit, the prophecy is Messianic, claiming that a Son
of David is to be reinstated as King and Priest.]

Known unto God are all his works from the Beginning
of the Kosmos. Wherefore **my Sentence** is, that we trouble
not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God:
But that we write unto them, that they abstain from pollutions
of Idols, and from fornication, and from things strangled,
and from blood. For Moses of old time hath in every city
them that preach him, being read in the synagogues
every sabbath day.

– Acts 15:12-21 [Note who has the last word,
the so-called “Sentence” of the King,
burdening the Gentiles with the food restrictions
and behavior imposed by the Law of Moses.

Note also who is absent: Titus, the uncircumcised
Greek (Gal. 2:3), the test case on the issue, is

totally omitted from the Book of Acts. Titus was essential to Paul's Gentile ministry; not only did he attend the Summit as the representative Gentile, he helped Paul establish his ministry in Crete (Titus 1:5; also omitted from Acts), as well as for his instrumental role (II Cor. 2:13; 7:5 – 8:24), in securing the Collection for the Poor of Jerusalem, to wit, the Communist Soviet of the the Restored Tabernacle of David under the the Dictatorship of James the Just.]

James the Just's Influence on Christian Gnosticism

These are the Secret Sayings which the Living Jesus Spoke and which Didymos Judas Thomas wrote down....

The Disciples said to Jesus, "We Know that you will depart from us. Who is to be our Leader?"

Jesus said to them, Wherever you are, you are to go to James the Just, for whose sake Heaven and Earth came into being."

– Thomas 1, 12

The Sicarii Assassination of Jonathan the High Priest

Felix [52-60 A.D.] also bore an ill-will to Jonathan, the high priest, because he frequently gave him admonitions about governing the Jewish affairs better than he did, lest he should himself have complaints made of him by the multitude, since he it was who had desired Caesar to send him as procurator of Judea. So Felix contrived a method whereby he might get rid of him, now he was become so continually troublesome to him; for such continual admonitions are grievous to those who are disposed to act unjustly.

Wherefore Felix persuaded one of Jonathan's most faithful friends, a citizen of Jerusalem, whose name was Doras, to bring the robbers [Sicarii] upon Jonathan, in order to kill him.; and this he did by promising to give him a great deal of money for so doing. Doras complied with the proposal, and contrived matters so, that the [Sicarii] might murder him after the following manner: – Certain of those [Sicarii] went up to the city, as if they were going to worship God, while they had daggers under their garments; and, by thus mingling themselves among the multitude, they slew Jonathan; and as this murder was never avenged, the [Sicarii] went up with the greatest security at the festivals after this time; and having weapons concealed in like manner as before, and mingling themselves among the multitude, they slew certain of their own enemies, and were subservient to other men for money; and slew others not only in remote parts of the city,

but in the temple itself also; for they had the boldness to murder men there, without thinking of the impiety of which they were guilty. And this seems to me to have been the reason why God, out of his hatred to those men's wickedness, rejected our city; and as for the temple, he no longer esteemed it sufficiently pure for him to inhabit therein, but brought the Romans upon us, and threw a fire upon the city to purge it; and brought upon us, our wives, and children, slavery, – as desirous to make us wiser by our calamities.

- Josephus, Antiquities of the Jews, xx.viii.5b [Note how Felix started the War with the Jews with this assassination, even though it didn't really get started until six years after the end of his procuratorship. Josephus described the Sicarii dagger as “resembling the scimitars of the Persians in size, but curved and more like the weapons called sicae by the Romans.” The murder of James the Just a few years later by the High Priesthood was likely the revenge Josephus saw as unavenged. But it demonstrates how the High Priesthood viewed the members of James' Caliphate. This is supported by accounts recorded below.]

Gamaliel Compares the Jerusalem Apostles with Violent Revolutionaries

Then stood there up one in the Council, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a Doctor of the Law [assisted by Saul of Tarsus; Acts 22:3], had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the Apostles forth a little space: and said unto them, Ye men of Israel, take heed to yourselves what he intend to do as touching these men. For before these days rose up Theudas, boasting himself to be somebody; to whom a number of men, about four hundred, joined themselves: who was slain; and all, as many as obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to naught.

After this man rose up Judas of Galilee in the days of the taxing, [this is the Revolt in 6 A.D. that led to the death of Joseph, of the Royal Seed of David, who would have been the figurehead rallying point for the Revolt. For this reason; this is the same year that Jesus told his parents that his father was God, not Joseph: Luke 2:49] and drew away much people after him: he also perished; and all, even as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsel or this work be of men, it will come to naught.

But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it, lest haply ye be found even to fight against God.

- Acts 5:34-39 [Scholars have noted that Luke is wrong about the chronology of false messiah's compared with Josephus.]

The Roman Chief Captain of the Temple Compares Paul with Revolutionary Murderers

And as Paul was to be led into the Castle, he said unto the Chief Captain
 May I speak unto thee? Who said, Canst thou speak Greek?
 Art not thou that Egyptian, which before these days madest an uproar,
 and leddest out into the wilderness four thousand men that were murderers?
 – Acts 21:37-38

James the Just Leads the Zealots and Sicarii in Jerusalem

And the Word of God increased: and the number of the disciples
 multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the Priests
 were obedient to the Faith.
 – Acts 6:7 [This shows the increasing presence of the Cult
 of Moses in the Early Church.]

But there rose up certain of the Sect of the Pharisees which Believed,
 saying, That it was needful to circumcise them, and to command them
 to keep the Law of Moses. And the Apostles and Elders
 came together for to consider this matter.
 – Acts 15:5-6 [The situation in the Jerusalem Church under the
 Caliphate of James the Just had become much more Legalistic
 under his Rule at the time of the Circumcision Summit.]

And the day following Paul went in with us unto James; and all
 the Elders were present. And when he had saluted them, he declared
 particularly what things God had Wrought among the Gentiles by
 his Ministry. And when they heard it, they Glorified the Lord,
 and said unto him, Thou seest, Brother, how many thousands of Jews
 there are which Believe; and they are All Zealous of the Law.
 – Acts 22:18-20 [This is why Eusebius (below) believed that James
 was the leader of the Zealots in Jerusalem – James did not accept
 the Collection for the Poor when Paul submitted it to James,
 for James made it conditional that Paul funded the Vows of
 several Nazarites, which was a ploy to have him arrested in
 the Temple, trying to avoid another Insurrection like the one
 caused by the Triumphant Entry into Jerusalem by Jesus
 and his Rebel Band, where his actions in Sealing off the
 Temple and casting out the money changers started
 an Insurrection led by Barabbas, another follower of
 Jesus (see below). Also, most likely this was the reason
 why the Gospel of John reports the Cleansing of the

Temple at the beginning of Jesus' Ministry, thus separating it from the Triumphant Entry and the scandal of a failed Insurrection.]

Jesus Seals the Temple Starting an Insurrection

And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried,
Hosannah to the Son of David: Blessed is he that cometh in
the Name of the Lord; Hosannah in the Highest.

And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was
moved, saying, Who is this?

And the multitude said, This is Jesus the Prophet
of Nazareth of Galilee.

And Jesus went into the Temple of God, and cast out
all them that sold and bought in the Temple,
and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers,
and the seats of them that sold doves.

– Matthew 21:9-12 [Matthew leaves out the Sealing
of the Temple, but he does have Jesus go into
his Cleansing of the Temple immediately after
his Triumphant Entry.]

The Influence of the Sicarii on Jesus

And the Scribes which came down from Jerusalem said,
He hath Beelzebub, and by the Prince of the Devils
casteth he out Devils.

And he called them unto him, and said unto them in Parables,
How can Satan cast out Satan?

And if a Kingdom be divided against itself,
that Kingdom can not stand.

And if a House be divided against itself,
that House cannot stand.

And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided,
he cannot stand, but hath an end.

No man can enter into a strong man's House,
and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man;
and then he will spoil his House.

– Mark 3:22-27

But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out Devils, but by Beelzebub the Prince of the Devils.

And Jesus Knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every Kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every City or House divided against itself shall not stand: and if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself;

How shall then his Kingdom stand?

And if Beelzebub cast out Devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges.

But if I cast out Devils by the Spirit of God, then the Kingdom of God is come unto you.

Or else how can one enter into a strong man's House, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil the House.

– Matthew 12:24-29

And he was casting out a Devil, and it was dumb. And it came to pass, when the Devil was gone out, the dumb spake; and the people wondered. But some of them said, He casteth out Devils through Beelzebub the Chief of Devils. And others, tempting him, sought of him a Sign from Heaven.

But he, Knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every Kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and a House divided against a House falleth. If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his Kingdom stand? And if I by Beelzebub cast out Devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges. But if I with the Finger of God cast out Devils, no doubt the Kingdom of God is come upon you.

When a strong man armed keepeth his Palace, his goods are in peace: but when a stronger than he shall come upon him, he taketh from him all his armor wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.

– Luke 11:14-22 [You can see how fluid this traditional story is told in the first three Gospels. In Mark the Scribes from Jerusalem confront Jesus, whereas it's the Pharisees in Matthew, and the people in Luke.

What the Parable of the Strong Man shows between the lines is a favorite tactic of the Sicarii, as made clear by Richard A. Horsley: "In fact, since the Romans did not maintain a very large or visible military presence in Judea (except to suppress larger disturbances), a strategy focused primarily on the Romans themselves would probably have been inappropriate and ineffective.

The strategy of the Sicarii focused instead on the collaborating Jewish ruling elite: the priestly aristocracy, the Herodian families, and other notables.

In the context of Jewish society under the Romans, this must have been the result of rational analysis and calculation....

They employed three tactics in particular: (a) selective, symbolic assassinations; (b) more general assassinations along with plundering of the property of the wealthy and powerful; and c) kidnapping for ransom....

Closely related to the selective assassinations was a second tactic, one that extended their strategy into the countryside where the estates of the pro-Roman aristocracy were located: the Sicarii eliminated some of the Jewish gentry and destroyed their property. Thus, as Josephus puts it in another of his polemically accounts:

‘[The brigand-like elements]...urged many to revolt, spurring them on toward freedom and threatening with death those who submitted to Roman rule....Splitting up into armed groups, they ranged over the countryside, killing the powerful rich, plundering their houses, and setting fire to the villages.’ (J.W. 2.264-66; Ant. 20.172; see also, J.W. 7.254).

....‘The fear of attack was worse than the crimes themselves, just as in a war when one expects death at any moment. Men watched their enemies from a distance, and not even approaching friends were trusted. But despite their suspicions and precautions they were laid waste, so suddenly did the conspirators strike and skillfully avoid detection.’ (J.W. 2.256-57)....

‘The sickness reached epidemic proportions; both private and public life were so infected that everyone tried to outdo each other in sacrilege toward God and injustice toward their neighbors. The people of rank and influence oppressed the masses, and the masses were intent on destroying them in return. The powerful craved tyranny and the masses violence and plunder of the rich. The Sicarii were the first to engage in this lawlessness and barbarity toward their kinsmen. They left no word unspoken, no deed untried, to insult and destroy those whom they plotted against.’ (J.W. 6.260-62)”
(Richard A. Horsley with John S. Hanson, Bandits, Prophets, and Messiahs (Harrisburg: Trinity Press, 1985, 1999; pp. 205, 207, 208, 211).]

The Triumphant Entry of the Sicarii King

And they come to Jerusalem; and Jesus went into the Temple,
and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the Temple,
and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats
of them that sold doves;
and he would not Suffer that any man should carry any vessel
through the Temple.

– Mark 11:15-16 [Mark has Jesus do his Cleansing the next morning after the Triumphant Entry, but he does include the part about him Sealing off the Temple, which he would

have to have done in order to prevent anyone from carrying any vessel through the Temple, to wit, it was necessary to use force and violence, hence the Insurrection. The motion picture, King of Kings, with blue-eyed Jeffrey Hunter as Jesus, and Harry Guardino as Barabbas, tells the story of the Failed Insurrection correctly.]

Jesus Regarded as a Rebel Bandit Leader

And they laid their hands on him, and took him. And one of them that stood by drew a sword, and smote a servant of the High Priest, and cut off his ear.

And Jesus answered and said unto them, Are ye come out, as against a bandit [Sicarii], with swords and with staves to take me?

– Mark 14:46-48 [This passage illustrates two points made on behalf of the view that Jesus led a Rebel Band and was the Leader of the Insurrection. One, his followers were armed; and two, Peter chose the servant of the High Priest to strike, to wit, he was attacking the Ruling Class with the standard Sicarii dagger. John 18:10 tells us the name of the Servant was Malchus, and that his right ear was cut off; Luke 22:50-51 tells us that Jesus touched his ear and healed it.]

And it was the Third Hour, and they crucified him. And the Superscription of his Accusation was written over,
THE KING OF THE JEWS.

And with him they crucify two bandits [Sicarii]; the one on his right hand, and on the other on his left. And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the Transgressors.

– Mark 15:27-28 [This passage reminds the reader of the James and John power play to rule at the right and left hand of Jesus: Mark 10:35-37.

Matthew 27:37-38 is the same. Luke 23:32-33 is the same, but the bandits are called malefactors.

John 19:18 calls them “two others,” but calls Barabbas a robber [Sicarii] at John 18:40. The Scripture quoted is from Isaiah 53:12. C.f “superscription of his accusation,” with Col. 2:14: “blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us... nailing it to the cross.”]

Barabbas and Others Arrested in the Insurrection

And there was one named Barabbas, which lay bound with them that had made Insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the Insurrection.

– Mark 15:7 [Mark assumes the reader knows about the Insurrection; Mt. 27:16 calls Barabbas a “notable prisoner”; Lk. 23:19 says he was arrested “for a certain sedition in the city,” informing us that the Insurrection occurred in Jerusalem; Jn. 18:40 calls him a “robber,” a common term for Zealot and Sicarii Revolutionaries.

James the Just must have had this Insurrection in mind when he ordered Paul to comply with his compromise in order to accept the Collection from the Gentiles. After all, James was clearly in the Wrong for violating the terms of their prior agreement, that Paul would go to the Gentiles, while Peter went to the Jews.

But the activity of the Jerusalem Church in I & II Corinthians, Galatians, and Philippians, shows the Influence of Peter and the Brothers of the Lord (the Royal Family) on Paul’s Churches.

In the end James did not accept the Collection and Paul was taken into custody by the Romans. As for Jesus, he was later crucified between two more Sicarii Terrorists who had taken part in the Insurrection.]

Peter Was a Cutthroat Sicarri

And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing.

Then said he unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and he that hath not sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.

For I say unto you, that this that is written must yet be accomplished in me. And he was reckoned among the Transgressors: for the things concerning me have an end.

And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords.

And he said unto them, It is enough.

– Luke 22:35-38 [You didn’t openly carry a sword in front of the Romans unless you were a member of the Roman Army or the Temple Police or a Rebel.

I don't for one moment believe Peter died in Rome, for it is more likely to me that he died in Jerusalem in the Roman seige of that city or at the desert fortress of Masada, the Last Stand of the Sicarii.]

But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of Man with a kiss? When they which were about him saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

And one of them smote the Servant of the High Priest, and cut off his right ear.

– Luke 22:48-50 [Luke does not mention that the smiter was Peter, but he does have Jesus heal the Servant; John, however, does not mention the healing (below).]

Then Simon Peter having a sword drew it, and smote the High Priest's Servant, and cut off his right ear.

The Servant's name was Malchus.

Then Jesus said unto Peter, Put up thy sword into the sheath; the cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?

– John 18:19-20 [Jesus has decided to fulfill the Suffering Servant prophecies of Isaiah, whereas Peter is looking forward to the violent overthrow of the Romans in Palestine; cf. Mt. 16:21-23.]

Eusebius Teaches the Death of James the Just
Was the Cause of the War with Rome

When Paul appealed to Caesar and was sent over to Rome by Festus, the Jews were disappointed of the hope in which they had laid their plot against him and turned against James the Brother of the Lord, **to whom the Throne of the Bishopric in Jerusalem had been allotted by the Apostles.** The crime which they committed was as follows. They brought him into the midst and demanded a denial in the faith in Christ before all the people, but when he, contrary to the expectation of all of them, with a loud voice and with more courage than they had expected, confessed before all the people that our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ is the Son of God, they could no longer endure his testimony, since he was by all men believed to be the most righteous because of the height which he had reached in a life of philosophy and religion, and killed him, using anarchy

as an opportunity for power since at that moment Festus had died in Judea, leaving the district without government or Procurator. The manner of James' death has been shown by the words of Clement already quoted, narrating that he was thrown from the battlement and beaten to death with a club, but Hegesippus, who belongs to the generation after the Apostles, gives the most accurate account of him speaking as follows in his fifth book: "The charge of the Church passed to James the Brother of the Lord, together with the Apostles.

He was called the 'Just' by all men from the Lord's time to ours, since many are called James, but he was holy from his mother's womb. He drank no wine or strong drink, nor did he eat flesh; no razor went upon his head; he did not anoint with oil, and he did not go to the baths.

He alone was allowed to enter into the Sanctuary, for he did not wear wool, but linen, and he used to enter alone into the Temple and be found kneeling and praying for forgiveness for the people

[James was born of Royal lineage from David and thus was of the Order of Melchizedek], so that his knees grew hard like a camel's because of his constant worship of God, kneeling and asking for forgiveness for the people. So from his excessive righteousness he was called the Just and Oblias, that is in Greek, 'Rampart of the people and righteousness,' as the prophets declare concerning him. Thus some of the Seven Sects among the people, who were described by me (in the Commentaries), inquired of him what was 'The Gate of Jesus,' and he said that he was the Savior. Owing to this some believed that Jesus was the Christ. The Sects mentioned above did not believe either in resurrection or in one who shall come to reward each according to his deeds, but as many as believed did so because of James. Now, since many even of the Rulers believed, there was a tumult of the Jews and the Scribes and Pharisees saying that the whole people was in danger of looking for Jesus as the Christ. So they assembled and said to James, 'We beseech you to restrain the people since they are straying after Jesus as though he was the Messiah. We beseech you to persuade concerning Jesus all who come for the Day of Passover, for all to obey you. For we and the whole people testify to you that you are righteous and do not respect persons. So do you persuade the crowd not to err concerning Jesus, for the whole people and we all obey you. Therefore stand on the battlement of the Temple that you may be clearly visible on high, and that your words may be audible to all the people, for because of the Passover all the tribes, with the Gentiles also, have come together.' So the Scribes and Pharisees mentioned before made James stand on the battlement of the Temple, and they cried out to him and said, 'Oh, just one, to whom we all owe

obedience, since the people are straying after Jesus who was crucified, tell us what is the Gate of Jesus.’ And he answered with a loud voice, ‘Why do you ask me concerning the Son of Man? He is Sitting in Heaven on the Right Hand of the Great Power, and he will come on the Clouds of Heaven. And many were convinced and confessed at the testimony of James and said, ‘Hosanna to the Son of David.’

Then again the same Scribes and Pharisees said to one another, ‘We did wrong to have provided Jesus with such testimony, but let us go up and throw him down that they may be afraid and not believe him.’ And they cried out saying, ‘Oh, oh, even the just one erred.’ And they fulfilled the Scripture written in Isaiah, ‘Let us take the just man for he is unprofitable to us. Yet they shall eat the fruit of their works.’ So they went up and threw down the Just, and they said to one another, ‘Let us stone James the Just,’ and they began to stone him since the fall had not killed him, but he turned and knelt saying, ‘I beseech thee, O Lord, God and Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do.’ And while they were thus stoning him one of the priests of the sons of Rechab, the son of Rechabim, to whom Jeremiah the Prophet bore witness, cried out saying, ‘Stop! what are you doing? The Just is praying for you.’ And a certain man among them, one of the laundrymen, took the club with which he used to beat out the clothes, and hit the Just on the head, and so he suffered martyrdom. And they buried him on the spot by the Temple, and his gravestone still remains by the Temple. He became a true witness both to Jews and to Greeks that Jesus is the Christ, and at once Vespasian began to beseige them.”

This account is given at length by Hegesippus, but in agreement with Clement. Thus it seems that James was indeed a remarkable man and famous among all for righteousness, so that the wise even of the Jews thought that this was the cause of the seige of Jerusalem immediately after his martyrdom, and that it happened for no other reason than the crime which they had committed against him.

– Eusebius, Ecclesiastical History, II: xxiii.1-18 [Modern scholars date the death of James to 62 A.D. and the Seige of Jerusalem to about 67-70 A.D., thus denying that the seige occurred immediately after the death of James. However, it appears that Eusebius was using a different version of Josephus and his account does raise the suggestion along with the one in Acts, that James was a leader in the beginning stages of the Insurrection against Rome. Vespasian immediately after Jerusalem was conquered in 70 A.D., tried to hunt down the remaining Seed of David to prevent another revolt (see below).]

The Romans Believed the Sons of David Were Leaders in the War with Rome

After the martyrdom of James [the Just] and the capture of Jerusalem which immediately followed, the story goes that those of the Apostles and the Disciples of the Lord who were still alive came together from every place with those who were, humanly speaking, of the Family of the Lord, for many of them were still alive, and they took counsel together as to whom they ought to adjudge worthy to succeed James, and all unanimously decided that Simeon the son of Clopas, whom the scripture of the Gospel also mentions, was worthy of the Throne of the diocese there. He was, so it is said, a cousin of the Savior, for Hegesippus relates that Clopas was the brother of Joseph, and in addition that Vespasian, after the capture of Jerusalem, ordered a search to be made for all who were of the Family of David, that there might be left among the Jews no one of the Royal Family and, for this reason, a very great persecution was again inflicted on the Jews.

...The same Domitian gave orders for the execution of those of the Family of David and an ancient story goes that some heretics accused the Grandsons of Jude (who was said to have been the brother, according to the flesh, of the Savior) saying that they were of the Family of David and related to the Christ himself. Hegesippus relates this exactly as follows: "Now there still survived of the Family of the Lord Grandsons of Jude, who was said to have been his brother according to the flesh, and they were delated as being of the Family of David. These the Officer brought to Domitian Caesar, for, like Herod, he was afraid of the Coming of the Christ. He asked them if they were of the House of David and they admitted it. Then he asked them how much property they had, or how much money they controlled, and they said that all they possessed was nine thousand denarii between them, the half belonging to each, and they stated that they did not possess this in money but that it was the valuation of only thirty-nine plethra of ground on which they paid taxes and lived on it by their own work. They then showed him their hands, adducing as testimony of their labor the hardness of their bodies, and the tough skin which had been embossed on their hands from incessant work.

They were asked concerning the Christ and its Kingdom, its nature, origin, and time of appearance, and explained that **it was neither of the Kosmos nor Earthly, but Heavenly and Angelic**, and it would be at the End of the Kosmos, when he would come in glory to judge the living and the dead and to reward every man according to his deeds. At this Domitian did not condemn them at all, but despised

them as simple folk, released them, and decreed an end to the persecution against the Church.
 But when they were released they were the Leaders of the Churches, both for their testimony and for their relation to the Lord, and remained alive in the peace which ensued until Trajan. Hegesippus tells this; moreover, Tertullian who has made similar mention of Domitian: "Domitian also once tried to do the same as he, for he was a Nero in cruelty, but, I believe, inasmuch as he had some sense, he stopped at once and recalled those whom he had banished."
 – Eusebius, Ecclesiastical History, III, xi.1 - xii.1; xix.1 - xx.7

The Johannine Community

My little Children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have a Paraclete with the Father, Jesus Christ the Righteous. And he is the Propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the Sins of the Whole Kosmos.

„,But the Anointing [Paraclete] which ye have received of him Abideth In you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same Anointing [Paraclete] Teacheth you of All Things, and is Truth, and is no Lie, and even as it hath Taught you, ye shall Abide In him.

...Behold, what manner of Love the Father hath Bestowed upon us, **that we should be called the Sons of God:** therefore the Kosmos Knoweth us not, because it Knew him not.

...And hereby we Know that he Abideth In us,
 by the Spirit which he hath Given us.

...Whosoever shall Confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God Dwelleth In him, and he In God. And we have Known and Believed the Love that God Hath to us. God is Love; and he that Dwelleth In Love Dwelleth in God, and God In him. Herein is our Love Made Perfect, that we may have boldness in the Day of Judgment: because as he is, so are we in this Kosmos. There is no Fear in Love; but Perfect Love Casteth out Fear; because Fear hath Torment. He that Feareth is not made Perfect in Love. We Love him, because he first Loved us.

...And we Know that the Son of God is Come, and hath Given
 us an Understanding, that we may Know him that is True,
 and we are In him that is True, even In his Son
 Jesus Christ. This is the True God, and Eternal Life.
 – I John 2:1-2, 27; 3:1, 24b; 4:15-18; 5:20

Secret Knowledge For the Divine Sons and Daughters of God

And he [Jesus] began again to Teach by the sea side: and there was gathered
 unto him a great multitude, so that he entered into a ship, and sat in the sea;
 and the whole multitude was by the sea on the land.
 And he Taught them many things by Parables, and said unto them
 in his doctrine, Hearken; Behold, there went out a Sower to sow:
 and it came to pass, as he sowed, some fell by the way side,
 and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up.
 And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth;
 and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth:
 but when the Sun was up, it was scorched;
 and because it had no root, it withered away.
 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up,
 and choked it, and it yielded no fruit.
 And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit
 that sprang up and increased; and brought forth,
 some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred.
 And he said unto them, He that hath ears to Hear, let him Hear.
 And when he was alone, they that were about him with
 the Twelve asked him of the Parable.
 And he said unto them, Unto you it is Given to Know
 the Mysteries of the Kingdom of God:
 but unto them that are without, all these things
 are done in Parables: that seeing they may see, and not perceive;
 and hearing they may hear, and not understand;
 lest at any time they should be converted,
 and their Sins should be Forgiven them.
 And he said unto them, Know ye not this Parable?
 and how then will ye Know all Parables?
 The Sower soweth the Word.
 And these are they by the Wayside, where the Word is Sown;
 but when they have Heard, Satan cometh immediately,
 and taketh away the Word that was sown in the Hearts.

And these are they likewise which were sown on Stony Ground;
 who, when they have Heard the Word, immediately Receive it with Gladness;
 and have no Root in themselves, and so Endure but for a time:
 afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the Word's sake,
 immediately they are offended.

And these are they which are sown among Thorns; such as Hear the Word.
 And the cares of this Kosmos, and the Deceitfulness of Riches,
 and the Lusts of other things entering in, Choke the Word,
 and it becometh Unfruitful.

And these are they which are sown on Good Ground; such as Hear the Word,
 and Receive it, and bring forth Fruit, some Thirtyfold, some Sixty,
 and some an hundred.

– Mark 4:1-20 [Quoting Isaiah 6:9-10. Parallels at Mt. 13:1-23;
 and Lk. 8:4-15.]

The Mustard Seed

And he said, Whereunto shall we liken the Kingdom of God?
 or with what comparison shall we compare it?

It is like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown in
 the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth: but
 when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than
 all herbs, and shooteth out great branches; so that the fowls
 of the air may lodge under the shadow of it.

And with many such Parables spake he the Word unto them,
 as they were able to Hear it. But without a Parable spake he not
 unto them: and when they were alone, he expounded all things
 to his Disciples.

– Mark 4:30-34 [Matthew 13:31-32 has “Kingdom of Heaven,”
 and has “tree” instead of “great branches”; Luke 13:18-19 has
 “great tree,” but agrees with Mark as to the “Kingdom of God.”]

H.P. Lovecraft Parables: Tales of Horror

The Tares

Another Parable put he forth unto them, saying, The Kingdom of Heaven
 is likened unto a man which sowed Good Seed in his Field:
 but while men slept, his Enemy came and sowed Tares among the wheat,
 and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth Fruit,
 then appeared the Tares also. So the servants of the Householder came

and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow Good Seed in thy Field?
from whence then hath it Tares?

And he said unto them, an Enemy hath done this.

The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?
But he said, Nay, lest while ye gather up the Tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

Let both grow together until the Harvest; and in the Time of Harvest,
I will say to the Reapers, Gather ye together first the Tares, and bind them
in bundles to burn them; but gather the wheat into my barn....

Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his
Disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us
the Parable of the Tares of the Field.

He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the Good Seed
is the Son of Man: the Field is the Kosmos; the Good Seed are
the Children of the Kingdom; but the Tares are the Children of
the Wicked One; the Enemy that sowed them is the Devil;
the Harvest is the End of the Kosmos;
and the Reapers are the Angels.

As therefore the Tares are gathered and burned in the fire;
so shall it be in the End of this Kosmos.

The Son of Man shall send forth his Angels, and they shall gather out
of his Kingdom all things that offend, and them which do Iniquity;
and he shall Cast them into a Furnace of Fire: there shall be Wailing
and Gnashing of Teeth. Then shall the Righteous Shine Forth
as the Sun in the Kingdom of their Father.

Who hath Ears to Hear, let him Hear.

– Matthew 13:24-30, 36-43 [Matthew likes to emphasize the
Son of Man of Daniel and Enoch, as the Apocalyptic Hero
of the End Times, and concludes with a reference
to the Resurrection in Daniel 12:2-3. One cannot help seeing
the hand of James the Just in this Parable.]

The Net

Again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like unto a Net, that was cast
into the sea, and gathered of every kind: which, when it was full,
they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the Good into vessels,
but cast the Bad away.

So shall it be at the End of the Kosmos: the Angels shall come forth,
and sever the Wicked from among the Just,
and shall cast them into the Furnace of Fire; there shall be Wailing
and Gnashing of Teeth.

Jesus saith unto them, Have ye Understood all these things?
 They say unto him, Yea, Lord.
 – Matthew 13:47-51 [Hellfire preachers love verses like these;
 again, this sounds more like James the Just than Jesus.]

The Divine Sons and Daughters of God Will Judge the Kosmos and Angels

Dare any of you, having a matter against another, go to Law
 before the Unjust, and not before the Holy Ones?
 Do ye not Know that the Holy Ones shall Judge the Kosmos?
 and if the Kosmos shall be Judged by you, are ye unworthy to
 Judge the smallest matters?
 Know ye not that we shall Judge Angels? how much more
 things that pertain to this life?
 If then ye have Judgments of things pertaining to this life,
 set them to Judge who are least esteemed in the Church.
 – I Corinthians 6:1-4 [The Book of Daniel, along with Enoch,
 were the popular sources for the Apocalypticism of the Age.
 The idea of the Holy Ones (Saints) Judging the Kosmos
 and Angels comes from Daniel 7 (see below).]

Singular

I Saw in the Night Visions, and, behold, One like the Son of Man
 came with the Clouds of Heaven, and came to the Ancient of Days,
 and they brought him near before him. And there was Given him
 Dominion, and Glory, and a Kingdom, that all people, Nations,
 and Languages, should serve him: his Dominion is an Everlasting
 Dominion, which shall not pass away, and his Kingdom that which
 shall not be destroyed.
 – Daniel 7:13-14

Corporate

But the Holy Ones of the Most High shall take the Kingdom,
 and Possess the Kingdom for ever, even for ever and ever....
 I beheld, and the same Horn made war with the Holy Ones,
 and prevailed against them; until the Ancient of Days came,
 and Judgment was given to the Holy Ones of the Most High;
 and the Time came that the Holy Ones Possessed the Kingdom.

...And the Kingdom and Dominion, and the Greatness of the Kingdom under the whole Heaven, shall be Given to the People of the Holy Ones of the Most High, whose Kingdom is an Everlasting Kingdom, and all Dominions shall serve and obey him.
 – Daniel 7:18, 21-22, 27 [Christ Reigns, but since Christ is In us, we Reign with him as Kings (cf. I Cor. 4:3: “Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have Reigned as Kings without us.”).]

A Veil of Illegitimacy Hangs Over the Birth of Jesus

Is not this the Tekton [Builder], the son of Mary, the Brother of James, and Joses, and of Jude, and Simon? and are not his Sisters here with us? And they were offended of him.

– Mark 6:3 [Matthew 13:55 has the citizens of Nazareth proclaim: “Is not this the Tekton’s son?” Thus, son of Mary could be a scribal error, but more likely the original saying, because the fact was that Mary was impregnated by someone other than her husband and everyone knew it.

I have used Tekton as a Royal Title, since the King is the Builder of the Temple. I believe the tale that Jesus was a son of a poor carpenter is bullshit fed to the Roman authorities to keep them from hunting down the Seed of David. The Reality was that Jesus was a Prince in a Royal Family, that tried to stay underground in Galilee, until the Time was Right for him to Rule in Zion and Suffer the humiliation of Death.]

Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not Born of Fornication; we have one Father, even God.
 – John 8:41 [This was the verdict of those who did not fathom the nature of Hieros Gamos, where Mary was impregnated at the direction of the Holy Spirit to fulfill the 70 Weeks of Daniel 9 and Overcome the Curse of Jeremiah.]

Jesus said, “He who Knows the father and the mother will be called the Son of a Harlot.”

– Thomas 105 [Jesus Knew who his real father and mother were and was thus called the Son of a Harlot. But again this shows ignorance of the practice of Hieros Gamos, which is Holy Marriage in order to produce a Holy Child. Thus, the

Joseph from Nathan (Luke 3:31) impregnated Mary, who was betrothed to the Joseph from Solomon (Matthew 1:6-7, 16), who then adopted the son of Mary to overcome the Curse of Jeremiah on the Seed of Solomon (Jer. 30:30; 36:30), in favor of an uncursed line from Nathan (cf. Jer. 33:17). It is my opinion that the real father of Jesus was Joseph of Arimathea, a cousin of Joseph from Solomon. The Curse of Jeremiah likely prevented Zerubbabel from reigning as a King of Zion after the Exile in Babylon. Cf. II Chronicles 36:22-23; Ezra 1:1-8; 3:1 - 6:18: Zerubbabel disappears after Ezra 5:6; the same holds true in the two Prophets, Haggai and Zechariah: Haggai 1:12 - 2:9, 20-23; Zechariah 3:8-10; 4:6-14; 6:9-15; this last section is supposed to chronicle the crowning of Joshua the High Priest and Zerubbabel, the Son of David, but somehow Zerubbabel is missing and other Priests are crowned in his place. These prophecies pissed off the neighboring tribes, who complained to Cyrus the Great, and after they got the green light to start rebuilding again, Zerubbabel disappears. It appears that the Priesthood made some kind of coup using the Curse of Jeremiah as their authority. The neighboring tribes were aware of the purpose of Solomon's Temple, that is was the private chapel of the King. No Son of David would rule in Zion again until the Lord Jesus Christ rode into Jerusalem on King David's mule and took over the Temple, declared King by his followers.]

Now the birth of Jesus was on this wise: when as his mother was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Spirit. Then Joseph her husband being a just man, and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away privily. But while he thought on these things, the Angel of the Lord Appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou Son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife, for that which is conceived in her of the Holy Spirit.
– Matthew 1:18-20 [Hence, there was no Virgin Birth, but

a Hieros Gamos to fulfill Prophecy. Joseph from Solomon likely was killed in the Revolt of Judas the Galilean in 6 A.D., likely following the Passover when Jesus was 12 years old, the same year the Romans took over the Jewish government.]

The Mother of Jesus and His Brothers, Including James the Just and Jude, Were Not Believers

And when his family heard of it [the Ordaining of the 12], they went out to seize him: for they said, He is out of his mind.
...There came then his brothers and his mother, and, standing without, sent unto him, calling him.

And the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brothers without seek for thee. And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brothers? And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold, my mother and my brothers!

For whosoever shall do the Will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

– Mark 3:31-35 [Besides the cut-throat body guards, Peter and Andrew Bar Jonah, James and John Zebedee, Simon the Zealot, and his son, Judas the Sicarii (Iscariot), Jesus chose many sons of his uncle, Alphaeus/Clopas, and aunt, Mary [the other Mary], to wit, Matthew, Thomas, James, and Joses. Their other son, John Mark, was too young, and likely the young boy in Mark 14:51-52, who ran from the Garden of Gethsemane naked following the arrest of Jesus. Another son of Clopas was Simon, who was elected by the Jerusalem Soviet to replace James the Just after he was murdered by the High Priest (Eusebius, Ecclesiastical History, III, xi.1- xii.i) . We are told that Philip was from Bethsaida (John 1:44), and perhaps he is the same Philip who was a leader among the Greek speaking Jews (the Hellenists – Acts 6:5). There is no information on Thaddeus and Bartholomew. Clopas was the brother of Joseph, the stepfather of Jesus, so he too was descended from Solomon, and thus comprised, along with Joseph of Arimathea, the Seed of David in Jerusalem. Something must have happened to Clopas, because a few years later James Zebedee was beheaded, forcing Peter to get out of Dodge after he escaped prison. But before he left, he went to the house of Clopas and Mary, though Luke calls it the “house of Mary” only. At the door Peter leaves a message for James the Just, for the house was apparently used to hold meetings

in the early Jerusalem Soviet (Acts 12:12-17). No wonder the mother and brothers of Jesus thought he was crazy and tried to seize him; they were a power hungry Royal Family and didn't like being cut-out of the action.]

Now the Jews' Feast of Tabernacles was at hand. His brothers therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Jerusalem, that thy Disciples also may see the works that thou doest. For there is no man that doeth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou do these things, show thyself to the Kosmos. For neither did his brothers Believe in him.

Jesus Lies to His Brothers Because of Their Unbelief

Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is always ready. The Kosmos cannot hate you, but me it hateth, because I Testify of it, that the works thereof are Evil. Go ye up into the Feast:
I go not up unto this Feast: for my time is not yet full come.
 When he had said these words unto them, he abode still in Galilee. But when his brothers were gone up, then went he also up unto the Feast, not openly, but in Secret.
 – John 7:1-10 [Some NT texts say “I go not yet up unto this Feast,” but to me this is obviously a later gloss once Dogma became supreme. After all, if we don't change the sense, this would be clear proof that Jesus lied. God forbid!]

Jesus Not Held in Honor By His Own Family

But Jesus said unto them [the people of Nazareth, who were offended by Jesus], a Prophet is not without Honor, but in his own country, and among his own Kin, and in his own House.
 – Mark 6:3 [There is an obvious anti-Royal Family bias in the Gospels. Matthew 13:57 is the same except it omits “and among his own Kin.”]

James and John Zebedee Inspired by Satan

They Attempt a Power Grab

Then came to him, the mother of Zebedee's children
with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring
a certain thing of him.

And he said unto her, What wilt thou?

She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons [James and John]
may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left,
in thy Kingdom.

Jesus Rebukes Them

But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask.

Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of,
and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with:
but to sit on my right hand, and on my left,
is not mine to give, but it shall be Given to them
for whom it is Prepared of my Father.

And when the Ten Heard it, they were moved with
indignation against the two brothers.

But Jesus called them unto him, and said,
Ye know that the Princes of the Gentiles exercise
dominion over them, and they that are Great exercise
authority upon them.

But it shall not be among you: but whosoever will
be Great among you, let him be your minister;
and whosoever will be Chief among you,
let him be your servant:

even as the Son of Man Came not to be ministered unto,
but to Minister, and to Give his life for a Ransom.

– Matthew 20:20-28

James and John Attempt to Monopolize the Gospel

And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one
casting out devils in thy Name, and he followeth us not:
and we forbad him, because he followeth us not us.

Jesus Rebukes Them

But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man
which shall do a miracle in my Name,
than can lightly speak Evil of me.
For he that is not against us is on our part.
– Mark 9:38-40

James and John Under Satanic Influence

And it came to pass, when the Time was Come that he should
be Received Up, he stedfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem.
And sent messengers before his face: and they went,
and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him.
And they did not receive him, because his face was as though
he would go to Jerusalem.
And when his Disciples, James and John saw this, they said,
Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from Heaven,
and consume them, even as Elijah did?

Jesus Rebukes Them

But he turned and rebuked them, and said,
Ye know not what manner of Spirit ye are of.
For the Son of Man is not Come to destroy men's lives,
but to Save them. And they went to another village.
– Luke 9:51-56

Satan Continues to Inspire John Zebedee

The revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him,
to show unto his servants things which **must shortly come to pass;**
and he sent and signified it by his Angel unto his servant John.
...And I John saw these things, and heard them.
And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship
before **the feet of the Angel which showed me these things.**
– Revelation 1:1; 22:8 [cf. Below; at the end, the Angel Reveals
himself as “the Bright and Morning Star” (Rev. 22:16; Isaiah 14:12),
to wit, Lucifer, Appearing as Angel of Light (II Cor. 11:14).]

Paul Rebukes the Twelve and James the Just

For such are False Apostles, deceitful workers,
transforming themselves into the Apostles of Christ.
And no marvel, for Satan himself is Transformed
into an Angel of Light.

Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also
be transformed as the ministers of righteousness;
whose end shall be according to their works.

– II Corinthians 11:13-15

Peter Inspired by Satan

From that time forth, began Jesus to Show unto his Disciples,
how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things
of the Elders and Chief Priests and Scribes, and be Killed,
and be Raised Again the Third Day.

Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying,
Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.

Jesus Rebukes Him

But he turned, and said unto Peter,
Get thee behind me, Satan;
thou art an offense unto me:
for thou savorest not the things of God,
but those of men.

– Matthew 16:21-23 [Peter and the 11 were Zealot
bodyguards of Jesus, the rebel leader, and so believed
that Jesus was going to establish a worldly kingdom
through violent revolution. But Jesus had something
else in mind. He Knew as the 22nd Christ King of Zion
that he had to complete the mission of dying for the Sins
of the Kosmos, per Isaiah 53 & Dan. 9:24-27.]

Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended
because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd,
and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.
But after I am Risen Again, I will Go before you into Galilee.
Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be
offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

Jesus said unto him, Amen I say unto thee, That this night
before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.
– Matthew 26:31-34

And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold,
Satan hath desired to have you, that he may
sift thee as wheat.
– Luke 22:31

The Twelve Argue Over Who is the Greatest

And he came to Capernaum: and being in the house he asked them,
What was it that ye disputed among yourselves by the Way?
But they held their peace: for by the Way they had disputed
among themselves, who should be the Greatest.
And he sat down, and called the Twelve, and saith unto them,
If any man desire to be the First, the same shall be Last of all,
and servant of all. And he took a child, and set him in the midst
of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them,
Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my Name,
receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me,
but him that Sent me.
– Mark 9:33-37

Other Versions of the Dispute

At the same time came the Disciples unto Jesus, saying,
Who is the Greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven?
And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him
in the midst of them.
And said, Amen I say unto you, Except ye be converted,
and become as little children, ye shall not Enter into
the Kingdom of Heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble
himself as this little child, the same is Greatest in the
Kingdom of Heaven.
And whoso shall receive one such
little child in my Name receiveth me....
Take heed that ye despise not one of these
little ones; for I say unto you, **That in Heaven
their Angels do always behold the Face of my
Father which is in Heaven.**
– Matthew 18:1-5, 10

Then there arose a Reasoning among them, which of them should be Greatest. And Jesus, perceiving the thought of their heart, took a child, and set him by him, and said unto them, Whosoever shall receive this child in my Name receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me: for he that is Least among you all, the same shall be Great.

– Luke 9:46-48

The Disciples Attempt to Make Jesus King Before His Time

Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above them that had eaten. Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a Truth that Prophet that should Come into the Kosmos.

When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by Force, to make him a King, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

– John 6:13-15 [The fact that Jesus didn't trust his bodyguards to preach his Gospel after he was sacrificed for our Sins, but instead would take the Kingdom by Violence is shown in the next passage.]

For this is he, of whom it is written, Behold, I Send my Angel before thy face, which shall Prepare the Way before thee. Amen I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a Greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is Least in the Kingdom of Heaven is Greater than he.

And from the Days of John the Baptist until Now the Kingdom of Heaven suffereth Violence, **and the Violent take it by Force.**

– Matthew 11:12-13 [Peter was a stone cold killer. I am sure he was involved in the murder of Judas, Ananias and Sapphira, and was involved in sheep stealing in Samaria, Caesarea, Corinth, and Antioch. The Violent did take it by Force. By the time Luke wrote his Gospel this saying is toned down quite a bit (see below).]

The Law and the Prophets were until John: since
 that time the Kingdom of God is preached,
 and every man presseth into it.
 – Luke 16:18 [“What?” you might say,
 “That is totally different!” And you would be
 right on. This is why the Dogma that the
 the Scriptures do not Contradict is downright
 false and misleading, a Doctrine of Devils.]

Jesus Traveled with a Sicarii Band for His Own Protection

Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the Wise Men [Magi],
 was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were
 in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof from two years old and under,
 according to the Time which he had diligently enquired of the Magi.
 – Matthew 2:16 [The Herodians persecuted Jesus as the Son of David
 until Christ was crucified.]

Herod Antipas Perplexed by Jesus

At that time Herod the Tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus. And he said
 unto his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is Risen from the Dead
 [this shows belief in Reincarnation]; and therefore Mighty Works
 do Show themselves in him....

When Jesus heard of it [the death of John the Baptist] he departed
 thence by ship into a desert place apart; and when the people had heard
 thereof, they followed him on foot out of the cities.

– Matthew 14:1-2, 13 [Jesus took this news as a warning to avoid
 Herod Antipas, whose intentions weren't to be trusted. Herod's
 Steward's wife, Joanna (Lule 8:3; 24:10), and Herodias' Daughter,
 Salome (Mark 15:40; 16:1), were members of Herod's Court, and
 traveled for a while with this Band. Perhaps they were originally spies
 for Herod, and then got converted by Jesus and became Disciples.]

And King Herod heard of him; (for his name was spread abroad:)
 and he said, That John the Baptist was Risen from the Dead,
 and therefore mighty works do show forth themselves in him.
 Others said, That it is Elijah. And others said, That it is a Prophet,
 or as one of the Prophets. But when Herod heard thereof, he said,
 It is John, whom I beheaded: for he is Risen from the Dead.
 – Mark 6:14-16 [Mark's version is more dramatic.]

Now Herod the Tetrarch heard of all that was done by him:
 and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some,
 that John was Risen from the Dead; and some said, that
 Elijah had appeared; and of others, that one of the old
 was Risen again. And Herod said, John have I beheaded:
 but who is this, of whom I hear such things?
 And he desired to see him....And the Apostles,
 when they were returned, told him all that they
 had done. And he took them, and went aside
 privately into a desert place belonging to the
 city called Bethsaida.

– Luke 9:7-10 [This last account in again a
 very fluid version, tells us why Jesus went
 into a desert place: to get as far away as
 possible from Herod. Perhaps Herod
 sent his steward's wife and Salome as
 an unofficial delegation, but instead of
 bringing Jesus to Herod, they warned
 him not to go?]

The Apostles and the Family of Jesus Move in on Paul's Cult in Corinth

The Royal Family

Is not this the Tekton, the son of Mary, the brother of James,
 and Joses, and of Jude, and Simon.”

– Mark 6:3 [Tekton in Greek means “builder,” more than just a
 poor carpenter. This was a Royal Family, heirs to the
 Throne of David (Matthew 1:1-17). Matthew 13:55 has
 “Tekton's son,” and lists Jude last. Typically,
 Luke omits this verse.]

Paul's Version of the Circumcision Summit

Then fourteen years after I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas,
and took Titus with me also.

And I went up by Revelation and communicated unto them that Gospel
 which I Preach among the Gentiles, but Privately to them which were of
 Reputation, lest my any means I should run, or had run, in vain.

**But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek,
 was compelled to be circumcised.**

And that because of False Brothers unawares brought in, who came in Privily to spy out our Liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us unto Bondage:
to whom we gave place by subjection, no, not for an hour;
that the Truth of the Gospel might continue with you.
But of those who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me: God accepteth no man's person:) for they who seemed to be somewhat in Conference addeth Nothing to me: but contrariwise, when they saw that the Gospel of the Uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the Gospel of the Circumcision was unto Peter: (for he that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the Circumcision, the same was Mighty in me toward the Gentiles:)
And when James, Cephas [Peter], and John [Zebedee], who seemed to be Pillars, Perceived the Grace that was Given unto me, **they gave to me and Barnabas the Right Hands of Fellowship**; that we should go unto the Gentiles, and they unto the Circumcision. Only they would that we should remember **The Poor**, the same which I also was forward to do.
But when Peter was come up to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed. For before that **Certain came from James**, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the Circumcision. And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; inasmuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation.
– Galatians 2:1-13 [Although Christians have traditionally called the Summit, the Jerusalem Council, Paul attends the Summit as an Equal Apostle in his own mind, but the author of Acts never states Paul as Equal to the Three Pillars of the Jerusalem Moses Cult. Note that there was no Letter dictating Antioch behavior in Paul's version. Perhaps the "Certain" from James brought a Letter commanding their behavior, but all Paul says the Pillars added to his Gospel was to arrange for a Collection for the Poor, what the flock of Jerusalem were known as; a good name for communists. Paul kept his end of the bargain, but James would not accept the Collection until Paul paid for the Rites of Nazarenes several Cult members were undergoing in the Temple; an obvious set up since he was arrested almost immediately by the Roman Guards to rescue him from a lynch mob. Peter, the Apostles, and the Lord's Brothers [the Royal Family] did not keep their end of the bargain, for after Paul and Silas founded a Church in Corinth, Silas split from Paul because of his association with Aquila and Priscilla, fellow Jews and tentmakers. Silas was a Prophet and

Chief Elder in Jerusalem (Acts 15:32) and obviously disliked Paul's Antinomian Gospel. After he returned to Jerusalem, Peter, the Apostles, and the Lord's Brothers all visited Corinth, starting a division in that Cult that was creating chaos, obviously teaching them the Gospel of James. Aquila and Priscilla moved to Ephesus and Apollos of Alexandria replaced them in Corinth, and he seems also to have formed another division. (See below.)]

Luke's Lame Attempt to Smooth Over the Conflict After the Summit

Then pleased it the Apostles and Elders with the Whole Church [the Jerusalem Soviet], to send chosen men of our own company to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas; namely, Judas surnamed Barsabas, and Silas [Silvanus], Chief Men among the Brothers:

and they wrote a Letter by them after this manner:

The Apostles and Elders and Brothers send greeting unto the Brothers which are of the Gentiles in Antioch and Syria and Cilicia: Forasmuch as we have heard,

that Certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying, Ye must be circumcised, and keep the Law: to whom we gave no such commandment:

It seemed good to us have sent, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men unto you with our beloved Barnabas and Paul, men that have hazarded their lives for the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ. We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell you the same things by mouth. For it seemed good to the Holy Spirit, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things:

That ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keep yourselves, ye shall do well. Fare ye well.

And so when they were dismissed they came to Antioch: and when they had gathered the multitude together, they delivered the Letter: which when read, they rejoiced for the consolation.

And Judas and Silas, being Prophets themselves, exhorted the Brothers with many words, and confirmed them. And after they had tarried there a space, they were let go in peace from the Brothers unto the Apostles.

Notwithstanding, it pleased Silas to abide there still.

Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, Teaching and Preaching the Word of the Lord, with many others also.

And some days after Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us go again and visit our Brothers in every city where we have preached the Word of the Lord, and see how they do. And Barnabas determined to take with them John, whose surname was Mark. But Paul thought not good to take him with them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work.

And the Contention was so sharp between them, that they departed asunder one from the other: and so Barnabas took Mark, and sailed unto Cyprus. And Paul chose Silas, and departed, being recommended by the Brothers unto the Grace of God.

– Acts 15:22-40 [Note that in this version Paul and Barnabas agree to a reading of the Letter from James to the Church in Antioch, which adds food restrictions from the Law of Moses to the burden of Christian behavior. Paul never mentions this alleged Letter, unless such a Trick was fostered upon the Galatians in the absence of Paul and Barnabas. As for the contention between Paul and Barnabas, Luke goes for a total fiction, substituting the invasion of the Certain from James for the lame reason that Paul disliked John Mark, which is disproven by II Timothy 5:11, where Paul praises the work of John Mark. Thus, the Right Hand of Fellowship was just a devious way of stabbing them in the back.

My opinion over Luke omitting Titus from the Book of Acts, and his attitude toward John Mark, is that they are evidence of the Cult Wars in Corinth and Macedonia that followed the death of Paul, and thus were rivals of the author.

Titus had been instrumental in securing the Collection for the Poor in Corinth, not to mention playing a key role at the Summit, and not to forget, his role in the founding of the Church in Crete, which Luke also omits.]

The Corinthian Church Founded by Paul, Silas, and Timothy

For the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was Preached among you by us, even by me and Silvanus and Timothy, was not yea and nay, but in him was yea.

– II Corinthians 1:19 [Silas disappears in Acts when Paul is arrested and tried and acquitted under Gallio in Corinth.

Of course, Silas could have founded the Peter sect at Corinth before Peter arrived (see below).]

Paul Deals with the Divisions in Corinth Caused by Peter and Apollos

Paul, Called to be an Apostle of Jesus Christ through the Will of God, and Sosthenes our Brother...Now I beseech you, Brothers, by the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no Divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same Judgment. For it hath been declared unto me of you, my Brothers, by them which are of the House of Chloe, that there are Contentions among you.

Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos, and I am of Cephas; and I of Christ. Is Christ Divided? was Paul crucified for you: or were ye baptized into the name of Paul? I thank God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius; lest any should say I had baptized in mine own name.

And I baptized also the Household of Stephanas: besides, I know, not whether I baptized any other. For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to Preach the Gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the Cross of Christ should be made of no effect...

Have we not power to lead about a Sister, a Wife, as well as other Apostles, and as the Brothers of our Lord, and Cephas....

Now in this that I declare unto you I praise you not, that ye come together not for the better, but for the worse. For first of all, when ye come together in the Church, I hear that there be Divisions among you; and I partly believe it. For there must be also Heresies [Choices] among you, that they which are Approved may be Manifest among you.

– I Corinthians 1:1,10-17; 9:5; 11:17-19 [Paul was in the beginning willing to work with the Jerusalem Cult per their agreement that Paul would go to the Gentiles and Peter to the Jews (Gal. 2:9; 15:5-7); but that soon changed when Cephas/Peter invaded Corinth, along with the brothers of the Lord. Being under the jurisdiction of the Moses Cult in Jerusalem, they tried to make salvation dependent upon their authority only, thus squeezing out Paul from his own Cult. Eventually Paul caught on to their deception and condemned them with a great deal of hostility, as demonstrated in the Second Letter to the Corinthians (11:1-4, 13-15) and the Letter to the Galatians (1:6-9; 2:1-21). Peter, James and his Brothers, played dirty, as church after church established by the Hellenists were taken over by the Moses Cult in Jerusalem, especially by Peter and John (Acts 8:5-25, 40; 10:1-48). Then they went after Antioch (above), Asia (Rev. 1:1 – 3:22), and Corinth (above). The Book of Acts testifies to the success of the Jerusalem Cult. (Acts 21:17-26; cf. Romans 15:25-3). Gaius, whom Paul also baptized, was his host when he wrote the Letter to the Romans from Corinth (Romans 16:23).]

Luke's Version of the Mission to Corinth

After these things Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth.
and found a certain Jew named Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come
from Italy, with his wife Priscilla; (because that Claudius had commanded
all Jews to depart from Rome:) and came unto them.

And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought;
for by their occupation they were tentmakers. And he reasoned in the
synagogue every Sabbath, and persuaded Jews and the Greeks.

And when Silas and Timothy were come from Macedonia, Paul was
Pressed in the Spirit and testified to the Jews that Jesus was Christ.
And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook his
raiment, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads;

I am clean; from henceforth, I will go unto the Gentiles.

And he departed thence, and entered into a certain man's house,
named Justus, one that worshipped God, whose House joined hard
to the synagogue. And Crispus, the Chief Ruler of the synagogue,
Believed on the Lord with all his House; and many of the Corinthians
hearing believed, and were baptized.

Then Spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a Vision, Be not afraid,
but Speak, and hold not thy peace: for I am with thee, and no man shall
set on thee to hurt thee: for I have much people in this city.

And he continued there a year and six months, Teaching the Word
of God among them.

And when Gallio was the Deputy of Achaia, the Jews made
Insurrection with one accord against Paul, and brought him to
the Judgment Seat [Bema], saying, This fellow persuadeth men
to worship God contrary to the Law.

And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said
to the Jews, If it were a matter of Wrong or Wicked Lewdness,
O ye Jews, reason would that I should bear with you: but if it be
a question of words or names, and of your Law, look ye to it;
for I will be no Judge of such matters.

And he drave them from the Judgment Seat.

Then all the Greeks took Sosthenes, the Chief Ruler of the
synagogue, and beat him before the Judgment Seat.

And Gallio cared for none of those things.

– Acts 18:1-17 [Some of these names should be familiar
from Paul's First Letter to the Corinthians, except some
to be out of place, unless Sosthenes had a change of heart
for he is the one who reports the Divisions in Corinth
to Paul while he is in Ephesus (above). As for Crispus

Paul admits to baptizing him, but does not mention that he was Chief Ruler of the synagogue. I'm calling the author of Luke/Acts "Luke" because it's easier, not because I believe that Luke the Physician is the author.]

Luke's Three Versions of Paul's Revelation of Jesus Christ

1. Luke's Third Person Narrative

And Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the Disciples of the Lord [Greek speaking Jews, not the Apostles], went unto the High Priest, and desired of him Letters to Damascus to the Synagogues, that if he found any of this Way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem. And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus: and suddenly there Shined round about him a Light from Heaven: and he fell to the earth, and Heard a Voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? And he said, Who art thou, Lord?

And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

And he, trembling and astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.

And the men which journeyed with him stood speechless, Hearing a Voice, but seeing no man. And Saul arose from the earth; and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus. And he was three days without sight, and neither did eat nor drink. And there was a certain Disciple at Damascus, named Ananias: and to him said the Lord in a Vision, Ananias.

And he said, I am here, Lord.

And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and enquire in the House of Judas for one called Saul of Tarsus: for, behold, he prayeth, and hath Seen in a Vision a man named Ananias coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight.

Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much Evil he hath done to thy Holy Ones in Jerusalem: and here he hath authority from the Chief Priests to bind that all that call on thy Name.

But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way; for he is a Chosen Vessel unto me, to bear my Name before the Gentiles, and Kings,

and the children of Israel; for I will Show him how great things
he must suffer for my Name's sake.

And Ananias went his way, and entered into the House; and putting
his hands on him said, Brother Saul, the Lord, even Jesus, that Appeared
unto thee in the way as thou camest, hath sent me, that thou mightest receive
thy sight, and be Filled with the Holy Spirit.

And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales:
and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

And when he had received meat, he was strengthened.

Then was Saul certain days with the Disciples which were at Damascus.

– Acts 9:1-19 [Note that the men who were with Saul
only Heard a Voice, and there is not a word about Saul's
Ministry in Arabia; here he goes immediately to Damascus
and learns of his mission through other men.]

2. Luke's Version of Paul's First Person Account to the Temple Jews

Men, Brothers, and Fathers, Hear ye my defense which I make now unto you.
(And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept
the more silence; and he saith,)

I am verily a man which am a Jew, born in Tarsus, a city in Cilicia,
yet brought up in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, and taught according
to the perfect manner of the Law of the Fathers, and was Zealous toward God,
as ye all are this day. And I persecuted this Way unto the Death, binding
and delivering into prisons both men and women.

And also the High Priest doth bear me witness, and all the Estate of the Elders,
from whom also I received Letters unto the Brothers, and went to Damascus,
the bring them which were there bound unto Jerusalem, for to be punished.

And it came to pass, that as I made my journey, and was come nigh unto Damascus
about Noon, suddenly there Shone from Heaven a Great Light round about me.

And I fell unto the ground, and Heard a Voice saying unto me, Saul, Saul, why
persecutest thou me?

And I answered, Who art thou, Lord?

And he said unto me, I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom thou persecutest.

And they that were with me Saw indeed the Light, and were afraid;
but they Heard not the Voice of him that spake to me.

And I said, What shall I do, Lord?

And the Lord said unto me, Arise, and go into Damascus, and there it shall
be told thee of all things which are appointed for you to do.

And when I could not see for the Glory of that Light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus. And one Ananias, a devout man according to the Law, having a Good Report of all the Jews which dwelt there, came unto me, and stood, and said unto me, Brother Saul, receive thy sight.

And the same hour I looked up upon him.

And he said, The God of our Fathers hath Chosen thee, that thou shouldest Know his Will, and See that Just One, and shouldest Hear the Voice of his Mouth, for thou shalt be his Witness unto all men of what thou hast Seen and Heard.

And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy Sins,

Calling on the Name of the Lord.

– Acts 22:1-16 [Still no word about Arabia, and note how the others who were with Saul this time only see the Light, but Hear nothing.

That is called a contradiction.].

3. Luke's Version of Paul's First Person Account Before Agrippa II

Then Agrippa said unto Paul, Thou art permitted to speak for thyself.

Then Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himself:

I think myself Happy, King Agrippa, because I shall answer for myself this day before thee touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews: especially because I know thee to be expert in all customs and questions which are among the Jews; wherefore I beseech thee to hear me patiently.

My manner of life from my youth, which was at the first among mine own Nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews; which knew me from the beginning, if they would testify, that after the most straitest sect of our religion I lived a Pharisee. And now I stand and am judged for the Hope of the Promise made of God unto our Fathers: unto which Promise our Twelve Tribes, instantly serving God day and night, hope to come. For which Hope's Sake

King Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews.

Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should Raise the Dead? I verily thought with myself, that I ought to do many things Contrary to the Name of Jesus of Nazareth.

Which thing I also did in Jerusalem: and many of the Holy Ones did I shut up in prison, having received authority from the Chief Priests; and when they were put to Death, I gave my voice against them. And I punished them oft in every Synagogue, and compelled them to Blaspheme; and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even unto strange cities.

Whereupon as I went to Damascus with authority and commission from the Chief Priests, at Midday, O King, I Saw in the way a Light from Heaven, above the Brightness of the Sun, Shining round about me and them which journeyed with me. And when were all fallen to the earth, I Heard a Voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

And I said, Who art thou, Lord?

And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest. But rise and stand upon thy feet; for I have Appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a Minister and a Witness both of these things which thou hast Seen, and of those things in the which I will Appear unto thee;

delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom I now send thee, to Open their Eyes, and to turn them from Darkness to Light, and from the Power of Satan unto God, that they may Receive Forgiveness of Sins, and Inheritance among them which are Sanctified by Faith that is in me.

Whereupon, O King Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the Heavenly Vision: but Showed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should Repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance. For these causes the Jews caught me in the Temple, and went about to kill me.

Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, Witnessing to both small and great, saying none other things than those which the Prophets and Moses did say should come: that Christ should Suffer, and that he should be the first that should Rise from the Dead, and should Show Light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

– Acts 26:1-23 [In this version Paul and those with him all fall to the ground, and there is not a word about how the others perceived the Light and Voice, yet more important is the fact that in this version God tells Paul directly what his mission is, contrary to the two other versions. What, you may ask, does Paul say about all this? Keep reading.]

Paul's Version of His Revelation of Jesus Christ

But I Certify you, Brothers, that the Gospel which was Preached of me is not after man. For I neither Received it of man, neither was I Taught it, but by the Revelation of Jesus Christ. For ye have heard of my conversation in time past in the Jews' religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the Church of God, and Wasted it: and profited in the Jews' religion above many my equals in mine own Nation, being more exceedingly Zealous of the Traditions of my Fathers. But when it Pleas'd God, who separated

me from my mother's womb, and Called me by his Grace,
to Reveal his Son In me,
 that I might Preach him among the Gentiles;
immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood;
 neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were Apostles
 before me; **but I went into Arabia,**
and returned again to Damascus.

– Galatians 1:11-17 [The contradictions should be obvious. He only affirms the fact that he was in Damascus when he received his Revelation of Jesus Christ. Moreover, he didn't confer with anyone, not Ananias, or any other in Damascus, but he went "immediately" to Arabia. He does, however, agree with Luke's third version that God directly gave him his mission to the Gentiles at the same time.]

Jesus Led Zealots and Sicarii

Now the names of the Twelve Apostles are these:
 ...Simon the Canaanite [Zealot], and Judas Iscariot [Sicarii]
 – Matthew 10:2a, 4a [Followed in Mk.3:18-19; Lk. 6:15-16
 & Acts 1:13: "Simon the Zealot"; Jn. 6:71;12:4; 13:26:
 "Judas Iscariot, Simon's son," or "Son of Simon." This
 suggests a Rebel Band led by Jesus (see
 Gospel of Thomas 98, below.)]

Jesus Breaks the Law of the Sabbath Because He is Lord of the Sabbath

And it came to pass, that he went through the corn fields on the Sabbath Day; and his disciples began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn. And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the Sabbath Day that which is not Lawful?

And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungered, he, and they that were with him? How he went into the House of God in the days of Abiathar, the High Priest, and did eat the Showbread, which is not Lawful to eat but for the Priests, and gave also to them which were with him? And he said unto them, The Sabbath was made for Mankind, and not Mankind for the Sabbath: therefore the Son of Man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

– Mark 2:23-28 [Jesus envisioned himself as the Apocalyptic Son of Man, prophesied for the End of Days by Daniel 7:9-14 and in The Similitudes of Enoch (see below). After the Insurrection in the Temple

failed on Palm Sunday (see below), he changed his vision of himself to the Suffering Servant of Isaiah 53.]

The Suffering Servant of Isaiah 53

Who hath Believed our report? and to whom is the Arm of YHWH Revealed? For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: for he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall See him, there is no beauty that we should desire him. He is despised and rejected of men, a Man of Sorrows, and acquainted with grief; and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and YHWH hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth; he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. He was taken from prison and from Judgment: and who shall Declare his Generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people he was stricken. And he made his grave with the Wicked, and with the rich in his Death; because he had done no violence, neither was any Deceit in his mouth. Yet it pleased YHWH to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall See his Seed, he shall prolong his days, and the Pleasure of YHWH shall prosper in his hand. He shall See the travail of his soul, and shall be Satisfied: by his Knowledge shall my Righteous Servant Justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities. Therefore will I divide him a portion with the Great, and he shall divide the Spoil with the Strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto Death: and he was Numbered with the Transgressors; and bare the Sin of many, and made Intercession for the Transgressors. – Isaiah 53 [This is the path Jesus chose after the armed Insurrection in the Temple failed, a view the 12 Apostles opposed (Mark 8:31-33).]

The Law of Moses Used for Evil

And he entered again into the Synagogue: and there was a man there which had a withered hand. And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the Sabbath Day; that they might Accuse him. And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.

And he saith unto him, Is it Lawful to do Good on the Sabbath Days, or to do Evil? to Save life, or to Kill?

But they held their peace.

And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand.

And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

– Mark 3:1- 6 [Yes, Jesus Understood that the Law could be used for Evil.]

Spirit Versus Law

And it came to pass, that, as Jesus sat at meat in his [Levi/Matthew's] house, many Publicans [tax collectors] and Sinners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples; for there were many, and they followed him. And when the Scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with Publicans and Sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with Publicans and Sinners?

When Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, They that are whole have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: I came not to Call the Righteous, but Sinners to Repentance.

And the disciples of John and the Pharisees used to fast: and they come and say unto him, Why do the disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

And Jesus said unto them, Can the Children of the Bridechamber fast, while the Bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the Bridegroom with them, they cannot fast.

– Mark 2:15-19

But whereunto shall I liken this Generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented. For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a Devil.

The Son of Man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold, a man gluttonous, and a wine-drunkard, a friend of Publicans and Sinners.

But Wisdom is Justified of her Children.

– Matthew 11:16-19 [The same in Luke 11:33-34, except that he adds “of all her Children.” The Ministry of Jesus can be viewed as a Movable Feast.]

The First Four Christian Martyrs

Number One: Judas Iscariot:

The Three Versions of His Death

1. Matthew’s Account

Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he [Jesus] was condemned, Repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the Chief Priests and Elders, saying, I have sinned in that I have Betrayed the Innocent Blood. And they said, What is that to us? see thou to that. And he cast down the pieces of silver in the Temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself. And the Chief Priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for us to put them into the Treasury, because it is the Price of Blood. And they took counsel, and bought with them the Potter’s Field. to bury strangers in. Wherefore that field was called, The Field of Blood, unto this day.
– Matthew 27:3-8

2. Luke’s Account in Acts

And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the Disciples, and said, (the number of names together were about an hundred and twenty,) Men and Brothers, this Scripture must needs have been

fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus. For he was numbered with us, and had obtained part of this ministry.

Now this man purchased a field with the Reward of Iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out.

And it was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem; insomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, The Field of Blood.

For it is written in the Book of Psalms, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: and his Bishopric let another take.

– Acts 1:15-20 [Quoting Psalm 109:8:

it should be obvious that these two accounts directly contradict each other. This sounds like a cold blooded murder. How does one fall headfirst in a field and bursts asunder in the midst, where all his bowels gush out? That’s right, it makes no sense and is totally unrelated to the account in Matthew.]

3. The Account in the Gospel of Judas

Judas said, “Master, as you have listened to all of them, now also listen to me. For I have Seen a Great Vision.”

When Jesus heard this, he laughed and said to him, “You Thirteenth Spirit, why do you try so hard?

But speak up, and I shall bear with you.”

Judas said to him, “In the Vision I saw myself as the Twelve Disciples were stoning me and persecuting [me severely].”

– The Gospel of Judas 44-45 [Judas only sees a Vision of his death from being stoned by the Twelve, but it is told as if it foretells. I myself believe this is the true version of his death because in my opinion the Twelve were Zealot body guards for Jesus and were vicious cut-throats at heart.]

Judas Falsely Accused by John Mark’s Gospel

And being in Bethany in the house of Simon the Leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman having an alabaster box of ointment of spikenard very precious; and she brake

the box, and poured it on his head.

And there were some that had indignation within themselves, and said, Why was this waste of the ointment made?

For it might have been sold for than three hundred pence, and have been given to the poor. And they murmured against her. And Jesus said, Let her alone; why trouble ye her?

She hath wrought a Good Work on me. For ye have the poor with you always, and whensoever ye will ye may do them Good; but me ye have not always. She hath done what she could: she has come beforehand to anoint my body to the burying.

Amen, I say unto you, Wheresoever this Gospel shall be preached throughout the whole Kosmos, this also that she hath done shall be spoken of as a memorial of her.

– Mark 14:3-9 [Note that “some people” are the guilty party in this version.]

Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the home of Simon the Leper, there came unto him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head, as he sat at meat. But when **his Disciples** saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste?

For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor. When Jesus understood it, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman?

For she hath wrought a Good Work upon me.

For ye have the poor always with you; but me ye have not always. For in that she hath poured this ointment on my body, she did it for my burial. Amen, I say unto you, Wheresoever this Gospel shall be preached in the whole Kosmos, there shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a Memorial to her.

– Matthew 26:6-13 [Note that it is “his Disciples,” which include John, who are the the guilty party, thus suggesting that John is attempting to shift sole blame on Judas.

There is no parallel in Luke.]

Then Jesus six days before the Passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he Raised from the Dead. There they made him a supper; and Martha served; but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.

Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly,
and anointed his feet with her hair; and the house was filled
with the odor of the ointment.

Then saith **one of his Disciples, Judas Iscariot**, Simon's son,
which should betray him, Why was not this ointment sold for
three hundred pence, and given to the poor?

This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because
he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.
Then said Jesus, Let her alone; against the day of my burying
hath she kept this. For the poor always ye have with you;
but me ye have not always.

– John 12:1-8 [Note that Judas is falsely accused
by John as long as the first two versions are true,
because he himself was a party in the second version.
Moreover, John further accuses him of being a thief,
which is what the Romans called Zealots and Sicarii.]

Jesus Orders Judas to Betray Him

When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit,
and testified, and said, Amen, Amen, I say unto you,
that one of you shall betray me.

Then the Disciples looked one on another, doubting of
of whom he spake. Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom
one of his Disciples, whom Jesus Loved. Simon Peter
therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should
be of whom he spake. He then lying on Jesus' breast saith
unto him, Lord, who is it?

Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I had
dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas
Iscariot, the son of Simon. And after the sop Satan entered into him.

Then said Jesus unto him, **That thou doest, do quickly.**
Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto them.
For some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had
said unto him, Buy those things that we have need of against the Feast;
or, that he should give something to the poor.

He then after receiving the sop went immediately out: and it was Night.

– John 13:21-30 [John is very hostile to Judas, as we saw in his
false accusation of Judas not caring for the poor and being a thief.
He was unable to imagine that this was part of the plan of Jesus to
fulfill Prophecy.]

Another Version

Now when the even was come, he sat down with the Twelve.
And as they did eat, he said, Amen I say unto you that one of you
shall betray me.

And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one of them
to say unto him, Lord, is it I?

And he answered and said, He that dippeth his hand with me in
the dish, the same shall betray me. The Son of Man goeth as it
is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Son of Man
is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born.
Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I?

He said unto him, Thou hast said.

– Matthew 26:20-25 [This passage seems to suggest that the
person who would betray him is chosen by Jesus. The
scripture he refers to is Psalm 49:9: “Yea, my old familiar
friend, in whom I trusted, which did eat of my bread,
hath lifted his heel against me.” This suggests that Jesus
chose his best friend, whom he trusted, to do this act
to fulfill the Prophecy.”]

Jesus Regards Judas as His Friend During the Betrayal

Then cometh he to his Disciples, and saith unto them,
Sleep on, now, and take your rest: behold, the hour is
at hand, and the Son of Man is betrayed into the hands
of sinners. Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand
that doth betray me.

And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the Twelve, came,
and with him a great multitude with swords and staves,
from the Chief Priests and Elders of the people.

Now he that betrayed him gave them a sign, saying,
Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he: hold him fast.
And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, **Hail, Master;
and kissed him.**

And Jesus said unto him, **Friend, wherefore art thou come?**

Then came they and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

– Matthew 26:45-50 [The Gospel of Judas has Jesus
planning this and requests Judas to betray him, and
guarantees a superior reward for his betrayal. This
kind of act takes great courage, so we shouldn't
be too swift to condemn Judas, as his Disciples

didn't hesitate to do. Luke 22:48 demonstrates this bias when after Judas kisses Jesus, the Lord says, "Judas, betrayest thou the Son of Man with a kiss?" focusing on the act of betrayal rather than the relationship between Jesus and his Best Friend. He also omits the greeting, "Friend," to Judas.]

Number Two: Ananias:

The Twelve Apostles Create a Communist Soviet **The Dictatorship of the Proletariat**

Then returned they from the Mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a Sabbath's Day journey. And when they were come in, they went up into an Upper Room, where abode both Peter, and James and John [the Zebedee brothers], and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew [Levi: son of Clopas], James the son of Alphaeus [Clopas: this James was known as James the Less, James Zebedee being the Greater], and Simon the Zealot, and Judas the brother of James [the Less].

These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his Brothers [the Royal Family].

And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the Disciples, and said, (the number of names together were about an hundred and twenty,) Men and Brothers, the Scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas [Iscariot], which was guide to them that took Jesus. For he was numbered with us, and had obtained part of this Ministry....

For it is Written in the Book of Psalms, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: and his Bishoprick let another take. Wherefore of these men which have companied us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, beginning from the Baptism of John, unto that same day that he was Taken Up from us, must one be Ordained to be a Witness with us of his Resurrection.

And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.

And they prayed, and said, Thou, Lord, which Knowest the hearts of all men, Show whether of these two thou hast Chosen, that he may take part of this Ministry and Apostleship, from which Judas by

Transgression fell, that he might go to his own place.

And they gave forth their lots; and the lot fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered with the Eleven Apostles.

– Acts 1:12-17, 20-26 [Note that Luke does not tell us if the lots were taken by all 120 Disciples or just the 11 Apostles, but in my opinion it was the latter, because that’s how Dictatorship works. Jesus had allegedly promised them all a Throne to Rule the Kingdom of God on Earth (Mt. 19:28): “And Jesus said unto them, Amen, I say unto you, That ye which have followed me in the Regeneration when the Son of Man shall sit in the Throne of his Glory, ye also shall sit upon Twelve Thrones, Judging the Twelve Tribes of Israel.” There are no parallels in the other two Synoptic Gospels. Note also that at least four of the Apostles are sons of Jesus’ uncle, Clopas/Alphaeus, in other words, the Lord’s cousins. This is the real reason why the family of Jesus felt betrayed and tried to seize him, saying that he was crazy; this occurred immediately after Jesus chose the Twelve (Mark 3:13-21).]

And the multitude of those that believed were of one heart and of one soul; neither said any of them that ought of the things which he possessed was his own; **but they had all things in common.** And with great power gave the Apostles Witness of the Resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all.

Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessors of lands or houses sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold, and laid them at the Apostles’ feet: **and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need.**

And Joses, who by the Apostles was surnamed Barnabas, (which is, being interpreted, The Son of Consolation,) a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus, having land, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it at the Apostles’ feet. [One assumes that this act took place in the Upper Room, which was their Throne Room.]

Ananias and Sapphira Resist the Soviet Tyranny

But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife,
sold a possession, and kept back part of the price,
his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part,
and laid it at the Apostles' feet.

But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart
to lie to the Holy Spirit, and to keep back part of the price
of the land? Whiles it remained, was it not thine own?
and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power?
why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart?
thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.
[Again, we are left to wonder about the location.]

Ananias Falls Victim to the Tyranny of the Twelve

And Ananias hearing these words fell down,
and gave up the ghost: **and Great Fear came
on all them that heard these things.**

And the young men arose, wound him up,
and carried him out, and buried him.

[Did this scene occur in front of all 120
Disciples, or just the 12? When someone
is Murdered, it's best to have as few
witnesses as possible. As for their Sin against
the Holy Spirit, fraud, the Dead Sea Scroll
Community handled a similar matter quite
differently. F.F. Bruce, states in his New Testament
History (NY: Doubleday, 1969, p. 106): "A stern
penalty was imposed on a member who knowingly
deceived in regard to property – but not so stern as
the judgment which overtook Ananias and Sapphira
when they committed this offense in the early days
of the Jerusalem church. The penalty at Qumran
was one year's exclusion from the purity of the
many (perhaps from participation in their solemn
acts of fellowship), together with the reduction
of his rations by one quarter." This is far from
the Death Penalty imposed on Ananias and
Sapphira. If a human community could judge
the offense to a much lesser degree than the
Jerusalem Soviet, then God did not kill his

Divine Son and Daughter: surely Peter did.
 Another problem with the story is that if this
 took place in the Upper Room, corpse
 contamination under the Law of Moses
 would have made that place and everyone
 in it Unclean for seven days. (See below.)
 This would have interfered with their preferred
 place of worship, Herod's Temple, for they
 would be unable to enter it unless the necessary
 cleanliness rules were followed (see below).]

Number Three: Sapphira:

Murdered by Peter

And it was about the space of three hours after,
 when his wife, not knowing what was done,
 came in. And Peter answered unto her,
 Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much?
 And she said, Yes, for so much.

Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have
 agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord?
 behold, the feet of them which have buried thy
 husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out.

Then fell she down straightway at his feet,
 and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in,
 and found her dead, and, carrying her forth,
 buried her by her husband.

**And Great Fear came upon all the church,
 and upon as many as heard these things.**

– Acts 4:32-37; 5:1-11 [All Communist Communities
 Rule by Terror. What kind of police homicide detective
 would accept this lame version of the story? which cries
 out for an examination of the corpses; the fact that they
 were immediately buried was not only against Jewish burial
 customs, which allowed for up to four days for burial
 preparation, but also shows consciousness of guilt. Note
 that Ananias went to what appears to be the Upper Room,
 to give his donation, and the young thugs who
 carry out his body and bury it, are already inside waiting,
 but Peter waits at what the text suggests is Sapphira's
 house, where the young thugs lurk outside. Peter is

the only witness to the death of Sapphira, and thus, the numero uno suspect in her murder. Since an autopsy was not performed on the bodies, it is best for the reader not to rule out Murder, but to keep an open mind. Luke never tells us the means of their deaths: did they die of fear? Or was their Guilt so overwhelming that they had heart attacks? Or did God kill his own Divine Son and Daughter? I can easily imagine the bodies being exhumed with dagger wounds in their bodies.]

The Law of Moses on Contact with a Dead Person

He that toucheth the Dead Body of any man shall be Unclean Seven Days. He shall purify himself with it on the Third Day, and on the Seventh he shall be Clean: but if he purify not himself the Third Day, then the Seventh Day he shall not be Clean.

Whosoever toucheth the Dead Body of any man that is Dead, and purify not himself, defileth the Tabernacle of YHWH; and that Soul shall be Cut Off from Israel; because the Water of Separation was not sprinkled upon him, he shall be Unclean; his Uncleanness is yet upon him.

This is the Law, when a man Dieth in a Tent: All that come into the Tent, and All that is the Tent, shall be Unclean Seven Days. And every open vessel, which hath no covering bound upon it, is Unclean.

And whosoever toucheth one that is Slain with a sword in the open fields, or a Dead Body, or a bone of a man, or a grave, shall be Unclean Seven Days.

And for an Unclean person they shall take of the ashes of the burnt heifer of Purification of Sin, and running water shall be put thereto in a vessel. And a Clean person shall take hyssop, and dip it in the water, and sprinkle it upon the tent, and upon all the vessels, and upon the persons that were there, and upon him that touched a bone, or one Slain, or one Dead, or a grave: and the Clean person shall sprinkle upon the Unclean on the Third Day, and on the Seventh Day he shall purify himself, and wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and shall be Clean at even. But the man that shall be Unclean, and shall not purify himself, that Soul shall be Cut Off from among the Congregation, because he hath Defiled the Sanctuary of YHWH; the Water of Separation hath not been sprinkled upon him: he is Unclean.

And it shall be a Perpetual Statute unto them, that he that sprinkleth the Water of Separation shall wash his clothes; and he that toucheth the Water of Separation shall be Unclean until even. And whatsoever the Unclean person toucheth shall be Unclean: and the Soul that toucheth it shall be Unclean until even.

– Numbers 19:11-22 [The cleanup after the murders would have been a long tedious process, where almost the whole Jerusalem Cult would have been Unclean for at least Seven Days and unable to worship in the Temple, their preferred place (Acts 2:46; 5:42).]

Number Four: Stephen

Peter Makes a Secret Deal with Gamaliel for Paul to Persecute the Hellenists

And when they [the Police of the High Priest] had brought them [the Twelve], they set them before the Council [the Sanhedrin]: and the High Priest asked them, saying, Did not we straightly command that ye should not teach in this Name? and behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this man's [Jesus] blood upon us.

Then Peter and the other Apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men. The God of our fathers Raised Up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree. Him hath God exalted with his Right Hand to be a Prince [note how Kingship is avoided] and a Savior, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins. And we are his witnesses of these things; and so is also the Holy Spirit, whom God hath Given to them that obey him. [Note that Peter preaches conditional salvation based on legal obedience.]

When they heard that, they were cut to the heart, and took counsel to slay them.

Then stood there up one in the Council, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a Doctor of the Law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the Apostles forth a little space: and he spake unto them, Ye men of Israel, take heed to yourselves what ye intend to do as touching these men. [Gamaliel then gives a false chronology of the false Messiahs that have recently plagued the Jews: verses 36-37]

And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsel or this work be of men, it will come to nought: but if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found even to fight against God. [This suggests Gamaliel has made some sort of deal with Peter, evidence which appears in the death of Stephen: see below.]
 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the Apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the Name of Jesus, and let them go.

The Apostles Immediately Disobey the Sanhedrin With Impunity

And they departed from the presence of the Council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his Name. And daily in the Temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ. [Paul only persecutes the Hellenists, not the Soviet of the Apostles.]
 – Acts 5:27-42

Saul/Paul as Attack Dog of Gamaliel

I [Paul] am, Amen, a man which am a Jew, born in Tarsus, a city in Celicia, yet brought up in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, and taught according the perfect manner of the Law of the fathers, and was Zealous toward God, as ye all are this day.
 And I persecuted this Way unto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women [i.e., Greek speaking Jews, the Hellenists].
 As also the High Priest doth bear me witness, and all the Estate of the Elders: from whom also I received letters unto the Brothers, and went to Damascus, to bring them which were there bound unto Jerusalem, for to be punished.
 – Acts 22:3-5 [Paul is operating under the direction of Gamaliel, further evidence forthcoming.]

Paul Goes After the Hellenists in Jerusalem

And in those days, when the number of the Disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians [Greek speaking Jews] against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministrations. [The Hellenists were being discriminated against because of their views on the Law and Temple. Luke

gives a lame explanation of how the Disciples chose Seven Deacons who became stewards for the Hellenists, but were more likely rivals for influence with the Twelve, who still ruled as a dictatorship of the proletariat, i.e., over the the Poor; Stephen, the leader of the Seven, is then arrested because of his views on the Law and Temple. He then gives a rousing defense but is condemned to stoning. Note what follows:]

...When they [the Sanhedrin] heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth. But he, being full of the Holy Spirit, looked up stedfastly into Heaven, and Saw the Glory of God, and Jesus standing on the Right Hand of God, and said, Behold, I See the Heavens Opened, and the Son of Man standing on the Right Hand of God. Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord, and cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul.

And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, Receive my spirit. And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

Further Evidence of the Deal

And Saul was consenting unto his death. And at that time there was a Great Persecution against the Church which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, **except the Apostles**. And devout men, carried Stephen to his burial, and made great lamentation over him.

As for Saul, he made havock of the Church, entering into every house, and haling men and women committed them to prison.
 – Acts 6:1; 7:54 – 8:3 [Luke cover ups the fact that only the Hellenists were persecuted in Jerusalem for note the highlighted text: “**except the Apostles,**” meaning the Hebrew speaking communist community that was faithful to the Law of Moses and the Temple. The Hellenists were not Gentiles, but Greek speaking Jews. They didn't live the Law as strictly as the Hebrew speaking Jews, especially the Pharisee Believers, who took on the burden beholden to the Priesthood of Aaron outlined in Leviticus.]

Paul Rebukes Peter at Antioch For Betraying the Gentiles

But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him
to the face, because he was to be blamed.
For before that certain men from James,
he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come,
he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them
which were of the Circumcision.
And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him;
insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away
with their dissimulation.
But when I saw that they walked not uprightly
according to the Truth of the Gospel,
I said unto Peter before them all,
If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of
the Gentiles, and not as do the Jews,
why compellest thou the Gentiles to live
as do the Jews? We who are Jews by nature,
and not sinners of the Gentiles, Knowing that a man
is not Justified by the Works of the Law,
but by the Faith of Jesus Christ, and not
by the Works of the Law; for by the Works of the Law
shall no flesh be Justified.
But if while we seek to be Justified by the Faith of Christ,
we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ
the Minister of of Sin? God forbid.
For if I build again the things which I destroyed,
I make myself a transgressor.
For I through the Law am dead to the Law,
that I might live unto God.
I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live;
yet not I, but Christ liveth in me:
and the life which I now live in the flesh
I live by the Faith of the Son of God,
who loved me, and gave himself for me.
I do not frustrate the Grace of God:
for if Righteousness come by the Law,
then Christ is dead in vain.
– Galatians 2:11-21[As one should see
by now, Peter and the Twelve were ruthless
Cult dictators. Later, James the Just would
transform this Soviet into the New Kingdom

of David, with him as the King.
 (Acts 15:13-17, quoting Amos 9:11 –
 a messianic verse, meaning James was usurping
 the place of Jesus and was thus an Antichrist:
anti in Greek can mean, “in place of,”
 as in Antipas, “in place of the Father.”)
 James was heir to the Royal Line of Solomon,
 which had a claim to the Throne of David,
 but was under a Curse by the Prophet Jeremiah
 (see, e.g., Jeremiah 36:30). Scholars refer to
 his reign as a Caliphate, and his subjects were
 known as “The Poor” (Galatians 2:10);
 an apt title for any Communist Dictatorship.
 This Cult was known later as the Ebionites,
 which means “the Poor.”

Moreover, Peter was without excuse for giving in
 to the demands of the certain men from James,
 for he had received a Vision from the Lord on
 a rooftop in Joppa, Hearing God’s Voice declaring
 all foods clean: “And on the morrow, as they [men
 from Cornelius the Centurion] went on their journey,
 and drew nigh unto the city [Joppa], Peter went up
 upon the housetop to pray about the sixth hour:
 and he became very hungry, and would have eaten:
 but while they made ready, he fell into a trance,
 and Saw Heaven opened, and a certain vessel
 descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet
 knit at the four corners, and let down to the Earth;
 wherein were all manner of fourfooted beasts of
 the Earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things,
 and fowls of the air. And there came a Voice
 to him, Rise, Peter; kill, and eat.

But Peter said, Not so, Lord, for I have never
 eaten any thing that is common or unclean.

And the Voice Spake unto him, What God
 hath Cleansed, that call not thou common.

This was done thrice: and the vessel was
 received up again into Heaven (Acts 10:9-16).”

So this was the Fourth time Peter betrayed
 his Lord and Master, Jesus Christ. When you
 get to Know all about Peter, he is a hard person
 to like very much.]

The Divine Daughters of YHWH Who Followed Jesus

There were also women looking on afar off,
 among whom was Mary Magdalene,
 and Mary the mother of Joses [wife of
 Clopas/Alphaeus], and Salome [Daughter of
 Herodias]; (who also, when he was in Galilee,
 followed him, and ministered unto him:)
 and many other women which came up with
 him unto Jerusalem.

...And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joses
 beheld where he was laid.

And when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene,
 and Mary the mother of James [the Less],
 and Salome, had bought sweet spices,
 that they might come and anoint him.

...Now when Jesus was Risen early the first day of the
 week, he Appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of
 whom he had cast Seven Devils.

– Mark 15:40-41, 47; 16:1, 9 [Jesus does not
 Appear first to Mary Magdalene in Mark; verse 9
 is not original to Mark but part of two fake endings;
 in fact the real Mark ends mysteriously at 16:8;
 no one knows how Mark originally ended,
 but if Matthew knew the original ending,
 he followed suit by having the Eleven meet Jesus
 in Galilee; the fact that two fake endings were
 appended to Mark shows how ruthless
 the later Cult Wars were.]

And certain women, which had been healed
 of Evil Spirits and infirmities,
 Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went
 Seven Devils [see Gospel of Mary below].
 And Joanna the wife of Chuza Herod's Steward
 [of the Royal Court], and Susannah,
 and many others, which ministered unto
 him of their substance.

...Now upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with them. And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments: and as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead? He is not here, but is Risen: remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee, saying, The Son of Man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the Third Day Rise Again.

And they remembered his Words, and returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the Eleven, and to all the rest.

It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James [the Less], and other women that were with them, which told these things unto the Apostles. And their words seemed to them as tall tales, and they believed them not.

– Luke 8:2-3; 24:1-11 [Luke denies that Mary Magdalene Saw Jesus; it is also obvious that Jesus, being of Royal Birth, associated with those in Herod’s Royal Court, like Joanna and Salome; we are not told who Susanna was, but she is linked to Joanna and Salome.]

Mary Magdalene the Consort of Jesus

The Wisdom who is called “the Barren,” she is the Mother of the Angels. And the Consort of the Lord, Mary Magdalene, the Lord Loved her more than all the Disciples, and he used to kiss her often on the mouth.

The rest of the Disciples said to him, “Why do you love her more than all of us?”

The Savior answered, saying to them,
 “Why do I not love you like her?
 If a blind man and one who sees are
 both in the Darkness, they are not different
 from one another. When the Light comes,
 then he who Sees will See the Light,
 and the blind will remain in Darkness.”
 The Lord said, “Blessed is he who Existed before
 he Came into Existence. For he who is, has been, and shall be.”
 – The Gospel of Philip 48-49

Simon Peter said to them, “Let Mary leave us,
 for women are not worthy of life.”
 Jesus said, “I myself shall lead her in order
 to Make her Male, so that she too may become
 a Living Spirit resembling you males.
 For every Woman who will Make herself Male
 will enter the Kingdom of Heaven.
 – The Gospel of Thomas 114 [This is the
 equivalent of Paul’s teaching of the
 Inner Perfect Man, Christ in you.]

When the Blessed One had said this, he greeted them all, saying,
 “Peace be with you. Receive my peace to yourselves.
 Beware that no one lead you astray, saying, ‘Lo! here!’ or ‘Lo! there!’
For the Son of Man is within you. Follow after him!
 Those who seek him will find him. Go then and preach
 the Gospel of the Kingdom. Do not lay down any rules beyond
 what I appointed for you, and do not give a Law [the Ten Commandments]
 like the Lawgiver [Moses] lest you be constrained by it.”
 When he had said this, he departed.
 But they were grieved. They wept greatly, saying,
 “How shall we go to the Gentiles and preach the Gospel
 of the Kingdom of the Son of Man?
 If they did not spare him, how will they spare us?”
 Then Mary stood up, greeted them all, and said to her brothers,
 “Do not weep and do not grieve nor be irresolute,
 for his Grace will be entirely with you and will protect you.
 But rather let us praise his Greatness, for he has prepared us
 and Made us into Men.”
 When Mary said this, she turned their hearts to the Good,
 and they began to discuss the Words of the Savior.

The Parable of the Seven Powers of Wrath

Peter said to Mary, “Sister, we know that the Savior loved you more than the rest of women. Tell us the Words of the Savior which you remember – which you Know but we do not, nor have we Heard them.”

Mary answered and said, “What is Hidden is from you I will proclaim to you.” And she began to speak to them these Words:

“I,” she said, “I Saw the Lord in a Vision and I said to him, ‘Lord, I Saw you today in a Vision.’”

He answered and said to me, “Blessed are you, that you did not waver at the Sight of me. For where the Mind is, there is the Treasure.” I said to him, “Lord, how does he who Sees the Vision See it through the Soul or through the Spirit?”

The Savior answered and said, “He does not See through the Soul nor through the Spirit, but the Mind which is between the two – that is what Sees the Vision....”

[Pages 11-14 are missing.]

...And Desire said, “I did not see you Descending, but now I see you Ascending. Why do you lie since you belong to me?”

The Soul answered and said, “I Saw you. You did not See me nor recognize me. I served you as a Garment, and you did not Know me.”

When it had said this, it went away rejoicing greatly.

Again it came to the Third Power, which is called Ignorance.

The Power questioned the Soul saying, “Where are you going?

In Wickedness you are bound. But you are bound; do not judge!”

And the Soul said, “Why do you judge me although I have not judged?

I was bound though I have not bound. I was not recognized.

But I have recognized that the All is being Dissolved, both the Earthly Things and the Heavenly.”

When the Soul had overcome the Third Power, it went upwards and Saw the Fourth Power, which took Seven Forms. [The Twelve would later claim that Mary had Seven Demons that Jesus exorcised from her, showing that they never accepted her Vision and spread lies about her: Luke 8:2.]

**The First Form is Darkness, the Second Desire,
the Third Ignorance, the Fourth is the Excitement of Death,
the Fifth is the Kingdom of the Flesh, the Sixth is the Foolish Wisdom of Flesh, the Seventh is the Wrathful Wisdom.**

These are the Seven Powers of Wrath.

They ask the Soul, “Whence do you come, Slayer of Men, or where are you going, Conqueror of Space?”

The Soul answered and said, “What binds me has been slain,
and what surrounds me has been overcome,
and my desire has been ended, and ignorance has died.

In a Kosmos I was released from a Kosmos,
and in a Type from a Heavenly Type,
and from the Fetter of Oblivion which is transient.
From this time on will I attain to the rest of the time,
of the season, of the Aeon, in silence.”

When Mary had said this, she fell silent, since it was to
this point that the Savior had spoken with her.

But Andrew answered and said to the brothers,
“Say what you wish to say about what she has said,
I at least do not believe that the Savior said this.
For certainly these teachings are strange ideas.”

Peter answered and spoke concerning the same things.

He questioned them about the Savior: “Did he really
speak with a woman without our knowledge and not openly?
Are we to turn about and all listen to her? Did he prefer her to us?”

Then Mary wept and said to Peter, “My brother Peter, what do
you think? Do you think that I thought this up myself in my heart,
or that I am lying about the Savior?”

Levi answered and said to Peter, “Peter, you have always been
hot-tempered. Now I see you contending against the woman
like the Adversaries. But if the Savior made her worthy,
who are you indeed to reject her? Surely, the Savior Knows
her very well. That is why he Loved her more than us.

Rather let us be ashamed and put on the Perfect Man and acquire
him for ourselves as he commanded us, and preach the Gospel,
not laying down any other Rule or other Law beyond what the Savior said.”

Then they all began to go forth to proclaim and preach.

– The Gospel of Mary 8-10, 15-18 [The Great Split
between the two main cults that emerged in Jerusalem
is apparent in this exchange.]

Jesus Has Intimate Contact With Salome, Daughter of Herodias

Jesus said, "Two will rest on a couch; the one will die,
and the other will live."
Salome said, "Who are you, man, that you have come
up on my couch and eaten from my table?"
Jesus said to her, "I am he who Exists from that which is Integrated.
I was given some of the things of my Father."
"I am your female disciple."
"Therefore I say, if he is Integrated he will be filled with Light,
but if he is Divided, he will be filled with Darkness."
– The Gospel of Thomas 61

Salome Dances For the Head of John the Baptist

And King Herod heard of him [Jesus]; (for his name was
spread abroad:) and he said, That John the Baptist was risen
from the dead, and therefore mighty works do show forth
themselves in him. Others said, That it is Elijah.
And others said, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.
But when Herod heard thereof, he said, It is John, whom I
beheaded: he is risen from the dead.
For Herod himself had sent forth, and laid hold upon John,
and bound him in prison for Herodias's sake, his brother
Philip's wife: for he had married her.
For John had said unto Herod, It is not lawful for thee
to have thy brother's wife.
Therefore Herodias had a quarrel against him, and would
have killed him; but she could not.
For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man
and an Holy, and observed him: and when he heard him,
he did many things, and heard him gladly.
And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his
birthday made a supper to his Lords, High Captains, and
Chief Estates of Galilee; and when the daughter of the said
Herodias [Salome] came in, and danced, and pleased Herod
and them that sat with him, the King said unto the damsel,
Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee.
And he sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me,
I will give it to thee, unto the half of my Kingdom.
And she went forth, and said unto her mother,

What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the Baptist.

And she came in straightway with haste unto the King,
and asked, saying, I will that thou give me by and by in a
charger the head of John the Baptist.

And the King was exceeding sorry; yet for his oath's sake,
and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her.
And immediately the King sent an executioner, and commanded
his head to be brought: and he went and beheaded him in the prison,
and brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel:
and the damsel gave it to her mother.

– Mark 6:14-28 [I like to imagine that the scene
where Jesus climbs up on her couch took place
after this gruesome event; thus, sorrow and remorse
brought her to repentance and Jesus. But who
knows for sure when it comes to Royalty?
Also note that Mark has no trouble stating
that Salome was at the Crucifixion and
Entombment of Jesus, but does not mention
her name when she danced for Herod.]

Early Friction Between Peter and Mary Magdalene

It came to pass then, when the First Mystery had finished speaking
these words unto the Disciples, that Mary came forward and said:
“My Lord, my mind is ever Understanding, at every time to come
forward and set forth the Solution of the words which she hath
uttered; **but I am afraid of Peter, because he threatened me
and hateth our sex.**”

– Pistis Sophia (trns. by G.S.R. Mead: The Gnostic Society
Library [online], chapter 72

And Peter started forward and said unto Jesus: **“My Lord,
we will not endure this woman, for she taketh the opportunity
from us and hath let none of us speak,
but she Discourseth many times.”**

– Pistis Sophia, chapter 36 [Peter's jealousy over the fact
that Jesus Loved Mary more than anyone, is reflected
in this passage. For Jesus' attitude toward Mary,
see below.]

It came to pass, when Mary had heard the Saviour say these words,
 that she gazed fixedly into the air for the space of an hour.
 She said, "My Lord, give Commandment unto me to speak
 in Openness."

And Jesus, the Compassionate, answered and said unto Mary:
 "Mary, thou Blessed One, whom I will Perfect in All Mysteries
 of those of the Height, Discourse in Openness, **thou, whose
 heart is Raised to the Kingdom of Heaven more
 that all my Brothers.**"

– Pistis Sophia, chapter 17

Jesus is Greater than King Solomon

Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered,
 saying, Master, we would See a Sign from thee.

But he answered and said unto them, An Evil
 and Adulterous Generation seeketh after a Sign;
 and there shall be no Sign be given to it,
 but the Sign of the Prophet Jonah:

for as Jonah was three days, and three nights
 in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of Man
 be three days and three nights in the Heart of the Earth.

The men of Ninevah shall rise in judgment with this Generation,
 and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching
 of Jonah; and, behold, a Greater than Jonah is here.

The Queen of the South shall rise up in the judgment with this Generation,
 and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the Earth
 to Hear the Wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a Greater than Solomon is here.

– Matthew 12:38-42 [This Generation lived between 30 A.D. and 70 A.D.]

Parables of Jesus Found Only in Matthew

Hidden Treasure

Again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like unto Treasure hid
 in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth,
 and for Joy thereof goeth and selleth all he hath,
 and buyeth the field.

– Matthew 13:44 [Some commentators think this
 is immoral because it cheats the previous owner;

but that misses the whole point of the teaching,
which is clear to anyone that doesn't deny their
God-Created Human Nature.]

The Hundred Sheep

For the Son of Man is come to Save that which was Lost.
How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep,
and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave
the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains,
and seeketh that which is gone astray?
And if so be that he find it, Amen I say unto you,
he Rejoiceth more of that sheep, than of the
ninety and nine which went not astray.
Even so it is not the Will of your Father
which is in Heaven, that one of these
little ones should Perish.
– Matthew 18:10-14

The Ungrateful Proletariat

For the Kingdom of Heaven is like unto a man that is an
Householder, which went out early in the morning to hire
workers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with
the workers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.
And he went about the third hour, and saw others standing
idle in the marketplace, and said unto them, Go ye also
into the vineyard, and whatsoever is Right I will give you.
And they went their way. Again he went out about the sixth
and ninth hour, and did likewise.
And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others
standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all
the day idle? They say unto him, Because no man hath
hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard;
and whatsoever is Right, that shall ye receive.
So when even was come, the Lord of the Vineyard
saith unto his Steward, Call the workers, and give them
their hire, beginning from the last unto the first.
And when they came that were hired about the eleventh
hour, they received every man a penny.

But when the first came, they supposed that they should
 have received more; and they likewise received every
 man a penny. And when they had received it,
 they murmured against the Goodman of the House,
 saying, These last have wrought but one hour,
 and thou hast made them equal unto us,
 which have born the burden and heat of the day.
 But he answered one of them, and said,
 Friend, I do thee no Wrong: didst not thou
 agree with me for a penny?
 Take that thine is, and go thy way: I will give unto
 this last, even as unto thee.

Is it not Lawful for me to do what I will with mine own?
 Is thine eye Evil, because I am Good?
 So the last shall be first, and the first last:
 for many be Called, but few are Chosen.
 – Matthew 20:1-16 [This parable more than any
 other shows that Jesus believed in Private Property,
 the bane of all Marxist-Socialists, like the Twelve
 Apostles, who established a Repressive
 Communist Soviet in Jerusalem so that
 all Cult members would be Equal.
 Yeah, Equally Poor!]

The Lord of the Vineyard's Two Sons

But what think ye? A certain man had two sons;
 and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work
 today in my vineyard.
 He answered, and said, I will not:
 but afterward he repented, and went.
 And he came to the second, and said likewise.
 And he answered, I go, Sir: and went not.
 Whether of them twain did the will of his father?
 They say unto him, The first.
 Jesus saith unto them, Amen I say unto you,
 That the Tax Collectors and the Harlots go into
 Kingdom of God before you.

For John came unto you in the Way of Righteousness,
 and ye believed him not: but the Tax Collectors and
 the Harlots Believed him: and ye, when ye had Seen it,
 repented not afterward, that ye might Believe him.
 – Matthew 21:28-32 [This is one of the rare times
 the Jesus of Matthew says “God” instead of “Heaven,”
 for his description of the Invisible Kingdom.
 I believe all of the Parables that I have quoted were
 spoken by the Lord Jesus Christ while on Earth.]

Parables of Jesus Found Only in Luke

Jesus Praises a Crook

And he said also unto his Disciples, There was a certain rich man,
 which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that
 he had wasted his goods. And he called him, and said unto him,
 How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship;
 for thou mayest be no longer steward.
 Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do?
 for my Lord taketh away from me the stewardship:
 I cannot dig; to beg I am ashamed.
 I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out
 of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.
 So he called every one of his Lord’s debtors unto him,
 and said unto the first, How much owest thou my Lord?
 And he said, An hundred measures of oil.
 And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly,
 and write fifty.
 Then said he to another, And how much owest thou?
 And he said, An hundred measures of wheat.
 And he said unto him, Take thy bill,
 and write fourscore.
 And the Lord commended the unjust steward,
 because he had done wisely: for the Children of this Kosmos
 are in their Generation wiser than the Children of Light.
 And I say unto you, Make yourselves friends of the Mammon
 of Unrighteousness; that, when ye fall, they may receive
 you into everlasting habitations.
 He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much;
 and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much.

If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous Mammon,
 who will commit to your trust the true riches?
 And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's,
 who shall give you that which is your own?
 No servant can serve two masters;
 for either he will hate the one, and love the other;
 or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other.
 Ye cannot serve God and Mammon.
 – Luke 16:1-13

So-Called Friends

And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend,
 and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him,
 Friend, lend me three loaves; for a friend of mine in his
 journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before
 him. And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble
 me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with
 me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee.
 I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him,
 because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity
 he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.
 And I say unto you, Ask and it shall be given you;
 seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be open
 unto you. For every one that asketh receiveth;
 and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that
 knocketh it shall be opened.
 – Luke 11:5-10 [These Lukan parables deal
 with real human situations without any
 sugar coating. I have no doubt that
 the author of Luke/Acts was a Gentile.]

The Unjust Judge

And he spake a parable unto them to this end, that men might
 always to pray, and not to faint; saying, There was in the city
 a judge, which Feared not God, neither regarded men: and
 there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying,
 Avenge me of mine adversary. And he would not for a while:
 but afterward he said within himself, Though I Fear not God,
 nor regard man; yet because this widow troubleth me, I will
 avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me.

And the Lord said, Hear what the Unjust Judge saith: and shall not God avenge his own Elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long for them? I tell you, he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of Man cometh, shall he find Faith on the Earth?

– Luke 18:1-8

Who Is My Neighbor?

And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and Tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to Inherit Eternal Life?

He said unto him, What is Written in the Law? how Readest thou?

And he answering said, Thou shalt Love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind: and thy Neighbor as thyself.

And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live.

But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my Neighbor?

And Jesus answering him, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead. And by chance there came down a certain Priest that way; and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. And likewise a certain Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him, and went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two silver coins, and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee.

Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was Neighbor unto him that fell among the thieves?

And he said, He that showed Mercy on him.

Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

– Luke 10:25-37

Amazing Grace

And he said, a certain man had two sons: and the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living.

And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against Heaven, and before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.

And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him.

And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against Heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: and bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it, and let us eat, and be merry: for this my son was dead, and is alive again: he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing. And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant. And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father has killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. And he was angry, and would not go in; therefore came his father out, and intreated him. And he answering said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: but as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots,

thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.
 And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me,
 and all that I have is thine. It was meet that we should
 make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead,
 and is alive again: and was lost, and is found.
 – Luke 15:11-32 [I believe Jesus really said these
 parables for this one really shows the difference
 between Grace and Works Righteousness, a
 message more amenable to Gentiles than Jews.]

A Judgment Parable: the Ten Pounds

And as they Heard these things, he added and Spake a Parable,
 because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that
 the Kingdom of God should immediately Appear. He said therefore,
 A certain Nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself
 a Kingdom, and to return. And he called his ten servants, and delivered
 ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy until I come.
 But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying,
 We will not have this man to Reign over us.
 And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received
 the Kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him,
 to whom had given the money, that he might know how much every man
 had gained by trading. Then came the first, saying,
 Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.
 And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been
 faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities.
 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds.
 And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities.
 And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is thy pound, which I have
 kept laid up in a napkin: for I feared thee, because thou art an austere man:
 thou taketh up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow.
 And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I Judge thee, thou
 Wicked Servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up
 that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow:
 Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my
 coming I might have required mine own with usury?
 And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound,
 and give to him that hath ten pounds.
 (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.)

For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath shall be given:
 and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away
 from him. But those mine enemies, which would not
 that I should reign over them, bring hither,
 and slay them before me.

– Luke 19:11-27 [This parable seems framed for a
 Gentile audience. It also seems to teach that, contrary
 to Jesus' own belief, that the Kingdom of God was
 not coming immediately. It also seems to suggest
 a date of later composition, since it alludes to Herod
 Agrippa I going to Rome to receive his Kingdom.
 As you have likely surmised by now, I am not a big
 fan of Judgment Parables, and this one is strongly
 a works righteousness kind of parable, and not at all
 about Grace, as in the Amazing Grace Parable. This
 is strong evidence that Luke composed it separate
 from any independent source.]

Other Parables:

Jesus the Comedian: Camel Humor

And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running,
 and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do
 that I may Inherit Eternal Life.

And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me Good? there is none
 Good but one, that is, God. Thou Knowest the Commandments,
 Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear
 false witness, Defraud not, Honor thy father and mother.

And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these things have
 I observed from my youth.

Then Jesus beholding him Loved him, and said unto him,
 One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast,
 and give to the poor, and thou shalt have Treasure in Heaven:
 and come, take up thy cross, and follow me.

And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved:
 for he had great possessions.

And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples,
 How hardly shall they that have riches Enter into the Kingdom of God!
 And the Disciples were astonished at his words.

But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them,
 Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches
 to Enter into the Kingdom of God!

It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle,
 than for a rich man to Enter into the Kingdom of God.

And they were astonished out of measure,
 saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

And Jesus looking upon them saith,
 With men it is impossible, but not with God;
 for with God All Things are possible.

Then Peter began to say unto him,
 Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.
 And Jesus answered and said, Amen I say unto you,
 There is no man that hath left house, or brothers,
 or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children,
 or lands, for my sake, and the Gospel's,
 but he shall receive an hundredfold now in this Time,
 houses, and brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children,
 and lands, with persecutions; and in the Kosmos to come,
 Eternal Life. But many that are first shall be last;
 and the last first.

– Mark 10:23-31 [The argument that Jesus is talking
 about a Gate in Jerusalem called “the Eye of the Needle,”
 is pure camel-shit. This is also a warning to the rich
 that the Sicarii are coming and it is better in the end
 to join them than to resist them: Gallows Humor.]

Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites!
 for ye pay tithes of mint and anise, and cummin,
 and have Omitted the Weightier Matters of the Law,
 Judgment, Mercy, and Faith: these ought ye to have
 done, and not to leave the other undone.

Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat,
 and swallow a camel.

– Matthew 23:23-24 [To me, these camel
 jokes are hilarious.]

Jesus Continues to Berate the Scribes and Pharisees

Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites! for ye make clean
 the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of
 extortion and excess. Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is

within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites! for ye are like unto Whited Sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the Prophets and garnish the Sepulchres of the Righteous, and say, If we had been in the Days of our Fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the Blood of the Prophets.

Wherefore ye be Witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the Prophets.

Fill ye up then the Measure of your Fathers.

Ye Serpents, ye Generation of Vipers, how can ye escape the Damnation of Hades.

– Matthew 23:25-33 [“Hades” is the Greek equivalent of the Hebrew “Sheol,” the Shadow World of the Dead.]

Jesus the Sly Fox

Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle him in his talk. And they sent out to him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art True, and teachest the Way of God in Truth, neither carest thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men. Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it Lawful to give tribute to Caesar, or not? But Jesus Perceived their Wickedness, and said, Why Tempt ye me, ye Hypocrites? Show me the tribute money. And they brought unto him a denarius. And he said unto them, Whose is this image and superscription? They say unto him, Caesar's. Then saith he unto them, **Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and unto God the things that are God's.** When they had heard these words, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

– Matthew 22:15-22 [Mark 12:13-17 is essentially the same; Luke 20:20-26 omits the Pharisees and Herodians for some unknown reason, and replaces them with the Chief Priests and Scribes. This trap displays the cunning of Jesus; he may have led Sicarii, but he was no fool. No true Sicarii would have answered this way.]

Jesus the Sicarii Leader

Jesus said, “What the Kingdom of the Father Resembles is a man who wanted to assassinate a Member of Court. At home, he drew the dagger and stabbed it into the wall in order to know whether his hand would be firm. Next, he murdered the Member of Court.”

– Gospel of Thomas 98 [This is a classic description of the Sicarii, who terrorized Judean nobility by assassinating them with their special daggers. The Sicarii find “historical credibility in the popular legends that bandits right wrongs, often function as champions of justice and for the common people, and usually enjoy the support of local peasants.

In fact, instead of aiding the authorities in capturing bandits, the people may actually protect them. Brigands usually share, and often symbolize, the common people’s fundamental sense of justice and their basic religious loyalties. At times banditry comes into conjunction with millenarianism, and in some historical circumstances it accomplishes or leads to peasant revolts.”

Bandits, Prophets, and Messiahs: Popular Movements in the Time of Jesus, by Richard A. Horsley with John S. Hanson (Harrisburg: Trinity Press, 1985, 1999; p. 49).]

Jesus Reigns as King in Zion

And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethpage, unto the Mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples, saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me.

And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall say,

The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them. All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, Tell ye the Daughter of Zion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek and sitting upon an ass, and a colt, the foal of an ass.[Zechariah 9:9; cf. King Solomon’s Coronation at I Kings 1:32-40.]

And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them, and brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon.

And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way, others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way. And the multitude that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Son of David:

Blessed is he that cometh in the Name of the Lord;
Hosanna in the highest.

And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this?

And the multitude said, This is Jesus the Prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

And Jesus went into the Temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the Temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves.

And said unto them, My House shall be called the House of Prayer; but ye have made it a Den of Thieves. And the blind and the lame came to him in the Temple; and he healed them.

And when the Chief Priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the Temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Son of David: they were sore displeased, and said unto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them,

Yea; have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?

And he left them, and went out of the city unto Bethany, and he lodged there.

– Matthew 21:1-17 [Clearly this was an act of Violence to start the Failed Insurrection.]

Jesus Pronounced King of Israel in the Gospel of John

On the next day much people that were come to the Feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, **Hosanna: Blessed is the King of Israel**

that cometh in the Name of the Lord.

– John 12:12-13

Realized Eschatology: The Kingdom of God is Here and Now

Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil,
blind, and dumb; and he healed him, insomuch that the
blind and dumb both spake and saw.

And all the people were amazed, and said,
Is not this the Son of David?

But when the Pharisees heard it, they said,
This fellow doth not cast out devils,
but by Beelzebub the Prince of Devils.

And Jesus Knew their thoughts, and said unto them,
Every kingdom divided against itself is brought
to desolation; and every city or house divided
against itself shall not stand. And if Satan cast
out Satan, he is divided against himself;
how shall his kingdom stand?

And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom
do your children cast them out?
therefore they shall be your judges.

But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God,
then the Kingdom of God is come unto you.

– Matthew 12:22-28 [For some unfathomable
reason, Luke 11:20 replaces Spirit of God
with the Finger of God. Gerd Ludemann, in
his The Great Deception: What Jesus Really
Said and Did (Amherst: Prometheus, 1998,
p. 82), attributes the saying to an original
Q saying (Q is a helpful fiction for analysis),
comparing it to an exclamation made by the
Egyptian Magicians to describe the feats of
of Moses: Exodus 8:19: “Then the Magicians
said unto Pharaoh, ‘This is the Finger of God.’”]

But God, who is rich in Mercy, for his Great Love
wherewith he Loved us, even when we were Dead
in Sins, hath Quickened us Together with Christ,
(by Grace ye are Saved;) and hath Raised
us Up Together with Christ in Heavenly Places
in Christ Jesus.

– Ephesians 2:4-6 [Thus teaching that the Resurrection,
as well as the Kingdom of God, are Here and Now.]

Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath Made
 us meet to be Partakers of the Inheritance
 of the Holy Ones in Light: who hath Delivered
 us from the Power of Darkness, and hath
 Translated us into the Kingdom of his Dear Son.
 – Colossians 1:11-13

Treatise on the Resurrection

There are some, my son Rheginus, who want to learn many things.
 They have this goal when they are occupied with questions whose
 answer is lacking. If they succeed with these [answers], they usually
 think very highly of themselves. But I do not believe that they have
 stood within the Word of Truth. They seek rather their own Rest,
 which we have Received through our Savior, our Lord Jesus the Christ.
 We Received it when we came to Know the Truth.
 And in it we came to Rest....

The Savior Swallowed Up Death – of this you are not reckoned as being
 Ignorant – for he put aside the Kosmos which is perishing. He Transformed
 [it] into an Imperishable Aeon and Raised It Up, having Swallowed Up the Visible
 by the Invisible. And he Gave us the Way of our Immortality. Then, indeed,
 as the Apostle [Paul] said, “We suffered with him, and we Arose with him,
 and we Ascended to Heaven with him.”

Now, if we are Manifest in this Kosmos wearing him, we are that one’s
 Radiating Rays, and we are Embraced by him until our Sunset, that is to say,
 our Death in this present life – we are Drawn Upward by him as Rays
 are Drawn by the Sun, not being restrained by anything. This is the
 Spiritual Resurrection which swallows the Resurrection of the Soul
 along with the Resurrection of the Flesh.

...Do not doubt in the Resurrection...Why do you not regard
 yourself as already Risen?

...What, then, is the Resurrection? It is the Continuing
 Manifestation of those who have Risen. For if you
 remember reading in the Gospel, “Elijah Appeared
 and Moses with him,” do not think the Resurrection
 is an illusion. It is no illusion, but it is Truth. Indeed
 it is more fitting to say that the Kosmos is an illusion -

rather than the Resurrection which has come into being
 through our Lord the Savior, Jesus, the Christ.
 – Epistle to Reginus]Treatise on the Resurrection]
 43:25 - 44:2; 45:14 - 46:2; 47:1-3; 49:29; 48:1-20

Jesus on Reincarnation, a Form of the Resurrection of the Flesh:

John the Baptist

And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see?
 A reed shaken with the wind?
 But what went ye out for to see?
 A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing are in kings' houses.
 But what went ye out for to see? A Prophet?
 Yea, I say unto you, and more than a Prophet.
 For this is he, of whom it is written, Behold, I send my Angel before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.
 Amen I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a Greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding he that is Least in the Kingdom of Heaven is Greater than he. And from the days of John the Baptist until now the Kingdom of Heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. For all the Prophets and the Law prophesied until John. **And if ye will Receive it, this is Elijah, which was to come.** He that hath ears to Hear, let him Hear....
 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elijah truly shall first come, and restore all things. But I say unto you, That Elijah is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of Man suffer of them. Then the Disciples Understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.
 – Matthew 11:7-15 [Mark is in agreement]; 17:11-13

And there Appeared unto him an Angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the Altar of Incense. And when Zecharias Saw him, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.
 But the Angel said unto him, Fear not, Zecharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife, Elizabeth, shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth. For he shall be great in the Sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink;

and shall be filled with the Holy Spirit, even from his mother's womb.
 And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.
 And he shall go before them in the **spirit and power of Elijah**, to turn
 the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the
 wisdom of the just: to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.
 And Zecharias said unto the Angel, Whereby shall I Know this?
 for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years.
 And the Angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel,
 that stand in the Presence of God; and am sent to
 speak unto thee, and to show thee these glad tidings.
 – Luke 1:11-19 [The fact that Luke names Gabriel as
 the Revealing Angel is meant to link this prophecy
 with the 70 Weeks of Daniel (9:20-27),
 also Revealed by the Angel Gabriel. And how could
 John have the spirit and power of Elijah if he wasn't
 Elijah in a prior incarnation?]

Jesus Christ Himself

And YHWH Appeared unto [Abraham] in the Plains of Mamre: and he sat
 in the tent door in the heat of the day. And he lift up his eyes and looked,
 and, lo, Three Men stood by him, and when he Saw them, he ran to meet them
 from the tent door, and bowed himself toward the ground.
 And he said, My Lord, if now I have found favor in thy sight, pass not away,
 I pray thee, from thy servant: let a little water, I pray you, be fetched, and wash
 your feet, and rest yourselves under the tree: and I will fetch a morsel of bread,
 and comfort ye your hearts; after that ye shall pass on: for therefore are ye come
 to your servant. And they said, So do, as thou hast said.
 And Abraham hastened into the tent unto Sarah, and said, Make ready quickly
 three measures of fine meal, knead it, and make cakes upon the hearth.
 And Abraham ran unto the herd, and fetched a calf tender and good, and gave
 it unto a young man: and he hasted to dress it. And he took butter and milk,
 and the calf which he had dressed, and set it before them; and he stood by them
 under the tree, and they did eat. And they said unto him, Where is Sarah thy wife?
 And he said, Behold, in the tent. And he said, I will certainly return unto thee
 according to the time of life, and, lo, Sarah thy wife shall have a son.
 And Sarah heard it in the tent door, which was behind him.
 Now Abraham and Sarah were old and well stricken in age; and it ceased to be
 with Sarah after the manner of women. Therefore Sarah laughed within herself,
 saying, After I am waxed old shall I have pleasure, my lord being old also?
 And YHWH said unto Abraham, Wherefore did Sarah laugh, saying, Shall I
 of a surety bear a child, which am old? Is any thing too hard for YHWH?

At the time appointed I will return unto thee, according to the time of life,
and Sarah shall have a son. Then Sarah denied, saying, I laughed not;
for she was afraid. And he said, Nay; but thou didst laugh.

And the Men rose up from thence, and looked toward Sodom: and Abraham
went with them to bring them on the way. And YHWH said, Shall I Hide from
Abraham that thing which I do; seeing that Abraham shall surely become a great
and mighty Nation, and all the Nations of the Earth shall be Blessed in him?
For I Know him, that he will command his children and his household after him,
and they shall keep the way of YHWH, to do Justice and Judgment; that YHWH
may bring upon Abraham that which he hath Spoken of him.

And YHWH said, Because the cry of Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because
their sin is very grievous; I will go down now and see whether they have done
altogether according to the cry of it, which is come unto me; and if not, I will Know.

And the Men turned their faces from thence, and went toward Sodom:
but Abraham stood yet before YHWH. And Abraham drew near, and said,
Wilt thou also destroy the righteous with the wicked? Peradventure there be fifty
righteous within the city; wilt thou also destroy and not spare the place for the
fifty righteous that are therein? That be far from thee to do after this manner,
to slay the righteous with the wicked: and that the righteous should be as the wicked,
that be far from thee: Shall not the Judge of all the Earth do Right?

And YHWH said, If I find in Sodom fifty righteous within the city,
then I will spare all the place for their sakes.

And Abraham answered and said, Behold now, I have taken it upon me
to speak unto YHWH, which am but dust and ashes; Peradventure there shall
lack five of the fifty righteous: wilt thou destroy all the city for lack of five?

And he said, If I find there forty and five, I will not destroy it.

And he spake unto him yet again, and he said, Peradventure there be
forty found there. And he said, I will not do it for forty's sake.

And he said, Oh let not the Lord be angry, and I will speak but this once:
Peradventure ten shall be found there. And he said, I will not destroy it for
ten's sake. And YHWH went his way, as soon as he had left communing
with Abraham: and Abraham returned to his place.

And there came two Angels to Sodom at even; and Lot sat in the gate of Sodom:
and Lot Seeing them rose up to meet them; and he bowed himself with
his face toward the ground.

– Genesis 18:1-33; 19:1

Now Moses kept the flock of Jethro his father in law, the Priest of Midian:
and he led the flock to the backside of the desert, and came to the
Mountain of God, even to Horeb. And the Angel of YHWH Appeared
unto him in a flame of fire out of the midst of a bush: and he looked, and,
behold, the bush burned with fire, and the bush was not consumed.

And Moses said, I will now turn aside, and See this Great Sight, why the bush is not burnt. And when YHWH saw that he turned aside to See, God called unto him out of the midst of the bush, and said, Moses, Moses. And he said. Here am I. And he said, Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet; for the Place whereon thou standest is Holy Ground.

Moreover, he said, I am the God of thy father, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. And Moses hid his face; for he was afraid to Look upon God.

And YHWH said....Come now therefore, and I will send thee unto Pharaoh, that thou mayest bring forth my people the children of Israel out of Egypt.

And Moses said unto God, Behold, when I come unto the children of Israel and shall say unto them, The God of your fathers hath sent me unto you; and they shall say to me, What is his Name? what shall I say unto them?

And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, This shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you. And God said moreover unto Moses, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, YHWH God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, hath sent me unto you: this is my Name for ever, and this is my Monument unto all Generations....

Behold, I send an Angel before thee, to keep thee in the way, and to bring thee into the Place which I have Prepared. Beware of him, and obey his Voice, provoke him not; for he will not pardon your transgressions:

for my Name is in him.

– Exodus 3:1-7a, 10-15; 23:20-21

And it came to pass, when Joshua was by Jericho, that he lifted up his eyes and looked, and, behold, there stood a man over against him with his sword drawn in his hand; and Joshua went unto him, and said unto him, Art thou for us, or for our adversaries?

And he said, Nay; but **as Captain of the Host of YHWH am I now come.** And Joshua fell on his face to the earth, and did worship, and said unto him, What saith my Lord to his Servant?

And the Captain of YHWH's Host said unto Joshua, Loose thy shoe from off thy foot, for the Place whereon thou standest is Holy.

And Joshua did so.

– Joshua 5:13-15

Then was Nebuchadnezzar full of fury, and the form of his visage was changed against Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nego; therefore he spake, and commanded that they should heat the furnace one seven times more than it was wont to be heated.

And he commanded the most mighty men that were in his army to bind Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nego, and to cast them in the burning fiery furnace. Then these men were bound in their coats, their hosen, and their hats, and their other garments, and were cast into the midst of the burning fiery furnace.

Therefore, because the king's commandment was urgent, and the furnace exceeding hot, the flame of the fire slew those men that took of Shadrach, Meshech, and Abed-nego. And these three men, Shadrach, Meshech, and Abeg-nego, fell down bound into the midst of the burning fiery furnace.

Then Nebuchadnezzar the king was astonished, and rose up in haste, and spake, and said unto his counsellors, Did not we cast three men bound into the midst of the fire?

They answered and said unto the king, True, O king.

He answered and said, Lo, I see four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire, and they have no hurt;

and the Form of the fourth is like the Son of God

Then Nebuchadnezzar came near to the mouth of the burning fiery furnace, and spake, and said,

Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nego, ye servants of the Most High God, come forth, and come hither.

Then Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nego, came forth of the midst of the fire. And the princes, governors, and captains, and the king's counsellors, being gathered together, saw these men, upon whose bodies the fire had no power, nor was an hair of their head singed, neither were their coats changed, nor the smell of fire had passed on them. Then Nebuchadnezzar spake, and said, Blessed be the God of Shadrach, Meshech, and Abeg-nego, **who hath sent his Angel**, and delivered his servants that trusted in him, and have changed the king's word, and yielded their bodies, that they might not serve nor worship any god, except their own God.

– Daniel 3:13-28

Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have Lifted Up the Son of Man, then shall ye Know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath Taught me, I Speak these things. And he that sent me is with me: the Father hath not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him....And ye shall Know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you Free. They answered him, We be Abraham's Seed, and were never in Bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made Free?...If the Son therefore shall make you free, Ye shall be Free indeed. I Know that ye are Abraham's Seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my Word hath no place in you. They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. But now ye seek to kill me, a man that told you the Truth, which I have Heard of God: this did not Abraham.

Ye do the deeds of your father.

Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God.

Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceedeth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not Understand my Speech? even because ye cannot Hear my Word. Ye are of your father, the Devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a Murderer from the Beginning, and abode not in the Truth, because there is no Truth in him. When he speaketh a Lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a Liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the Truth, ye Believe me not. Which of you convinceth me of Sin? And if I Say the Truth, why do ye not Believe me? He that is of God, Heareth God's Words: ye therefore Hear them not, because ye are not of God. Then answered the Jews, and said unto him,

Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil?

Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honor my Father, and ye do dishonor me.

And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

Amen, Amen, I say unto you, If a man keep my Saying, he shall never See Death.

Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil, Abraham is dead, and the Prophets; and thou Sayest, If a man keep my Saying, he shall never taste of Death. Art thou Greater than our father Abraham, which is Dead? and the Prophets are Dead: whom makest thou thyself? Jesus answered, If I honor myself, my honor is nothing: it is my Father that honoreth me: of whom ye say, that he is your God. Yet ye have not Known him: but I Know him. And if I should Say, I Know him not, I shall be a Liar like unto you: but I Know him, and keep his Saying. Your father Abraham rejoiced to See my day: and he Saw it, and was glad. Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou Seen Abraham?

Jesus said unto them, Amen, Amen, I Say unto you,
Before Abraham was, I AM.
 – John 8:28-29, 32-33, 39-58

David, Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Paul Pre-Existed:

David

But thou art he that took me out of the womb; thou didst
 make me Hope, when I was upon my mother's breasts.
 I was cast upon thee from the womb: thou art my God
 from my mother's belly.
 – Psalm 22:9-10

For thou hast Possessed my reins; thou has covered me
 in my mother's womb.
 – Psalm 139:13

Isaiah

Listen, O Isles, unto me; and hearken, ye people, from far;
 YHWH hath called me from the womb; from the bowels
 of my mother hath he made mention of my name.
 – Isaiah 49:1

Jeremiah

Before I Formed thee in the belly I Knew thee;
 and before thou camest forth out of the womb
 I Sanctified thee, and I Ordained thee a
 Prophet unto the Nations.
 – Jeremiah 1:5

Paul

But when it Pleased God, who separated me from
 my mother's womb, and Called me by his Grace,
 to Reveal his Son In me, that I might Preach him
 among the Gentiles.
 – Galatians 1:15-16 [You can see why Paul
 identified with the Prophet Jeremiah, who
 was also Called to be a Prophet to the Gentiles.]

Jesus Envisions Himself as the Apocalyptic Son of Man of Daniel and Enoch

I beheld till the Thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of Days
did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head
like the pure wool: his Throne was like the Fiery Flame,
and his Wheels as Burning Fire.

A Fiery Stream issued and came forth from before him:
thousand thousands ministered unto him, and ten thousand
times ten thousand stood before him: the Judgment
was Set, and the Books were opened...

I Saw in the Night Visions, and, behold, One like
the Son of Man came with the Clouds of Heaven,
and came to the Ancient of Days, and they brought
him near before him. And there was Given him
Dominion, and Glory, and a Kingdom, that all People
Nations, and Languages, should serve him:
his Dominion is an Everlasting Dominion, which shall not
pass away, and his Kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.
– Daniel 7:9-10, 13-14

Jesus May Be the Reincarnation of Enoch

And there I Saw One, who had a Head of Days,
And his Head was white like wool,
And with him was another being whose countenance
had the Appearance of a man,
And his face was full of graciousness, like one
of the Holy Angels.

And I asked the Angel who went with me and showed
me all the Hidden Things, concerning that Son of Man,
who he was, and whence he was, (and) and why he went
with the Head of Days?

And he answered and said unto me:
This is the Son of Man who hath Righteousness,
and who Revealeth all the Treasures of that
which is Hidden.

Because the Lord of Spirits hath Chosen him,
And whose Lot hath the Pre-eminence before
the Lord of Spirits in Uprightness for ever.
– Book of Enoch (R.H. Charles) xlvi.1-3

And it came to pass after this that his name during his lifetime [Enoch] was raised aloft to that Son of Man and to the Lord of Spirits from amongst those who dwell on the Earth. And he was raised aloft on the Chariots of Spirit and his name vanished among them. [He was no longer Enoch.] And from that Day I was no longer numbered amongst them [He was no longer human; note the change from third person to first person], and he set me between the Two Winds, between the the North and the West, where the Angels took the cords to measure for me the Place for the Elect and Righteous. And there I saw the First Fathers and the Righteous who from the Beginning dwell in that Place. [Enoch becomes the Son of Man in Heaven, who years later then Incarnates as Jesus Christ.]

– Enoch lxx.1-4 [Daniel and Enoch were the most popular books of their day, a major influence on the Sicarii and Zealots. In his commentary on I Enoch 1, George W.E. Nickelsburg, states about the influence of Enoch: “Presiding over the judgment is a heavenly figure known variously as Righteous One, Elect One, Anointed One, and Son of Man. This vice-regent of God, whose description is a composite of features drawn from Daniel 7 and from biblical texts about the Davidic King and the Servant of the Lord, was a prototype for the NT speculation about the Son of Man, although the precise relationship between the Gospel texts and the Parable is uncertain.” (Minneapolis: Fortress Press, 2001, p. 7).]

The Divine Sons and Daughters of God Manifesting In the Material World

Jesus said, “Blessed is he who came into Being before he came into Being.”

...Jesus said, “Blessed are the Solitary and Elect, for you will Find the Kingdom. For you are from it, and to you it will return.”

Jesus said, “If they say to you, ‘Where did you come from?’ Say to them, ‘We came from the Light, the Place where the Light came into Being on its own accord and established itself and became Manifest through their Image.’”

If they say to you, 'Is it you?'
 Say, 'We are its Children, and we are the Elect
 of the Living Father.'
 If they ask you, 'What is the Sign of your Father
 in you?' Say to them, 'It is Movement and Repose.'"
 His disciples said to him, "When will the Repose
 of the Dead come about, and when will the New World come?"
 He said to them, "What you look forward to has already come,
 but you do not recognize it."

...Jesus said, "When you See your Likeness, you rejoice.
 But when you see your Images which came into Being
 before you, and which neither Die nor become Manifest,
 how much you will have to Hear!"
 – Gospel of Thomas 19a, 49-51, 84

The Kingdom of God is Within You and On Earth

And when he was demanded of the Pharisees,
 when the Kingdom of God should come,
 he answered them and said, The Kingdom of God
 cometh not with observation: neither shall they say,
 Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the Kingdom of God
 is Within you.
 – Luke 17:20-21

Jesus said, "If those who lead you say to you, 'See,
 the Kingdom is in the sky,' then the birds of the sky
 will precede you. If they say to you, 'It is in the sea,'
 then the fish will precede you.
 Rather, the Kingdom is Inside of you,
 and it is Outside of you.
 When you come to Know yourselves,
 then you will become Known, and you will Realize
 that it is you who are the Sons of the Living Father.
 But if you will not Know yourselves,
 you dwell in poverty and it is you who are that poverty.
 ...His disciples said to him, "When will the Kingdom come?"
 Jesus said, "It will not come by waiting for it.
 It will not be a matter of saying, 'Here it is,' or,
 'There it is.'

Rather, the Kingdom of the Father is Spread Out
Upon the Earth, and men do not see it.”
– Thomas 3, 113

The Fallen Angels Knew of Jesus’ Pre-Existence

And they went into Capernaum; and straightway on the Sabbath day he entered into the Synagogue, and taught. And they were astonished at his doctrine; for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the Scribes. And there was in their Synagogue a man with an Unclean Spirit; and he cried out, saying, Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? **I Know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.**

And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the Unclean Spirit had torn him, and cried out with a loud voice, he came out of him. And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authority commandeth he even the Unclean Spirits, and they do obey him.

...And Unclean Spirits, when they Saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, **Thou art the Son of God.** And he straightly charged them that they should not make him Known.

...And they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes. And when he was come out the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs a man with an Unclean Spirit, who had his dwelling among the tombs, and no man could bind him, no, not with chains: because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him. And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones. But when he Saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him, and cried with a loud voice, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, **thou Son of the Most High God?** I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not. For he had said unto him, Come out of the man, thou Unclean Spirit. And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

And he besought him much that he would not send them away out of the country. Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine feeding.

And all the Devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.

And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the Unclean Spirits went out, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea: (they were about two thousand;) and were choked in the sea.

– Mark 1:21-27; 3:11-12; 5:1-13 [Matthew 8:29 adds: “Art thou come hither to torment us before the Time?” that is, before the Judgment, referring to II Peter 2:4, Jude 6, quoting the Book of Enoch: see Part IV; moreover, Matthew states that there were two maniacs instead of one, and does not mention Legion; Luke follows Mark.]

The Fall of the Angels

And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the Earth, and daughters were born unto them, that the Sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose...

There were Giants [Nephilim] in the Earth in those days; and after that, when the Sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became Mighty Men which were of Old, Men of Renown.

– Genesis 6:1-2, 4

And it came to pass when the children of men had multiplied that in those days were born unto them beautiful and comely daughters. And the Angels, the Children of Heaven, saw and lusted after them, and said to one another:

“Come, let us choose us wives among the children of men and beget us children.” And Semjaza, who was their Leader, said unto them:

“I fear ye will not indeed agree to do this Deed, and I alone shall have to pay the penalty of a Great Sin.”

And they all answered him and said: “Let us all swear an oath, and all bind ourselves by mutual imprecations not to abandon this plan but to do this thing.”

Then sware they all together and bound themselves by mutual imprecations upon it. And they were in all two hundred; who descended in the days of Jared on the summit of Mount Hermon, and they called it Mount Hermon,

because they had sworn and bound themselves by mutual imprecations upon it.

And these are the Names of their Leaders: Semjaza, their Leader, Arakiba, Rameel, Kokabiel, Tamiel, Ramiel, Danel, Ezeqeel, Baraqial, Asael, Armaros, Bateral, Ananel, Zaqiel, Samsapiel, Satarel, Turel, Jomjael, Sariel. These are their Chiefs of Tens.

And all the others together with them took unto themselves wives, and each chose for himself one, and they began to go unto them and to defile themselves with them, and they taught them charms, and enchantments, and the cutting of roots, and made them acquainted with plants. And they became pregnant, and they bare Great Giants, whose height was three thousand ells: who consumed all the acquisitions of men. And when men could no longer sustain them, the Giants turned against them and devoured mankind. And they began to Sin against birds, and beasts, and reptiles, and fish, and to devour one another's flesh, and drink the blood. Then the Earth laid accusations against the Lawless Ones.

And Azazel taught men to make swords, and knives, and shields, and breastplates, and made known to them the metals (of the Earth) and the art of working them, and bracelets, and ornaments, and the use of antimony, and the beautifying of the eyelids, and all kinds of costly stones, and all coloring tinctures. And there arose much godlessness, and they committed fornication, and they were led astray, and became corrupt in all their ways. Semjaza taught enchantments, and root cuttings, Armaros the resolving of enchantments, Baraqijal, (taught) astrology, Kokabel the Constellations, Ezeqeel the knowledge of the clouds, Araqiel the Signs of the Earth, Shamsiel the course of the Moon. And as men perished, they cried, and their cry went up to Heaven.

– Enoch vi.1 - viii.4 [These Fallen Angels, although bound with everlasting chains in Tartarus, were believed to be the demons that possessed humans and kept them bound in great fear and superstition, which means “fear of the gods.” At the foot of Mt. Hermon is a cave-grotto and a natural spring that is one of the sources of the Jordan River. It was originally known as Baal-Gad (Joshua 13:5; 11:17: 12:7) to the Canaanites, but under Greek Rule was known as Baniyas, after the Nature God Pan, who was the god of fertility and the Underworld; but at the time of Jesus it was known as Caesarea Philippi where Jesus gave his warning that the Gates of Hell (Pan's Grotto) would not stand against the Church (Matthew 16:18), for this was also the place where God

Judged the Fallen Angels and sent them to Tartarus
since the cave was believed to be a Portal
to the Underworld.]

The Sons of Cain

And Cain said unto YHWH, My Punishment is greater than
I can bear. Behold, thou hast driven me out this day from the
Face of the Earth; and from thy Face shall I be Hid; and I shall
be a fugitive and a vagabond in the Earth; and it shall come to
pass, that every one that findeth me shall slay me.

And YHWH said unto him, Therefore whosoever slayeth Cain,
Vengeance shall be taken on him Sevenfold.

And YHWH set a Mark upon Cain, lest any finding him should
kill him. And Cain went out from the Presence of YHWH,
and dwelt in the Land of Nod, on the East of Eden.

And Cain knew his wife; and she conceived, and bare Enoch:
and he builded a city, and called the name of the city, after the
name of his son, Enoch.

And unto Enoch was born Irad; and Irad begat Mehujael;
and Mehujael begat Methusael; and Methusael begat Lamech.
And Lamech took unto him two wives; the name of the one was
Adah, and the name of the other, Zilla.

And Adah bare Jabal: he was the father as such as dwell in tents,
and of such as have cattle. And his brother's name was Jubal:
he was the father of all such as handle the harp and organ.

And Zilla, she also bare Tubal-Cain, an instructor of every
artificer in bronze and iron; and the sister of Tubal-Cain was Naamah.

And Lamech said unto his wives, Adah and Zilla, Hear
my voice; ye wives of Lamech, hearken unto my speech:
for I have slain a man to my wounding, and a young man
to my hurt. If Cain shall be Avenged Sevenfold, truly
Lamech Seventy and Sevenfold.

And Adam knew his wife again; and she bare a son,
and called his name Seth; For God, said she, hath
Appointed me another Seed instead of Abel, whom
Cain slew. And to Seth, to him also there was born
a son; and he called his name Enos; **then began men
Call upon the Name of YHWH.**

– Genesis 4:13-26 [I have chosen this section because
it ties in with the Book of Enoch's tale of how the
Fallen Angels were behind the advances of the

Cainites, later known as the Kenites, of whom Jethro, YHWH Priest of Midian, was a member, giving truth to the fact that the children of Cain survived the Flood, and Midian was known for its metal-works. We are also told that this was the time men began Call upon YHWH, which is why the Name and Priesthood lasted after the Flood in the Kenites.]

The Fallen Angels and the Intergalactic Conspiracy

Who shall separate us from the Love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, of peril, or sword? As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. Nay, in all these things we are more than Conquerors through him that Loved us.

For I am persuaded that neither Death, nor Life, nor Angels, nor Archons, nor Powers, nor Things Present, nor Things to Come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other Creature, shall be able to separate us from the Love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

– Romans 8:35-39 [Daniel 10:12-20 describes the Intergalactic Conflict as one between Angelic Powers, between Michael, the Guardian Angel of Israel, and the Princes (Angels) of Persia and Greece. Satan, the Lying Serpent, in his Revelation to John Zebedee (Rev. 12:7-10), describes the battle primarily taking place on Earth.

Welcome to the Secret War.]

But if our Gospel be Hid, it is Hid to them that are lost: in whom the God of this Kosmos hath Blinded the Minds of them that believe not, lest the Light of the Glorious Gospel of Christ, who is the Image of God, should Shine unto them.

For though we Walk in the Flesh, we do not War after the Flesh: (for the Weapons of our Warfare are not carnal, but Mighty through God to the pulling down of Strong Holds;) casting down imaginations, and every High Thing that exalteth itself against the Knowledge of God, and bringing into Captivity every thought to the Obedience of Christ; and having in a readiness to revenge all Disobedience, when your Obedience is fulfilled.

– II Corinthians 4:3-4; 10:3-6

Wherein in time past we walked according the Course of this Kosmos, according to the Archon of the Power of the Air, the spirit that now Worketh in the Children of Disobedience: among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh, and of the mind; **and were by Nature the Children of Wrath, even as others.**

...Whereof I [Paul] am Made a Minister, according to the Gift of Grace of God Given unto me by the Effectual Working of his Power. Unto me, who am less than the least of All Holy Ones, is this Grace Given, that I should Preach among the Gentiles the Unsearchable Riches of Christ; and to make All Men See what is the Fellowship of the Mystery, which from the Beginning of the Kosmos hath been Hid in God, who Created All Things by Jesus Christ. to the intent that now unto the Archons and Powers in Heavenly Places might be Known by the Church the Manifold Wisdom of God.

...For we Wrestle not with flesh and blood, but against Archons, against Powers, against the Kosmocrats of Darkness of this Aeon, against Spiritual Wickedness in High Places.

– Ephesians 2:2-3; 3:7-10; 6:12 [I know, sometimes it sounds almost similar to Marvel Comic’s Dr. Strange, but this is the True Invisible War.]

For by him were All Things Created, that are in Heaven, and that are in Earth, Visible and Invisible, whether they be Thrones, or Dominions, or Archons, or Powers: All Things were Created by him, and for him.

...And having Spoiled Archons and Powers, he made a Spectacle of them Openly, Triumphant over them in it.

– Colossians 1:16; 2:15 [This describes the Victory Procession of Jesus leading the Spoils of Hell to Glory.]

The Presumed Father of Jesus

The Book of the Generation of Jesus Christ,
the Son of David, the Son of Abraham.

Abraham begat Jacob and Judah and his brothers...

**And Jesse begat David the King, and David the King
begat Solomon of her that had been the wife of Uriah...**

And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary,
of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

– Matthew 1:1-2, 8, 16 [This Royal Line was
cursed by Jeremiah (36:30), who also Blessed the
Seed of David in another prophecy (33:17). This
Joseph, descended from Solomon, adopted Jesus,
making him the firstborn in the Royal Line
and the Messiah; James the Just, the real
son of this Joseph would later claim
the status of the firstborn when he
established his Caliphate over the Poor
of Jerusalem.]

The Real Father of Jesus

And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age,
being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was
the son of Heli....which was the son of Matthatha,
which was the son of Nathan, which was the son of David.

–Luke 3:1, 31b [Christians who are unable to realize
that two different Josephs are involved with the birth
of Jesus transfer this genealogy to Mary, who they
claim was of the Seed of David, and not a Daughter
of Aaron, as Luke suggests. This Joseph, descended
from Nathan, the son of David and Bathsheba,
and the blood brother of Solomon,
impregnated Mary under the direction of
the Holy Spirit in order to overcome
the Curse of Jeremiah. Personally, I believe
this was Joseph of Arimathea: Mt. 27:57-60;
Mk. 15:43-46; Lk. 23:50-53; John 19:38-42.]

Both Matthew and John Record the Second Coming

And they [the women at the empty tomb] departed quickly
from the sepulchre with fear and great joy; and did run to
bring his Disciples word. And as they went to tell his Disciples,
behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came and held
him by the feet, and worshipped him. Then Jesus said unto them,
Be not afraid; go tell my Brothers that they go into Galilee,
and there shall they See me.

...Then the Eleven Disciples went away into Galilee,
 into a mountain where Jesus had Appointed them.
 And when they Saw him they worshipped him; but
 some doubted. And Jesus came and Spake unto them,
 saying, **All Power is given unto me in Heaven and on Earth.**
Go ye therefore, and Teach All Nations...teaching them to
observe All Things, whatsoever I have commanded you:
and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the End of the Aeon.

– Matthew 28:8-10, 16-20 [Note that Jesus does not
 Ascend back to Heaven, because he has already
 Received the Power vis-a-vis Daniel 7:13-14 (see below),
 and thus had already Come Again. Jesus is thus here to
 stay in his Invisible Spirit and the idea a future
 Second Coming is a Delusion. Those still waiting
 for it to Come, will wait for Eternity. Mark likely
 ended the same way in the original manuscript,
 since Matthew seems to follow him more or less
 at the end of his Gospel. Many scholars believe
 that the account of the Transformation was actually
 the same Appearance as the one at the end of
 Matthew. (See below.)]

Jesus Descends Into and Spoils Sheol/Hades, the Land of the Dead

Wherefore he saith, When he Ascended up on High,
 he led Captivity [the Dead in Hades] Captive, and gave Gifts
 unto men. (Now that he Ascended, what is it but
 that he also Descended first into the Lower Parts
 of the Earth? He that Descended is the same also
 that Ascended up far above All Heavens,
 the he might fill All Things.)

– Ephesians 4:8-10

For if God spared not the Angels that Sinned, but cast them down
 to Hades, and delivered them into Chains of Darkness,
 to be Reserved unto Judgment.

– II Peter 2:4

And the Angels which kept not their First Estate, but left their own
 habitation, he hath Reserved in Chains under Darkness unto the
 Judgment of the Great Day,

– Jude 6

For Christ also hath Once Suffered for Sins, the Just for the Unjust,
 that he might bring us to God, being put to Death in the Flesh,
 but Quickened in the Spirit: by which also he went and preached
 unto the Spirits in Prison [Hades]; which sometimes were Disobedient
 [The Angels who Sinned with women],
 when once the Longsuffering of God waited in the Days of Noah,
 while the Ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls
 were saved by water.
 – I Peter 3:18-20

Jesus Rises from the Dead

And when she [Mary Magdalene] had thus said,
 she turned herself back, and Saw Jesus standing,
 and Knew not that it was Jesus.
 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou?
 whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to be
 the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have borne
 him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him,
 and I will take him away.
 Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turned herself, and
 saith unto him, Rabboni; which is to say, Master.
 Jesus saith unto her, **Touch me not; for I am not yet
 Ascended to my Father, and your Father,
 and to my God, and your God.**
 – John 20:14-17

Jesus Then Ascends Into Heaven

I Saw in the Night Visions, and, behold, one like
 the Son of Man, came with the Clouds of Heaven,
 and came to the Ancient of Days, and they brought
 him near before him. And there was given him
 Dominion, and Glory, and a Kingdom,
 that all people, Nations, and languages should
 serve him: his Dominion is an everlasting Dominion,
 which shall not pass away, and his Kingdom
 that which shall not be destroyed.
 – Daniel 7:13-14 [This scene takes place in
 Heaven, although some may observe it
 in a Visionary Experience, as imagined
 in the quoted texts below.]

**Again the High Priest asked him, and said unto him,
 Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?
 And Jesus said, I AM: and ye shall See
 the Son of Man Sitting on the Right Hand
 of Power, and Coming on the Clouds of Heaven.
 – Mark 14:61b-62**

When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart,
 and they gnashed on him with their teeth. But he [Stephen],
 being Filled with the Holy Spirit, looked up stedfastly into Heaven,
 and Saw the Glory of God, and Jesus Standing on the
 Right Hand of God, and said, Behold, I See the Heavens
 Opened, and the Son of Man Standing at the Right Hand of God.
 – Acts 7:54-56

Jesus Comes Again in the Upper Room

Mary Magdalene came and told the Disciples
 that she had Seen the Lord, and that he had
 Spoken these things unto her.

Then the same day at evening, being the first day
 of the week, when the doors were shut where the
 Disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews,
 Came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith
 unto them, Peace be with you.

And when he had so said, he showed unto them
 his hands and his side. Then were the Disciples
 glad, when they Saw the Lord.

Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you:
 as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.
 And when he had said this, he Breathed on them,
 and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Spirit.

...And after eight days again his Disciples were within,
 and Thomas with them; then Came Jesus, the doors
 being shut, and stood in the midst, and said,
 Peace be unto you. Then saith he to Thomas,
**Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands;
 and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side.
 and be not faithless, but Believing.**

– John 20:26-27 [Note before Jesus
 Ascended Mary was not allowed to touch him;

for he had to remain clean for his Victory Procession in Heaven (Daniel 7:13-14); but after his Second Coming in the Upper Room, he allows Thomas to touch him, meaning human touch can no longer make him unclean. Also it shows that the Resurrection Body is not a phantom, but can materialize, so it is able to be touched.]

Jesus Appears Before Death in His Resurrection Body

And he said unto them, Amen, I say unto you, That there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of Death, till they have Seen the Kingdom of God come with Power. And after six days Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves: and he was Transfigured before them.

And his raiment became shiny, exceeding white as snow; so as no fuller on Earth can white them. And there Appeared unto them Elijah with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus. And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is Good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah. For he wist not what to say, for they were sore afraid.

And there was a Cloud that overshadowed them: and a Voice came out of the Cloud, saying, This is my Beloved Son: Hear him. And suddenly, when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

And as they came down from the mountain, he Charged them that they should tell no man what things they had Seen, till the Son of Man were Risen from the Dead.

– Mark 9:1-9 [Matthew 17:1-9 adds “and his face did shine as the Sun, and his raiment was white as Light.” Luke 9:27-36 has eight days after instead of six, and describes the event as “And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and glistening.” He also adds that Moses and Elijah “appeared in Glory, and spake of his Exodus which he should accomplish at Jerusalem. But Peter and they that were with him were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they Saw his Glory, and the two men that stood with him.” He also adds that the Disciples entered into the Cloud, and “When the Voice was past,

Jesus was found alone. And they kept it close, and told no man in those days any of those things which they had Seen.”

Because Jesus swore them to secrecy, and because of the variations, the story as told is doubted as being Historical, but is told so that the authority of Peter, James, and John, the first Three Pillars, was enhanced in their Soviet.]

Jesus Remains On Earth In His Spirit

Then the Eleven Disciples went away into Galilee, into a Mountain where Jesus had appointed them. And when they Saw him, they worshipped him: but some Doubted And Jesus came and Spoke unto them, saying, All Power is Given unto me in Heaven and in Earth. Go ye therefore and Teach All Nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit; Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you:

and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the End of the Aeon. Amen.

– Matthew 28:16-20 [That Christ has also Ascended is made clear by the fact that the Giving of All Power in Heaven and Earth has already occurred, pursuant to Daniel 7:13-14.

The original Markan manuscript ends when the women return from the Tomb, too afraid to speak to anyone. Then two fake ending are attached beginning at Mark 16:9. It is my belief that Mark originally ended where Matthew ends, since the Apostles are told to meet Jesus in Galilee, but never do (Mark 16:7).

As expected, Luke omits all mention of a trip to Galilee, keeping the Apostles in Jerusalem until Pentecost (Luke 24:49).

That is called a classic contradiction, for if one of them is true, the other must be false, and though they both could be false, nothing can make them both true.]

Jesus Threatens to Destroy the Temple

Then answered the Jews and said unto him,
What Sign showest thou unto us, seeing that thou
doest these things?

Jesus answered and said unto them,
Destroy this Temple, and in three days
I will Raise it Up.

Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this
Temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days?
in three days? But he spake of the Temple of his body.

– John 2:18-21

Now the Chief Priests, and Elders, and all the Council,
sought false witnesses against Jesus, to put him to death,
but found none: yea, though many false witnesses came,
yet found they none. At last came two false witnesses,
and said, This fellow said, I am able to Destroy the Temple
of God, and to build it in three days.

– Matthew 26:59-61 [These were hardly false witnesses,
because Jesus did say this in the verses quoted above
from John. Mark 14:58 adds: “I will Destroy this Temple
that is made with hands, and within three days I will
build another Made without hands.” Luke omits this
from his Gospel, but mentions it in Acts 6:12-14 as an
accusation against Stephen: “And they stirred up the people,
and the elders, and the scribes, and came upon him, and
caught him, and brought him to the Council, and set up
false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speak
blasphemous words against this Holy Place, and the Law:
for we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth
shall Destroy this Place, and shall change the customs
which Moses delivered us.” Again, these witnesses
were not false, for Jesus had indeed said these things.

The Gospel of Thomas in Saying 61 may also be
evidence of this truth: “Jesus said, ‘I shall
Throw Down this Building, and no one will
be able to build it.’” Whatever, the Threat
came true 40 years later with the help of
the Roman Army.]

The Law of Moses Given By Hostile Angels

This is he [Moses], that was in the Church in the Wilderness
with the Angel which Spake to him in the Mount Sinai,
and with our fathers: who received the Lively Oracles
to give unto us....Who have received the Law by the
Disposition of Angels, and not kept it.

– Acts 7:38, 53

Wherefore then serveth the Law? It was added because
of Transgressions, till the Seed should come to whom the
Promise was Made; and it was Ordained by Angels
in the hand of a mediator.

– Galatians 3:19

Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed
to the things which we have Heard lest at any time
we should let them slip. For if the word Spoken
by Angels was stedfast, and every Transgression
and Disobedience received a just recompence of reward:
how shall we escape, if we neglect so great Salvation;
which at the first began to be Spoken by the Lord,
and was confirmed unto us by them that Heard him?

The Law of Moses and It's Priesthood are Disannulled
by the Word of the Oath [Psalm 110:4]

If therefore Perfection were by the Levitical Priesthood,
(for under it the people received the Law,) what further
need was there that another Priest should Rise after the
Order of Melchizedek, and not be called after the Order
of Aaron? For the priesthood being changed, **there is made
a necessity a change also of the Law**

For he of whom these things are spoken pertaineth to another
tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar.

For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Judah; of which
tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood.

And it is yet far more evident: for that after the similitude
of Melchizedek there Ariseth another Priest, who is Made
not after the Law of a Carnal Commandment [the Law of
Moses], but after the power of an endless life.

For he testifieth, Thou art a Priest For Ever after the
Order of Melchizedek.

For this is, Amen, a Disannulling of the Commandment
going before for the weakness and unprofitableness thereof.
For the Law made nothing Perfect, but the bringing in of a
Better Hope did; by the which we draw nigh unto God.
And inasmuch as not without an Oath; he was Made Priest:
(for those priests were made without an Oath; **but this with
an Oath by him that said unto him, The Lord Sware and will
not Repent, Thou art a Priest For Ever after the Order of
Melchizedek:**) by so much was Jesus Made
a Surety of a Better Testament.

And they truly were many priests, because they were not
suffered to continue by reason of death: but this man,
because he Continueth Ever, hath an Unchangeable Priesthood.
Wherefore he is able also to Save them to the uttermost that
come unto God by him, seeing he Ever Liveth to make
intercession for them. For such an High Priest became us,
who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners,
and Made Higher than the Heavens; who needeth not
daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifices, first
for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he
did once, when he offered up himself.

For the Law maketh men high priests which have
infirmity; **but the Word of the Oath, which was since
the Law, Maketh the Son, who is
Consecrated for Evermore.**
– Hebrews 2:1-33; 7:11-28

The Great Lies of the New Testament

The Unforgivable Sin: Blasphemy of the Holy Spirit

Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of Sin and Blasphemy shall
be Forgiven unto men; but the Blasphemy against the Holy Spirit
shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word
against the Son of Man, it shall be Forgiven him; but whosoever
speaketh against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be Forgiven him,
neither in this Kosmos, neither in the Kosmos to Come.
– Matthew 12:31-32

Amen, I say unto you, All Sins shall be Forgiven unto the sons of men, and Blasphemies wherewith soever they shall Blaspheme: but he that shall Blaspheme against the Holy Spirit hath never Forgiveness, but is in danger of Eternal Damnation.

- Mark 3:28-29 [The clear Teaching of Jesus is stated in the Universal Forgiveness of Sins. This was too much for the Moses Cult who added the Condemnations in their Reign of Terror. There is not one pastor, priest, or scholar that can tell you for sure what constitutes this so-called Unforgiveable Sin, leaving it open to the worst possible interpretations from the Judgers of the Law of Moses.]
And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of Man, it shall be Forgiven him: but unto him that Blasphemest against the Holy Spirit it shall not be Forgiven.
- Luke 12:10 [Note that Luke leaves out the specific threat of Eternal Damnation that is in Matthew and Mark.]

The Sin Unto Death

If any man see his brother Sin a Sin which is not unto Death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that Sin not unto Death. There is a Sin unto Death: I do not say that he shall pray for it. All Unrighteousness is Sin: and there is a Sin not unto Death.

- I John 5:16-17 [Ditto. Again, there are many theories on this, but they just add more ambiguity, like most Great Lies.]

You Can Lose Your Salvation

For it is impossible for those who were once Enlightened, and have Tasted of the Heavenly Gift, and were made Partakers of the Holy Spirit, and have Tasted the Good Word of God, and the Powers of the Kosmos to Come. If they shall Fall Away, to renew them again unto Repentance; seeing that they Crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to open shame.

...For if we Sin Wilfully after that we have Received the Knowledge of the Truth, there remaineth no more Sacrifice for Sins. But a certain Fearful Looking for of Judgment and Fiery Indignation, which shall Devour the Adversaries. He that despised Moses' Law Died without Mercy unto two or three witnesses: of how much sorer Punishment, suppose ye, shall be thought worthy, who hath trodden

under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the Blood of the Covenant, whereby he was Sanctified, an Unholy Thing, and hath done Despite unto the Spirit of Grace.

– Hebrews 6:4-6; 10:26-29 [It was these verses that kept the Letter to the Hebrews out of Marcion's New Testament, for obvious reasons since they contradict Universal Salvation.]

The Works of the Flesh Prohibit You from Inheriting the Kingdom of God

Now the Works of the Flesh are manifest, which are these; adulteries, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also you in time past, that they which do such things shall not Inherit the Kingdom of God.

– Galatians 5:19-21 [Realistically, the Works of the Flesh constitute Human Nature and condemn everyone, thus giving Cult Leaders ultimate Power over the Flock.]

Know ye not that the Unrighteous shall not Inherit the Kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall Inherit the Kingdom of God.

– I Corinthians 6:9-10

But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh Holy Ones: neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks. For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any Inheritance in the Kingdom of Christ and of God.

– Ephesians 5:3-5 [Can you believe that jesting is condemned? These are called Sin Lists, the Cult Leaders' domain of Power.]

Mortify therefore your members which are upon the Earth: fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry: for which things' sake the Wrath of God cometh on the Children of Disobedience: in the which ye also walked some time, when ye lived in them.

But now ye also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, Blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

Lie not to one another, seeing that ye have put off the Old Man with his deeds: and put on the New Man which is renewed in Knowledge after the Image of him that Created him: where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is All, and In All.
 – Colossians 3:5-11 [I had to look up the definition of “concupiscence”: it means sexual desire or lust, thus condemning everyone who has natural sexual urges. It’s these Sin Lists that keep most reasonable people away from the Freedom of the Gospel. Christ Died Once for All, and All means All.]

The Law and the Prophets Still Have Power Over the Believer

Think not that I am come to destroy the Law, or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill. For Amen I say unto you, Till Heaven and Earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, until All be Fulfilled.

Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the Least in the Kingdom of Heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called Great in the Kingdom of Heaven.

For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case Enter into the Kingdom of Heaven.

– Matthew 5:17-20 [This passage is an obvious commentary on the feud between Paul, who even calls himself “the Least of the Apostles” (I Corinthians 15:9), and James the Just, who is likely the author of this passage. Many scholars note the similarity of style between the Sermon on the Mount and the Letter of James, but see it as Jesus’ influence on James, not the other way around, which is correct.]

Contra

But now the Righteousness of God Without the Law is Manifested, being Witnessed by the Law and the Prophets: even the Righteousness of God which is by the Faith of Jesus Christ, unto All and upon All them that Believe, for there is no Difference: for All have Sinned and Come Short of the Glory of God.

– Romans 3:21-23 [We see here the difference between the Righteousness of the Works of the Law, which James taught, and the Righteousness

of God Without the Law, which is by the Faith of Jesus Christ,
not our own.]

Women Are Inferior

For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, forasmuch
as he is the Image and Glory of God: but the woman is the
glory of man. For the man is not of the woman; but the
the woman of the man. Neither was the man Created
for the woman; but the woman for the man.

For this cause ought the women to have Power on
her head because of the Angels.

– I Corinthians 11:6-10 [The Angels can lust after
the daughters of men (Gen. 6:2). This whole idea
that half of the Image of God – the male – constitutes
the whole Image of God contradicts Genesis 1:26-27,
as well as contradicts the Divine Daughter status of
women. I can't believe Paul wrote this passage.]

Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it
is not permitted unto them to speak; but they are
commanded to be under obedience, as also saith the Law.
And if they will learn any thing, let them ask their husbands
at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in church.

– I Corinthians 14:34-35 [This is Moses legalism over
the Liberty of the Holy Spirit. Such teaching might
be beneficial to Cult Control, but is Anathema
to the Divine Daughters of God.]

Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection.

But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp
authority over the man, but to be in silence.

For Adam was first Formed, then Eve.

And Adam was not Deceived, but the woman
being Deceived was in the Transgression.

– I Timothy 2:11-14 [The account of the Creation
of Adam and Eve contradicts the account of
Creation in the first chapter of Genesis,
where Mankind is Made Male and Female
in the Image of God from the Beginning.

This is why I see no Blasphemy in imagining
 God as Husband, YHWH, and his Wife, Asherah.
 Otherwise imagining Elohim as both male
 and female makes him/her a hermaphrodite,
 and I don't believe God wants us to
 imagine him in that manner. That is more in
 the manner of Eliphaz Levi and Aleister Crowley.
 And it is a bold-faced Lie to blame the
 Transgression solely on the woman.]

Paul's True View of the Divine Sisterhood

And from thence to Philippi, which is the Chief City of
 that part of Macedonia, and a [Roman] Colony: and we
 were in that city abiding certain days. And on the Sabbath
 we went out of the city by a river side, where prayer was wont
 to be made: and we sat down, and spake unto the women which
 resorted thither. And a certain woman named Lydia, a Seller of
 Purple, of the city of Thyatira, which worshipped God [a Gentile],
 heard us: whose heart the Lord Opened, that she attended unto the things
 which were spoken of Paul. And when she was baptized, and
 her household, she besought us, saying, If ye have judged me to
 be faithful to the Lord, come into my house, and abide
 there. And she constrained us.

– Acts 16:12-15

Therefore my Brothers deeply beloved and longed for,
 my Joy and Crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearly
 beloved. I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that
 they be of the same mind in the Lord.

And I intreat thee, **True Yokefellow**, help those women
 which labored with me in the Gospel, with Clement also,
 and with other my fellowlaborers, whose names are
 in the Book of Life. Rejoice in the Lord alway:
 and again I say, Rejoice.

– Philippians 4:1-4 [It makes sense to me to view
 Paul's **True Yokefellow** as Lydia (Acts 16:14).
 Note also that Paul works equally with women
 according to his Gospel, which elsewhere he
 calls "the Beginning of the Gospel" (Phil. 4:15),
 for the role that Philippi played in his Ministry.

They supported him the whole time he was in Greece, and also when he was a Roman prisoner in Caesarea, from where I believe he wrote the Letter to Philippi, for he was living in the Praetorium in Caesarea, whereas he was living in a private house while in Roman custody in Rome (Acts 28:30).

This leads to the suggestion that Epaphroditus, “The Man From Macedonia,” was the author of Luke/Acts. (Cf. Philippians 4:25-39 with Acts 16:9-12).]

After these things Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth: and found a certain Jew named Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife, Priscilla: (because that Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome:) and came unto them. And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought: for by their occupation they were tentmakers.

– Acts 18:1-3 [To show how important Priscilla was to Paul, the famous German scholar, Adolf von Harnack put forth the hypothesis that the Letter to the Hebrews was written by Priscilla since it’s author is anonymous. The only objection I have to this is those parts that reject repentance after the first time and that you can lose your salvation. It was for these reasons the great heretic Marcion rejected Hebrews from his New Testament in the Second Century, which in turn encouraged the Roman Cult to come up with their own version of the New Testament, which we know today, absent the Book of Revelation, which took another two centuries to be accepted as Scripture. Von Harnack wrote the seminal study on Marcion and should have known better.

For my money, I bet on Silas, for he was a Chief member of the Jerusalem Moses Cult of Peter and James, and such teaching that was rejected by Marcion was more than acceptable to the Jerusalem Cult.]

I commend unto you Phoebe our Sister, which is a
 Servant of the church which is at Cenchrea: that ye
 receive her in the Lord, as becometh Holy Ones, and
 that ye assist her in whatsoever business she hath
 need of you: for she hath been a succourer of many, and
 of myself also.

Greet Priscilla and Aquila my Helpers in Christ Jesus:
 who have for my life laid down their own necks: unto
 whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches
 of the Gentiles. Likewise greet the church that is in
 their house.

Salute my well-beloved Epaenetus, who is the First-Fruits
 of Achaia unto Christ.

Greet Mary, who bestowed much labor on us.

Salute Andronicus and Junia, my kinsmen, and my
 fellow prisoners, who are of note among the Apostles,
 who also were in Christ before me.

– Romans 16:1-7 [The list goes on and on, but I
 think you get the picture. I can't believe one of these
 women would have been silenced in any church. I also
 believe the Mary he refers to was Mary Magdalene, for
 he mentions her as if no further information is needed
 in order to identify her. She and Levi stood up against
 Andrew and Peter in the Gospel of Mary.]

God Can Have Nothing to Do with Evil

Let no man say when he is Tempted, I am Tempted of God:
 for God cannot be Tempted with Evil, neither Tempteth he
 any man: but every man is Tempted, when he is drawn away
 of his own Lust, and Enticed. Then when Lust hath Conceived,
 it bringeth forth Sin: and Sin, when it is Finished, bringeth forth Death.
 Do not Err, my beloved Brothers. Every Good Gift and every Perfect
 Gift is from Above, and cometh down from the Father of Lights,
 with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of Turning.

– James 1:13-17 [James shows the influence of Plato in his
 reasoning, since a God who can change his mind, and Tempt,
 and Do Evil, is impossible in his mind. But all you have to do
 is a word study of “repent,” and you will discover that God
 changes his mind all the time, which is a Good Reason to
 Fear him. After all, God boasts to Cyrus, his Christ,
 about Creating both Good and Evil (Isaiah 45:7).

So, contrary to Einstein, God does roll the dice with his Creation, since he has introduced a Chance factor into his Kosmos of Good and Evil. Adding Chance also allows for Hope and Free Will.]

Contra

Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be Tempted of the Devil.
– Matthew 4:1

And immediately the Spirit driveth him into the wilderness. And he was there in the wilderness forty days, Tempted of Satan, and was with the wild beasts: and the the Angels ministered unto him.
– Mark 1:12-13

And Jesus being full of the Holy Spirit returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit unto the wilderness, being Tempted of the Devil.
– Luke 4:1-2a [The Holy Spirit is the Presence of God in the Material World, so it is quite clear that God is leading his Son into Temptation.]

Our Father which art in Heaven, Hallowed be thy Name.
Thy Kingdom Come, thy Will be Done in Earth,
as it is in Heaven
Give us this day our daily bread,
and Forgive us our Debts, as we Forgive our Debtors.
**And lead us not into Temptation,
but Deliver us from Evil.**
– Matthew 6:9b-13a [Jesus knew from his own experience that God led people into Temptation. No greater contradiction can be found between Jesus and his half-brother James the Just.]

And YHWH Saw that the Wickedness of man was great in the Earth, and that every Imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only Evil continually, **and it Repented YHWH that he had Made man on the Earth**, and it grieved him at his heart.
– Genesis 6:5-6

**And YHWH Repented of the Evil which he Thought
to Do unto his people.**

– Exodus 32:14

Therefore it shall come to pass, that as **All Good Things**
are come upon you, which YHWH your God Promised you:
so shall YHWH bring upon you **All Evil Things**, until he have
destroyed you from off this Good Land which YHWH your God
hath Given you.

– Joshua 23:15

And when the Angel stretched out his hand upon Jerusalem
to destroy it. **YHWH Repented him of the Evil**, and said to
the Angel that destroyed the people, It is enough: stay now
thy hand. And the Angel of YHWH was by the threshing-
place of Araunah the Jebusite.

– II Samuel 24:16

Then God Sent an Evil Spirit between Abimelech and the
men of Shechem; and the men of Shechem dealt
treacherously with Abimelech.

– Judges 9:23

I Form the Light, and Create Darkness;

I Make Good, and Create Evil.

I YHWH Do All These Things.

– Isaiah 45:7 [1QIsa: The Great Isaiah Scroll.]

Out of the Mouth of the Most High [Elyon],
proceedeth not Evil and Good?

– Lamentations 3:38

Shall a trumpet be blown in the city, and the people not be
afraid? **shall there be Evil in a city, and YHWH God
hath not Done It?**

– Amos 3:6

And God saw their works, that they turned from their Evil Way;
**and God Repented of the Evil, that he had said that he
would Do unto them, and he Did It not.**

– Jonah 3:10 [Here is clear evidence that God
changed his mind, which should disturb all those

who hold to the Platonic false doctrine that God can have nothing to do with Evil and never changes his mind.]

The Word of YHWH which came unto Zephaniah the son of Cushi, the son of Gedaliah, the son of Amariah, the son of Hezekiah, in the days of Josiah that son of Amon, King of Judah....

And it shall come to pass at that time, that I will search Jerusalem with candles, and punish the men that are settled on their lees: that say in their hearts, **YHWH will not Do Good, neither will he Do Evil.**

– Zephaniah 1:1, 12 [We see the fact that YHWH can Do or Not Do Evil still in existence in Judah as late as the reign of Josiah, even after the fall of Jerusalem in Jeremiah (Lamentations 3:38; see above.)]

The Invasion of the Locust Army

And the Fifth Angel sounded, and I saw a Star fall from Heaven unto the Earth; and to him was given the Key of the Bottomless Pit. And he opened the Bottomless Pit; and there arose a smoke out of the Pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the Sun and the Air were Darkened by reason of the smoke of the Pit.

And there came out of the smoke Locusts upon the Earth: and unto them was given Power, as the Scorpions of the Earth have Power.

And it was Commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the Earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the Seal of God in their foreheads.

And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be Tormented five months: and their Torment was in the Torment of a Scorpion, when he striketh a man.

And in those days shall men seek Death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to Die, and Death shall flee from them.

And the shapes of the Locusts were like unto Horses prepared unto battle; and on their heads were as it were Crowns like Gold, and their faces were the faces of men. And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of Lions.

And they had Breastplates, as it were Breastplates of Iron; and the Sound of their Wings was as the sound of chariots of many Horses running to battle. And they had Tails like unto Scorpions, and there were Stings in their Tails; and their Power was to hurt men five months.

And they had a King over them, which is the Angel of the Bottomless Pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon.
 – Revelation 9:1-11 [I have chosen to include this Great Lie because it plays a role in my life’s drama. Revelation, according to Deuteronomy 18, is False Prophecy. Everything predicted was to happen Soon, or Quickly, and it did not surely come to pass. To hold otherwise, after over Two Thousand years, because it has yet to come to pass, is pure Strong Delusion. The Angel who inspired John to write the Revelation was Satan Appearing as an Angel of Light. The prophecy of the Invasion of the Locust Army must have given him quite a chuckle or two.]

YHWH Hardens Pharoah’s Heart in Order to Judge Him and the Gods of Egypt

And YHWH said unto Moses, See, I have made thee a god to Pharoah:
 and Aaron thy brother shall be thy prophet.

Thou shalt speak all that I command thee, and Aaron thy brother shall speak unto Pharoah, that he send the children of Israel out of his land. And I will harden Pharoah’s heart, and multiply my Signs and my Wonders in the Land of Egypt.

But Pharoah shall not hearken unto you, that I may Lay my Hand upon Egypt, and bring forth mine armies, and my people the children of Israel, out of the Land of Egypt by Great Judgments. And the Egyptians shall Know that I am YHWH, when I stretch for mine Hand upon Egypt, and bring out the children of Israel from among them.

...For I will Pass through the Land of Egypt this night, and will Smite all the firstborn in the Land of Egypt, both man and beast: and against all the gods of Egypt I will Execute Judgment:

I am YHWH.

– Exodus 7:1-5; 12:12

YHWH Mingles a Perverse Spirit in the Midst of Egypt

The Princes of Zoan are become fools, the Princes of Noph are Deceived; they have also seduced Egypt, even they that are the stay of the tribes thereof. YHWH hath Mingled a Perverse Spirit in the midst thereof: and they have caused Egypt to err in every work thereof, as a drunken man staggereth in his vomit.

– Isaiah 19:13-14

Rightly Dividing the Word of Truth

Study to show thyself approved unto God,
a Workman that needeth not be ashamed,
Rightly Dividing the Word of Truth.

– II Timothy 2:15

Paul Rightly Divides the Word of Truth

Therefore we conclude that a man is Justified by Faith
Without the Works of the Law....

What shall we say then that Abraham our father,
as pertaining to the Flesh, hath found?

For if Abraham was Justified by Works,
he hath whereof to Glory; but not before God.

For what saith the Scripture? Abraham Believed
God, and it was Counted unto him for Righteousness.
Now to him that Worketh is the Reward not Reckoned
of Grace, but of Debt.

But to him that Worketh Not, but Believeth on him
that Justifieth the Ungodly, his Faith is Counted
as Righteousness.

Even as David also describeth the Blessedness of
the man, unto whom God Imputeth Righteousness
Without Works, saying, Blessed are they whose
Iniquities are Forgiven, and whose Sins are Covered.

Blessed is the man to whom the Lord
will Not Impute Sin.

– Romans 3:28 [Quoting Gen. 15:6], 4:1-8
[Quoting Psalm 32:1-2a.]

He therefore who Ministereth to you the Spirit,
and Worketh Miracles among you, doeth he it
by the Works of the Law, or by the Hearing of Faith?

Even as Abraham Believed God,
and it was Accounted to him for Righteousness.
Know ye therefore that they which are of Faith,
the same are the Children of Abraham.

And the Scripture, Foreseeing that God would
Justify the Gentiles through Faith,
Preached before the Gospel unto Abraham,
saying, In thee shall All Nations be Blessed.
So then they which be of Faith are Blessed
with Faithful Abraham.

For as many as are of the Works of the Law
are under the Curse: for it is Written,
Cursed is every one that continueth not in
all things which are Written in the Book
of the Law to do them.

But that no man is Justified by the Law
in the Sight of God, it is evident: for,
The Just shall live by Faith.

And the Law is Not of Faith: but,
The man that doeth them shall live in them.
Christ hath Redeemed us from the Curse of the Law,
being Made a Curse for us: for it is Written,
Cursed is every one that Hangeth on a Tree:
That the Blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles
through Jesus Christ; that we might Receive
the Promise of the Spirit through Faith.

– Galatians 3:5-14

James Wrongly Divides the Word of Truth

If ye fulfill the Royal Law according to the Scripture,
Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself, ye do well:
but if ye have respect to persons, ye commit Sin,
and are convinced of the Law as Transgressors.

For whosoever shall keep the Whole Law,
and yet Offend in one point, his is Guilty of All.

For he that said, Do not Commit Adultery, said also,
 Do not Kill. Now if thou Commit no Adultery,
 yet if thou Kill, thou art become a Transgressor
 of the Law. So speak ye, and so do, as they that
 shall be Judged by the Law of Liberty.
 ...Even so Faith, if it hath Not Works, is Dead,
 being alone. Yea, a man say, Thou hast Faith,
 and I have Works: show me thy Faith Without
 thy Works, and I will show thee my Faith by my Works.
 Thou Believest that there is one God;
 thou doest well: the Devils also Believe,
 and Tremble. But wilt thou know, O vain man,
 that Faith Without Works is Dead?
 Was not Abraham our father Justified by Works,
 when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?
 Seest thou how Faith Wrought with his Works,
 and by Works was Faith made Perfect.
 And the Scripture was Fulfilled which saith,
 Abraham Believed God, and it was Imputed
 unto him for Righteousness: and he was called
 the Friend of God. Yet see then how that by Works
 a man is Justified, and not by Faith Only.
 Likewise also was not Rahab the Harlot Justified
 by Works, when she had received the messengers,
 and had sent them out another way?
 For as the body without the spirit is Dead,
 so Faith Without Works is Dead also.
 – James 2:8-12, 17-26 [Most Christians do not believe
 that Paul and James contradict, but they do in a clasical manner,
 in that if one is True, the other must be False. It is impossible
 for them both to be True, even though they both could be False.
 I believe all the pro-Law, Condemnation of Sinners,
 Judgment, and Hell sayings, likely come from
 James the Just and his Caliphate.]

James the Just Authored Most of the Sermon on the Mount

Think not that I am come to destroy the Law, or the Prophets:
 I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.
 For Amen I say unto you, Till Heaven and Earth pass,
 not one tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law,
 till all be fulfilled.

Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments,
and shall teach men so, he [Paul] shall be called the least
in the Kingdom of Heaven; but whosoever shall do and
teach them, the same shall be called Great [James] in
the Kingdom of Heaven.

For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall
exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees,
ye shall in no case enter into the Kingdom of Heaven.

– Matthew 5:17-20 [This only gets worse as the Sermon
continues until only James the Just is left without sin.

I mean, come on, Jesus says that thinking about committing
adultery is worse than actually committing it (5:27-28)!

How much more legalistic can you get? Orwell called
that Thought Crime, or Sex Crime. But in many ways
the Communist Soviet of James the Just was but a
mere foretaste of Orwell's 1984.

Many commentators have noticed the similarities in
the Sermon to the Letter of James, and attribute the
Letter to the influence of Jesus in the Sermon, but
the opposite is more likely true, since such hyper-legalism
goes against the grain of what we know about Jesus.]

The Two Competing Revelations of Jesus Christ

1. The Revelation of John Zebedee, One of the Twelve Apostles and One of the Three Pillars of the Jerusalem Moses Cult

The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him,
to show unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass;
and he sent and signified it by his Angel unto his servant John.

...And I saw another Mighty Angel come down from Heaven,
clothed with a cloud: and a rainbow was upon his head,
and his face was as it were the Sun,
and his feet as pillars of fire:

And he had in his hand a little book open:

and he set his right foot upon the Sea,

and his left foot upon the Earth,

and cried with a loud voice, as when a lion roareth:

and when he had cried,

Seven Thunders uttered their Voices,

and when the Seven Thunders had uttered their Voices,
I was about to write: and I heard a Voice from Heaven
saying unto me, **Seal up those things which the
Seven Thunders uttered, and write them not.**

– Revelation 1:1; 10:1-4 [A Revealing Angel is an Angel of Light.
In other words, he Received a Revelation but was not able to
talk about it Lawfully, to wit, **Reveal it**. Paul mocks such a Revelation
(see below), since nothing is Revealed and it makes the
person receiving such a Revelation a Secret Knower on
the Inside, making him very special in his Cult,
for obviously everyone wants to know what is forbidden.]

2. The Revelation of Paul the Apostle to the Gentiles Written in Opposition to the Revelation of John

For what I do, that will I do, that I may cut off occasion
from them which desire occasion; that wherein they may Glory,
they may be found even as we.

For such are False Apostles, Deceitful Workers, Transforming
themselves into the Apostles of Christ [the Twelve Apostles].

And no marvel; for Satan himself is Transformed into
an Angel of Light.

Therefore it is no great thing if his Ministers also be Transformed
as the Ministers of Righteousness,
whose end shall be according to their works....

It is not expedient for me doubtless to Glory. I will come to
Visions and Revelations of the Lord.

I knew a man in Christ [John] above fourteen years ago
[at the Circumcision Summit],

(whether in the body, I cannot tell: God Knoweth;) such an one
Caught Up to the Third Heaven [Rev. 4].

And I knew such a man, (whether in the body, or out of the body,
I cannot tell: God Knoweth:)

**how that he was Caught Up into Paradise,
and heard Unspeakable Words [Rev 10:1-4].
which it is not Lawful for a man to utter.**

Of such a one will I Glory: yet of myself I will not Glory,
but in my infirmities.

For though I would desire to Glory, I shall not be a Fool;
 for I will say the Truth [He can boast of John's
 revelation because it is not True]; but now I forbear,
 lest any man should think of me above that which he
 seeth me to be, or that he heareth of me.

And lest I should be exalted above measure through
 the abundance of the Revelations, there was given to me
 a thorn in the Flesh, the Angel of Satan to Buffet me,
 lest I should be exalted above measure.

For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it may
 depart from me. And he said unto me, My Grace is
 Sufficient for thee: for my Strength is Made Perfect
 in Weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather Glory
 in my infirmities, that the Power of Christ may rest upon me,
 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in
 necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake:
 for when I am Weak, then am I Strong.

I am become a Fool in Glorifying; ye have compelled me:
 for I ought to have been commended of you;
 for in Nothing am I behind the very Chiefest Apostles
 [the Twelve], though I be Nothing.

Truly the Signs of an Apostle were wrought among you
 in all patience, in Signs, and Wonders, and Mighty Deeds.
 For what is it wherein ye were Inferior to other Churches,
 except it be that I myself was not burdensome to you?
 forgive me for this Wrong.

– II Corinthians 11:12-15; 12:1-13 [The Competition had
 become fierce in the times before Paul's arrest in
 Jerusalem. You can see how the Jerusalem Cult
 had moved in on his converts in Corinth, bad-mouthing
 Paul for withholding the Jewish Law from them,
 that they needed to complete their salvation,
 even making them doubt the authority of Paul
 himself, the one who had led them to Christ to
 begin with. This is the Evil Work of Peter
 and the Lord's Brothers, repeating what they
 did to the Churches Philip started in Samaria
 and Caesarea (Acts 8:5-40; 10:1-48). By using
 the time span of 14 years prior to the writing of
 II Corinthians as the time of John's Revelation,

Paul is not only mocking the fact that it was a non-Revelation, for it was unable to be Revealed [for it was not Lawful to be told], but also because it had not yet been fulfilled, and that plenty of time had elapsed so it was no longer relevant, since John's Prophecy was promised to occur soon, quickly, for the time was allegedly at hand. I cannot find one other place where Paul talks about himself in the Third Person, so why are the scholars so sure that he is talking about himself? After all, a few verses earlier he had mocked John's Revelation as coming from Satan
 Appearing as an Angel of Light.]

I Marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that Called you into the Grace of Christ unto Another Gospel [that of James]; which is not Another; but there be some that trouble you, and would Pervert the Gospel of Christ unto Another Gospel.

But though we, or an Angel from Heaven [Satan], preach any Other Gospel [Faith + Law] unto you than that which we have Preached unto you [Faith Only], let him be Accursed!

As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any Other Gospel unto you than that ye have Received, let him be Accursed!

For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the Servant of Christ. But I Certify you, Brothers, that the Gospel which was Preached of me is not after men. For I neither Received it of man, neither was I Taught it, but by

the Revelation of Jesus Christ!

For ye have heard of my conversation in time past in the Jews' religion, how that beyond measure I Persecuted the Church of God, and wasted it: and profited in the Jews' religion above many my equals in mine own Nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

But when it Pleas'd God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and Called me by his Grace, to Reveal his Son In me, that I might Preach him among the Gentiles; **immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood:**

neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were Apostles before me: but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus.

– Galatians 1: 6-7. [Paul's account contradicts the

three different accounts of his Revelation in Acts (9:3-8; 22:6-11; 26:12-20); note how he goes beyond his critique in II Corinthians and this time Curses James, Peter, and John, the Three Pillars of the Jerusalem Moses Cult. The main differences between the Two Revelations are that the Revelation to John is given indirectly to him by an Angel of Light from Heaven, whereas the Revelation to Paul is Given directly In him by God. John's Revelation is mediated by an Angel just like the Law that was given to Moses was mediated by Hostile Angels.

It is a Revelation of the Old Testament, not the New Testament. Originally, John's revelation was composed around 41 or 42 A.D., at the time Caligula ordered Herod Agrippa I to install a giant statue of himself in the Holy of Holies in Jerusalem (Rev. 13:11-18). It should not be forgotten that despite the alleged blessing on the reader of Revelation 1:3, "Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of the prophecy, and keep these things which are written therein: for the time is at hand," the Revelation of John is under Paul's Curse in Galatians 1:8-9 (see above), for it Preaches another gospel that comes from an Angel from Heaven, and because of that Curse people believe the Book of Revelation at their own peril. It is literally the most Evil Book ever written in History, for when Paul talks about John's Revelation in II Corinthians 11:13-15; 12:1-6, he calls the Jerusalem Soviet False Apostles, Ministers of Unrighteousness, and Deceitful Workers, for it comes from Satan Appearing as an Angel of Light. He further makes a dichotomy between James' Caliphate and his Gentile Churches: "For this Hagar is Mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in Bondage with its children. But Jerusalem which is Above is Free, which is the Mother of us all." (Gal. 4:25-26.)]

The Coming of the Son of Man

Mark's Version

Buy in those Days, after that Tribulation, the Sun shall be Darkened, and the Moon shall not give her Light. And the Stars of Heaven shall Fall, and the Powers that are in Heaven shall be Shaken. And then they shall See the Son of Man Coming in the Clouds with Great Power and Glory. And then shall he Send his Angels, and shall gather together the Elect from the Four Winds, from the uttermost part of the Earth to the uttermost part of Heaven. Now learn a Parable of the Fig Tree; When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye Know that Summer is near: so ye in like manner, when ye shall See these things come to pass, Know that it is Nigh, even at the Doors.

Amen, Amen, I say unto you, that this Generation shall not pass, till All these Things be done. Heaven and Earth shall pass away: but my Words shall not pass away.

But of that Day and that Hour Knoweth no man, no, not the Angels, neither the Son, but the Father.

Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye Know not when the Time is.

– Mark 13:24-33

Matthew's Version

For as the Lightning cometh out of the East, and Shineth even unto the West; so shall also the Coming of the Son of Man be. For wheresoever the carcass is, there will the Eagles be gathered together. Immediately after the Tribulation of those Days shall the Sun be Darkened, and the Moon shall not give her Light, and the Stars shall Fall from Heaven, and the Powers of the Heavens shall be Shaken: and then shall Appear the Sign of the Son of Man: and then shall all the tribes of the Earth mourn, and they shall See the Son of Man Coming in the Clouds of Heaven with Power and Great Glory. And he shall Send his Angels with a Great Sound of a Trumpet, and they shall gather together his Elect from the Four Winds, from one end of Heaven to the other.

Now Learn a Parable of the Fig Tree: When the branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye shall Know that Summer is Nigh: so likewise ye, when ye shall See All these Things, Know that it is Near, even at the Doors.

Amen, Amen, I say unto you, This Generation shall not pass, till All these Things be Fulfilled.

Heaven and Earth shall pass away, but my Words shall not pass away. but of that Day and Hour Knoweth no man, no, not the Angels of Heaven, but my Father only....

Watch therefore: for ye Know not what Hour your Lord doth Come.
– Matthew 24:27-37, 42

Luke's Version

And there shall be Signs in the Sun, and in the Moon, and in the Stars; and upon the Earth Distress of Nations, with Perplexity; the Sea and the Waves Roaring; men's hearts failing them for Fear, and for looking after those things which are Coming on the Earth: for the Powers of Heaven shall be Shaken,

And then shall they See the Son of Man Coming in a Cloud with Power and Great Glory.

And when these things begin to come to pass, then Look up, and lift up your heads; for your Redemption draweth Nigh.

And he Spake to them a Parable; Behold the Fig Tree, and All the Trees; when they now shoot forth, ye See and Know of your own selves that Summer is Now at Hand.

So likewise ye, when ye See these things come to pass, Know ye that the Kingdom of God is Nigh at Hand.

Amen I say unto you, This Generation shall not pass away, till All be Fulfilled.

Heaven and Earth shall pass away; but my Words shall not pass away...

Watch ye therefore, and Pray always, that ye man be Accounted Worthy to escape All these Things that shall Come to pass, and the Stand before the Son of Man.

– Luke 21:25-33, 36 [You can see the minor variations for yourself. All these things, prophesied in Daniel 9, came to pass, except the visible coming of the Son of Man, which we previously demonstrated to be a Heavenly Event, thus not according to the expectation of Jesus and Believers. Because of this Fatal Belief, the Jews were wiped out of the Holy City.

Previously stated, the fact that the Temple and the Holy City were totally destroyed, and the writers of the Synoptic Gospels wrote their account of the Coming of the Son of Man after this Apocalypse without mentioning it as proof, convinces me that the scholars have dropped the ball on this one.]

Evidence that II Thessalonians is a Forgery

End Time Imminent

Paul, and Silvanus [Silas], and Timothy, unto the church of the Thessalonians which is in God the Father and in the Lord Jesus Christ: Grace be unto you, and Peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers... For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when ye received the Word of God which ye Heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but as it is in Truth, the Word of God, which effectually Worketh also in you that Believe...

Wherefore when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone...

But I would not have you to be Ignorant, Brothers, concerning them which are Asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope. For if we Believe that Jesus Died and Rose again, even so them also which Sleep in Jesus will God bring with him. For this we say unto you by the Word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain until the Coming of the Lord shall not Prevent them which are Asleep.

For the Lord himself shall Descend from Heaven with a shout, with the Voice of the Archangel, and with the Trump of God: and the Dead in Christ shall Rise first: then we which are alive and remain shall be Caught Up together with them in the Clouds, to meet the Lord in the Air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. But of the Times and Seasons, Brothers, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves Know Perfectly that the Day of the Lord so Cometh as a Thief in the Night. For when they shall say, Peace and Safety: then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.

But ye, Brothers, are not in Darkness, that that Day should overtake you as a Thief. Ye are all the Children of Light, and the Children of the Day: we are not of the Night, nor of Darkness.

– I Thessalonians 1:1-2; 2:13; 3:1; 4:13 – 5:5 [Note that all three, Paul, Silas, and Timothy are in Athens at the time the letter was written, whereas the Book of Acts places only Paul in Athens; Silas and Timothy join Paul later in Corinth (Acts 17:13-15; 18:1-5). Then Silas disappears from the record. It is my opinion that Silas authored II Thessalonians to counter Paul's End Time Scenario with that of the Jerusalem Soviet: he was an Elder in that Cult, and James the Just was following the Daniel End Time Scenario, prominent in II Thessalonians (see below).]

End Time Long Time Coming

Paul, and Silvanus, and Timothy, unto the church of the Thessalonians in God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and Peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. We are bound to thank God always for you, Brothers, as it is meet, because that your Faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity of every one of you toward each other aboundeth...

But we are bound to give Thanks alway to God for you, Brothers, Beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning Chosen you to Salvation through Sanctification of the Spirit and Belief of the Truth...

Now we beseech you, Brothers, by the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him, that ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, or by word, **nor by letter as from us** [I Thessalonians], as that the Day of Christ is at Hand. Let no man Deceive you by any means: for that Day shall not Come, except there Come a Falling Away first, and that Man of Sin be Revealed, the Son of Perdition; who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the Temple of God, showing himself that he is God. Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things? And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be Revealed in his Time. For the Mystery of Iniquity doth already work; only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. And then shall that Wicked

be Revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his Coming: even him, whose coming is after the Working of Satan with all power, and signs and lying wonders, and with all Deceivableness of Unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the Love of the Truth, that they might be Saved. And for this cause God shall Send them Strong Delusion, that they should believe a Lie: that they all might be Damned who believeth not the Truth, but had pleasure in Unrighteousness.

– II Thessalonians 1:1-3; 2:13, 1-12 [Gerd Ludemann, in his Paul: the Founder of Christianity (NY: Prometheus, 2002, p. 14) states “...the most striking formal characteristic of I Thessalonians, namely a second thanksgiving (2:13), also appears in 2 Thess. 2:13, and from the numerous verbal agreements.” He then states: “[A] thesis already put forward in the nineteenth century recommends itself, namely that 2 Thessalonians was intended not to comment on 1 Thessalonians but to displace it, because its author regarded the imminent expectation of 1 Thessalonians as heresy and thus declared it out of hand as inauthentic. Thus even measured by the criteria of antiquity, the author of 2 Thessalonians is the one who deliberately produced a forgery. Yet obviously he felt no qualms of conscience in this matter, for he himself warns against a forged letter of Paul (2 Thess. 2:2). 2 Thessalonians then must be considered a counterforgery.” (Id., p. 15.) This is further demonstrated by the forger declaring at the end of II Thessalonians 3:17, “The salutation of Paul **with mine own hand**, which is the token in every epistle: so I write.” Obviously the intent is to influence Thessalonian Believers into thinking that Paul is preaching the wrong End Time Message, and is thus a False Apostle. This demonstrates another attempt of Jerusalem to steal the independent churches Paul was establishing. If this is true, then “he that now letteth will let” would be James the Just, as many scholars have suggested, backed by history, since the murder of James the Just by the High Priest led directly to the first war with Rome, as reported by Eusebius and Josephus. “Let” in its archaic

context, means to hinder or obstruct. Eusebius is helpful in this interpretation: “For forty whole years it [the Jerusalem Church] suspended their destruction, after their crime against the Christ, and during all of them many of the apostles and disciples, and James himself, who is called the Lord’s brother, the first bishop of the city, still survived in this world. By their dwelling in Jerusalem, they afforded, as it were, a strong protection to the place; for the government of God had still patience, if haply they might at last by repenting of their deeds, be able to obtain pardon and salvation; and in addition to such great long-suffering it sent wonderful tokens from God of what would happen to them if they did not repent.” (Eusebius, Ecclesiastical History, III.vii, 7-9.) Believers following the Daniel account for the End Time obviously believed that they would win this war, but their Strong Delusion ended at Masada.]

I Corinthians in Agreement With I Thessalonians

Behold, I Show you a Mystery; we shall not all Sleep,
but we shall all be Changed, in a moment, in the twinkling
of an eye, at the Last Trump: for the Trumpet shall Sound,
and the Dead shall be Raised Incorruptible, and we shall be
Changed. For this Corruptible must put on Incorruption,
and the mortal must put on Immortality. So when this corruptible
shall have put on Incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on
Immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written.
Death is Swallowed Up in Victory. O Death, where is thy Sting?

O Grave, where is thy Victory?

The Sting of Death is Sin; and the Strength of Sin is the Law.

But thanks be to God, which Giveth us the Victory
through our Lord Jesus Christ.

– I Corinthians 15:51-57 [It is my belief that I Thessalonians
was written prior to I Corinthians, and since I Corinthians
holds the same view of the Rapture as I Thessalonians,
this is more evidence that II Thessalonians, which has an
opposing view of the End, is a Forgery. History has demonstrated
that both Apocalypses are False. The first one, the imminent

Coming of the Lord did not come imminently. The second conditional one was still expected to come within the lifetimes of its early proponents, but it didn't. Thus we can safely say after more than two thousand years it too is False Prophecy. To say that because the conditions have not yet been fulfilled, the Prophecy is still open to being fulfilled in the future is Foolish. This means that the False Prophecy of the Apocalypse is under a Curse and can now be freed from its association with the Preaching of the Gospel. In the End the Jews got the Apocalypse they expected, namely the two fatal wars with Rome, but not the outcome they were expecting.]

God Tempts His Son

Mark's Version

And immediately the Spirit driveth him into the Wilderness. And he was there in the Wilderness forty days, Tempted of Satan; and was with the wild beasts; and the Angels Ministered unto him. – Mark 1:12-13 [Mark gets right to the point, but note the lack of any conversation between Jesus and Satan. This lends support to the idea that the conversations were added later by the authors.]

Matthew's Version

Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the Wilderness to be Tempted of the Devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungered. And when the Tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, Command that these stones be made bread.

But he answered and said, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every Word that proceedeth out of the Mouth of God. Then the Devil taketh him up into the Holy City, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the Temple, and saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down, for it is Written, He shall Give his Angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

Jesus said to him, It is Written again, Thou shall not Tempt the Lord thy God.

Again, the Devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain,
and Showeth him all the Kingdoms of the Kosmos,
and the Glory of them; and saith unto him, All these
things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is
Written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only
shalt thou Serve.

Then the Devil leaveth him, and, behold, Angels came and
Ministered unto him.

– Matthew 4:1-11 [Matthew invents a Scripture Duel
between the Devil and Jesus. Very entertaining.]

Luke's Version

And Jesus being full of the Holy Spirit returned from Jordan,
and was led by the Spirit into the Wilderness, being forty days
Tempted of the Devil. And in those days he did eat nothing:
and when they were ended, he afterward hungered.

And the Devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God,
Command this stone that it be made bread.

And Jesus answered him, saying, It is Written, That man
shall not live by bread alone, but by every Word of God.

And the Devil, taking him up into a high mountain,
Showed unto him all the Kingdoms of the Kosmos in
a moment of time. And the Devil said unto him,
All this Power will I give thee, and the Glory of them:
for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever
I will I give it. If thou therefore will worship me,
all shall be thine.

And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind
me, Satan; for it is Written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God,
and him only shalt thou Serve.

And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle
of the Temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God,
cast thyself down from hence: for it is Written, He shall Give
his Angels charge over thee, to keep thee: and in their hands
they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot
against a stone.

And Jesus answering said unto him, It is Said, Thou shall
not Tempt the Lord thy God.

And when the Devil had ended all the Temptation,
he departed from him for a season.

– Luke 4:1-13 [Since the authors have invented
this conversation, it makes no difference in what
order it is told. But adding the quote from
Psalm 91:11-12 was a nice touch.]

Tempting God

Ye shall not Tempt YHWH your God, as ye
Tempted him in Massah.

– Deuteronomy 6:16 [“ Wherefore the people did
chide with Moses, and said, Give us water that we
may drink. And Moses said unto them, Why chide
ye with me? wherefore do ye Tempt YHWH?...
And he called the name of the place Massah, and
Meribah, because of the chiding of the children of
Israel, and because they Tempted YHWH,
saying, Is YHWH among us?”
(Exodus 17:2, 7a.)]

Moreover YHWH Spake again unto Ahaz, saying,
Ask thee a Sign of YHWH thy God; ask it either
in the Depth, or in the Height above.

But Ahaz said, I will not ask, nor will I
Tempt YHWH.

And he said, Hear ye now, O House of David;
Is it a small thing for you to weary me, but will
you weary my God also?

– Isaiah 7:10-13 [Some times you just
can’t win by obeying a Commandment
from Moses. And couldn’t it be argued
that living a life of Faith is Tempting God?]

Jesus Remained on Earth with the Twelve for 40 Days After the Resurrection

Luke’s Two Contradictory Reports of Jesus with the Twelve

1. The Account in Luke

And they rose up the same hour [Clopas and another unnamed Disciple],
and returned to Jerusalem, and found the Eleven gathered together,
and them that were with them, saying, The Lord is Risen indeed, and

hath Appeared to Simon [Peter/Cephas] and they told what things were done in the way, and how he was Known of them in breaking of bread.

And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them,
and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had Seen a Spirit. And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts? Behold my hands and my feet, that is I myself: handle me and See; for a Spirit hath not Flesh and Bones, as ye See me have.

And when he had thus Spoken, he Showed them his hands and his feet.
And while they yet Believed not for Joy, and wondered, he said unto them,
Have ye here any food?

And they gave him a piece of broiled fish, and of an honeycomb.

And he took it, and did eat before them.

And he said unto them, These are the Words which I Spake unto you,
while I was yet with you, that All Things must be Fulfilled,
which were Written in the Law of Moses, and in the Prophets,
and in the Psalms, concerning me.

Then Opened he their Understanding, that they might Understand the Scriptures. And he said unto them, Thus it is Written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to Rise from the Dead the Third Day: and that Repentance and Remission of Sins should be Preached in his Name among All Nations, beginning at Jerusalem. And ye are Witnesses of these things.

And, behold, I Send the Promise of my Father upon you:
but tarry ye in the City of Jerusalem, until ye be Endued
with Power from on High.

And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up
his hands, and Blessed them.

And it came to pass, while he Blessed them, he was parted
from them, and carried up into Heaven.

And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem
with Great Joy: and were continually in the Temple,
Praising and Blessing God. Amen.

– Luke 24:33-53 [Note that Jesus doesn't spend more than an hour with them, and, the same day, is taken up to Heaven. This directly contradicts the accounts in Matthew and Mark, which have Jesus telling the Disciples to meet him in Galilee. This also contradicts Luke's later account in Acts (see below), which has Jesus remaining with them for 40 days. Remember, there is hardly a scholar left in this world who believes that

Luke is not the author of both the Gospel that bears his name and the Book of Acts. Note also that we are back to a Resurrection of Flesh and Bones, rather than a Spiritual Resurrection: i.e., The Night of the Living Dead. Also remember that I use the name “Luke” to describe the author of both Luke and Acts for the sake of convenience, even though I do not believe that the real Luke is the author.]

2. The Account in Acts

The former treatise have I made [the Gospel of Luke], O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to do and Teach, until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the Holy Spirit had given commandments unto the Apostles whom he had Chosen: to whom also he Showed himself Alive after his Passion by many infallible proofs, being Seen of them Forty Days, and Speaking of the things pertaining to the Kingdom of God: and, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the Promise of the Father, which, saith he, ye have Heard of me. For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit not many days hence. When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time Restore again the Kingdom to Israel? And he said unto them, It is not for you to Know the Times or the Seasons, which the Father hath put in his own Power. But ye shall receive Power, after that the Holy Spirit is come upon you: and ye shall be Witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and to the uttermost part of the Earth. And when he had Spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a Cloud received him out of their sight. And while they looked stedfastly toward Heaven as he went up, behold, Two Men stood by them in white apparel; which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into Heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into Heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen go into Heaven. Then returned they unto Jerusalem from the Mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a Sabbath’s Day’s journey. – Acts 1:1-12 [Luke has added 40 days to the post-Resurrection Appearances, as well as Two Angels announcing his Superman

Ascension. Why such a drastic change? The Jerusalem Church had many rivals, all of which claimed such Appearances. For the Communist Apostles, their answer was to have enough time so that could invent many doctrines during this time, claiming that Jesus gave them to the Apostles for authority. Remember, the Gospel of John has Jesus giving the Holy Spirit in the evening of the same day he Resurrected. The extra forty days gives the Moses Cult extra time to receive direct revelations from the Lord so they could compete with John Mark's Cult.]

Jesus Not Above Using Sympathetic Magic

And again, departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the Sea of Galilee, through the midst of the the coasts of Decapolis. And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to put his hand upon him. And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his **fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue**; and looking up to Heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, **Ephphatha**, that is, **Be opened**.

And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it; and were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

– Mark 7:31-31 [James George Fraser, in his Golden Bough, gives this definition of Sympathetic Magic: “If we analyze the principles of thought on which magic is based, they will probably be found to resolve themselves into two: first, that like produces like, or that an effect resembles its cause; and, second, that things which have once been in contact with each other continue to act on each other at a distance after the physical contact has been severed. The former principle may be called the Law of Similarity, the latter the Law of Contact or Contagion. From the first of these principles, namely, the Law of Similarity, the magician infers that he can produce any effect he desires merely by imitating it: from the second he infers that whatever he does to a material object will affect equally the person with whom the object was once in contact,

whether it formed part of his body or not. Charms based on the Law of Similarity may be called Homoeopathic or Imitative Magic. Charms based on the Law of Contact or Contagion may be called Contagious Magic.” (NY: Macmillan Pub. Co., 1922) pp. 12-13. Thus, Jesus used a combination of Sympathetic Magic to heal the deaf and dumb man. Putting his fingers in the man’s ears would be under the Law of Contact or Contagion, and spitting in his hand and then touching the man’s tongue would be under the Law of Similarity. This is why the Holy Bible is a Magic Book.]

A Bizarre Act of Magic

And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry; and seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing therein: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves, for the time for figs was not yet.

And Jesus answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee for ever. And his Disciples Heard it....

And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up from the roots. And Peter calling to remembrance saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig tree which thou Cursedst is withered away.

And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have Faith in God.

For Amen I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not Doubt in his heart, but shall Believe that these things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith.

Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, Believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.

And when ye stand, praying, Forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in Heaven may Forgive you your Trespasses.

– Mark 11:12-14, 20-25 [Nothing else tells the tale of Jesus’ humanity and Dark Side more than this act. Jesus had no legitimate reason for Cursing the tree; it had done him no harm. And the follow-up where Jesus then gives us the reason is not there. He only Cursed the tree because he was pissed-off and

vented his anger upon it. He was in the same frame of mind when he overturned the tables of the money changers and took the whip to their livestock (John 2:15), which in turn provoked the Insurrection.

Note also how easy it was for Jesus to equate Belief and Forgiveness with Sympathetic Magic.]

Some Old Testament Sympathetic Magic

And YHWH sent Seraphim [fiery flying serpents] among the people; and much people of Israel died. Therefore the people came to Moses and said, We have Sinned, for we have spoken against YHWH, and against thee; pray unto YHWH, that he take away the Serpents from us. And Moses prayed for the people. And YHWH said unto Moses, Make thee a Seraphim, and set it upon a pole: and it shall come to pass, that every one that is bitten, when he Looketh upon it, shall live.

And Moses made a Serpent of Bronze, and put it upon a pole, and it came to pass, that if a Serpent had bitten any man, when he Beheld the Serpent of Bronze, he lived.

– Numbers 21:6-9 [This story is bizarre since it involves Supernatural snakes – Fiery-Burning Flying Snakes – to wit, Seraphim, and the idea of merely Looking at a Bronze Serpent on a pole to cure a Supernatural snake-bite is pure Sympathetic Magic under the Law of Similarity. This Graven Image also violated the Ten Commandments, since it forbade the making of any graven image of anything on Earth, the water under the Earth, or in Heaven (Exodus 20:24).]

The Great Commandment

But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to shame, they were gathered together.

Then one of them, which was a Lawyer, asked him a question, Tempting him, and saying, Master which is the Great Commandment in the Law?

Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt Love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the First and Great Commandment.

**And the Second is like unto it, Thou shalt Love thy Neighbor
as thyself. On these Two Commandments hang
All the Law and the Prophets.**

– Matthew 22:34-40 [Mark 12:28-34 has a Scribe ask the question and adds “Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord,” as prelude to the First One. The Scribe praises Jesus for being correct, to which Jesus replies, “Thou art not far from the Kingdom of God.” Luke agrees with Matthew, but he uses it as a prelude the Parable of the Good Samaritan:
“And he [Jesus] said unto him [the Lawyer], Thou hast answered Right: this do, and thou shalt Live.
And he, willing to Justify himself, said unto Jesus,
And who is my neighbor?” (Lk. 10:28-29.)]

Then came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the Scribes, which came from Jerusalem. And when they saw some of his Disciples eat bread with defiled, that is to say, with unwashen hands, they found fault.

For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the Tradition of the Elders. And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, and bronze vessels, and of tables.

Then the Pharisees and Scribes asked him, Why walk not thy Disciples according to the Tradition of the Elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands? He answered and said unto them, Well hath Isaiah prophesied of you Hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoreth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me. Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the Commandment of God, ye hold the Tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the Commandment of God, that ye may keep your own Tradition...

Making the Word of God of none effect through your Tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things ye do.

And when he had called all the people unto him, he said unto them,

Hearken unto me every one of you, and Understand:

There is nothing from without a man, that entering into him, can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

If any man hath Ears to Hear, let him Hear.

And when was entered into the house from the people, his Disciples asked him concerning the Parable.

And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entereth into the man, it cannot defile him: because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out unto the draught, **thus making all foods clean.**

And he saith, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed Evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, Wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an Evil Eye, Blasphemy, pride, foolishness: all these Evil Things come from within, and defile the man.

– Mark 7:1-9, 13-23 [This contradicts the Sentence of James at the Circumcision Summit, making food laws of Moses applicable to the Gentiles, whereas Jesus taught that no food, whether previously sacrificed to idols or not, make a person unclean (Acts 15:19-29 vs. I Cor. 8:1-13). I still have a hard time associating foolishness as an Evil Thing, but, Oh well. The parallel in Matthew 15:1-20 omits the commentary that Jesus thus made all foods clean; strangely, there is no parallel in Luke.]

Evidence of the Early Cult War in Asia Between John Zebedee (St. John the Divine) and Nicolas of Antioch

Unto the Angel of the Church of Ephesus write: These things saith he that holdeth the Seven Stars in his Right Hand, who walketh in the midst of the Seven Golden Candlesticks. I Know thy Works, and thy Labor, and thy Patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are Evil: **and thou hast Tried them which say they are Apostles [Nicolas, etc.], and are not, and hast Found them Liars... But this thou hast, that thou Hatetest the Deed of the Nicolaitanes, which I also Hate....**

And unto the Angel of the Church in Smyrna write: These things saith the First and the Last, which was Dead, and is Alive; I Know thy Works, and Tribulation, and Poverty, (but thou art Rich); **and I Know the Blasphemy of them which say they are Jews [Nicolas], and are not, but are the Synagogue of Satan....**

And to the Angel of the Church in Pergamon write: These things saith he which hath the sharp Sword with Two Edges; I Know thy Works, **and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's Seat is: and thou holdest fast my Name, and hast not denied my Faith, even in those days wherein**

Antipas was my Faithful Martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth. But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the Doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a Stumblingblock before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto Idols, and to commit Fornication.

So hast thou also them that hold the Doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I Hate. Repent; or else I will come unto thee Quickly, and will Fight against them with the Sword of my Mouth...

And unto the Angel of the Church in Thyatira write: These things saith the Son of God, who hath his Eyes like unto a Flame of Fire, and his Feet are like fine Bronze....**Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel [Lydia], which callest herself a Prophetess, to Teach and to Seduce my Servants to commit Fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto Idols.**

And I gave her space to Repent of her Fornication; and she Repented not. Behold, I will cast her into a Bed, and them that commit Adultery with her into Great Tribulation, except they Repent of their Deeds.

And I will Kill her Children with Death; and all the Churches shall Know that I am he which Searcheth the Reins and Hearts: and I will Give unto every one of you according to your Works.

But unto you I say, and to the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this Doctrine, and which have not Known the Depths of Satan, as they speak; I will put upon you none other Burden....

And to the Angel of the Church in Philadelphia write: These things saith he that is Holy, he that is True, he that hath the Key of David, he that Openeth, and no man Shutteth; and Shutteth, and no man Openeth;... **Behold, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do Lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet and to Know that I have Loved thee....**

– Revelation 2:1-2, 6, 8-9, 12-16, 18, 20-24; 3:7, 9 [The Churches of Nicolas, which John calls the Synagogue of Satan, was likely a missionary outreach of the Church of Antioch, since that is where Nicolas was from (Acts 6:5b). He obviously refused to take orders from James and the Jerusalem Soviet, since they, like Paul, ate unclean Gentile food. And about fornication, Eusebius quotes from Clement of Alexandria, an early church father, in regards to Nicolas: “At this time, too, there existed for a short time the heresy of the Nicolaitans of which the Apocalypse of John makes mention. These claimed Nicolas, one of the [alleged] Deacons in the company of Stephen who were appointed by the Apostles for the service of

the poor. Clement of Alexandria in the third book of the Stromata gives the following account of him. ‘He had, they say, a beautiful wife; but after the ascension of the Savior he was accused of jealousy by the Apostles, and brought her forward and commanded her to be mated to anyone who wished. They say that this action was in consequence of the injunction “it is necessary to abuse the flesh,” and that by following up what had been done and said with simplicity and without perversion those who follow his heresy lead a life of unrestrained license. But I have learned that Nicolas had nothing to do with any other woman beside her whom he married, and that of his children the daughters reached old age as virgins, and that the son remained uncorrupted. Since this is the case it is clear that the exposure of the wife of whom he was jealous in the midst of the disciples was the abandonment of passion, and that teaching the abuse of the flesh was continence from the pleasures which he had sought. For I think that according to the command of the Savior he did not wish to serve two masters – pleasure and the Lord.’”

(Eusebius, Ecclesiastical History, III.xxix. 1-4)

We shouldn’t forget that John was one of the Three Pillars who made the deal with Paul allowing him to preach the Gospel to the Gentiles, and when the Holy Spirit forbade Paul and Silas from preaching in Asia (Acts 16:60), this was really but orders from James and the Jerusalem Soviet, who regarded everything they did as coming from the Holy Spirit. Silas was their agent to keep Paul on the straight and narrow. Of course, Paul eventually disobeyed, a decision that proved to be fatal to him in the end. We can date John’s Revelation to the time of the Circumcision Summit from the evidence in II Corinthians 12:1-5, where Paul mocks John’s Revelation for its not revealing the 7 Thunders, thus making it a non-revelation. I have also placed in brackets “alleged” because the so-called Seven Deacons are a fiction of early Christianity, and were surely Apostles like Paul before he ran them out of town in his violent persecution of the Hellenistic Jews. Nicolas had been a Gentile until he became a Proselyte, meaning he had taken an oath to uphold the Law of Moses and was Circumcised. Nicolas was a fly in John’s ointment and he didn’t want Paul influencing his flock, the way in which Paul’s first convert in Europe, Lydia of Thyatira, was an influential leader, so much so that John calls her “Jezebel,” the famous Wicked

Phoenician Queen, High Priestess of Asherah, and wife of Ahab, King of Israel. Also, he calls Nicolas “Balaam,” the infamous seer who taught the Midianites and Moabites to seal their Political Union with Israel by means of mass Sacred Prostitution, and a Holy Marriage in the Tabernacle (Hieros Gamos), between a Prince of Simeon and daughter of a Midianite King. They were consuming their union sexually in the Tabernacle of YHWH when they were brutally murdered by Phinehas, a High Priest of Aaron, who thrust them both through with a spear while they were in the act, pinning them to the floor of the Tabernacle, an act of sadistic pornography (Numbers 25:6-8).]

Bizarre Synchronicity

However, there was a certain man of the Jewish Nation at Jerusalem, who appeared to be very accurate in the knowledge of the Law. His name was Simon [Peter?]. This man got together an assembly, while the King was absent at Caesarea, and had the insolence to accuse him as not living holily, and that he might justly be excluded out of the Temple, since it belonged only to native Jews. But the General of Agrippa’s army informed him that Simon had made such a speech to the people. So the King sent for him; and, as he was then sitting in the Theatre, he bade him sit down by him, and said to him with a low and gentle voice, – “What is there done in this Place that is contrary to the Law?”

But he had nothing to say for himself, but begged his pardon. So the King was more easily reconciled to him than one could have imagined, as esteeming mildness a better quality in a King than anger; and knowing that moderation is more becoming in great men than passion. So he made Simon a small present and dismissed him.

– Josephus, Antiquities of the Jews, XIX.vii.4 [It must be noted that this corresponds to the same time span of Peter being in Caesarea for the Conversion of the Roman Centurion, Cornelius (Acts 10:1-48). Peter returns to Jerusalem to inform the Soviet there of the conversion of Gentiles. Soon after, Peter and James Zebedee are arrested by Agrippa’s men, with James being beheaded and Peter next in line, before he is able to bribe himself out of jail and escape. We know this somehow involved the Soviet’s worship in the Temple, and since the account in Acts totally disagrees with Agrippa’s

attested good nature, one suspects that the Soviet's activities in the Temple were somehow linked to Sicarri activity (Acts 11:1 – 12:19).

I'm not sure what "Place" Agrippa was talking about – one naturally thinks of the Temple in Jerusalem, but he probably meant the Theatre in Caesarea. Asking Simon what was contrary to the Law in the Theatre must have been some kind of veiled threat, because Simon immediately begged for Agrippa's pardon. Perhaps it was a Place of Execution? Who knows? In 66 A.D. the Jewish Revolt began with the Sicarri seizing the Temple, which became their base of operations until they moved to Masada, the last stand of the Sicarri. Storming the Temple was an exact replica of the Failed Insurrection on Palm Sunday, which led to the crucifixion of Jesus; yet this time it succeeded for a short time. I believe the Sicarri were acting under the Strong Delusion of the Book of Revelation and other popular Apocalypses, like the War Between the Sons of Light and the Sons of Darkness in the Dead Sea Scrolls. Perhaps because Josephus says that Simon was well-educated in the Law, this would automatically eliminate Peter from the pool of possible Simons of the time, because the testimony of the Jerusalem Temple leaders who brought Peter and John Zebedee before them tells us in Acts 4:6-7, 13: "And Annas the High Priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the High Priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem. And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, By what Power, or by what Name, have ye done this? [I.e., healed the man born lame; Peter then answers them quoting many Scriptures]... Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, **and perceived that they were Unlearned and Ignorant men**, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus." And there you have the answer to that theory: these men had been taught by Jesus, a Rabbi, and knew the Law very well.]

The Two Versions of the Death of Agrippa I

1. Luke's Version

And he went down from Judea to Caesarea, and there abode. And Herod was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon; but they came with one accord to him, and, having made Blastus the King's Chamberlain their friend, desired peace; because their country was nourished by the King's country.

And upon a set day Herod, arrayed in Royal apparel, sat upon his Throne, and made an oration to them. And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, and not of a man. And immediately the Angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the Glory; and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost.

– Acts 12:19b-23

2. Josephus' Version

Now, when Agrippa had reigned three years over all Judea, he came to the city Caesarea, which was formerly called Strato's Tower, and there he exhibited shows in honor of Caesar, upon his being informed that there was a certain Festival celebrated to make vows for his safety.

At which Festival, a great multitude was gotten together of the principal persons, and such as were of dignity through his Province. On the second day of which shows he put on a garment made wholly of silver, and of a contexture truly wonderful, and came into the Theatre early in the morning; at which time the silver of his garment being illuminated by the fresh reflection of the Sun's rays upon it, shone out after a surprising manner, and was so resplendent as to spread a horror over those that looked intently upon him; and presently his flatterers cried out, one from one place, and another from another, (though not for his good,) that he was a god; and they added – “Be thou merciful to us; for although we have hitherto revered thee only as a man, yet shall we henceforth own thee as superior to mortal nature.”

Upon this the King did neither rebuke them, nor reject their impious flattery. But, as he presently

afterwards looked up, he saw an owl sitting on a certain rope over his head, and immediately understood that this bird was the Messenger of Ill Tidings, as it had once been the Messenger of Good Tidings to him; and fell into the deepest sorrow. A severe pain also arose in his belly, and began in a most violent manner. He therefore looked upon his friends, and said – “I, whom you call a god, am commanded presently to depart this life; while Providence thus reproves the lying words you just now said to me; and I, who was by you called immortal, am immediately to be hurried away by death. But I am bound to accept of what Providence allots, as it pleases God; for we have by no means lived ill, but in a splendid and happy manner.”

When he had said this, his pain was become violent. Accordingly he was carried into the Palace; and the rumor went abroad everywhere, that he would certainly die in a little time.

But the multitude presently sat in sackcloth, with their wives and children, after the Law of their country, and besought God for the King’s recovery. All places were also full of mourning and lamentation. Now the King rested in a High Chamber, and as he saw them below lying prostrate on the ground, he could not himself forbear weeping. And when he had been quite worn out by the pain in his belly for five days, he departed this life, being in the fifty-fourth year of his age, and the seventh year of his reign; for he reigned four years under Caius Caesar [Caligula], three of them were over Philip’s Tetrarchy only, and on the fourth he had that of Herod added to it; and he reigned besides those, three years under the reign of Claudius Caesar; in which time he reigned over the fore-mentioned countries, and also had Judea added to them, as also Samaria and Caesarea.

– Josephus, Antiquities of the Jews, XIX. viii.2
[It amuses me that what Luke calls the Angel

the Lord, Josephus calls an owl – not to forget that pagan tales of magic often involved birds as messengers. But the accounts differ otherwise only in tone. My quotes from Josephus are from the Whiston version.]

God Wills That Everyone Be Saved and None Perish

Even so it is Not the Will of your Father which is in Heaven, that one of these little ones should Perish.

– Matthew 18:14

The Lord is not slack concerning his Promise, as some men count slackness; **but is Longsuffering to us-ward, Not Willing that Any should Perish, but that All should come to Repentance.**
 – II Peter 3:9 [The main argument for Antinomian Universalism is that if God Wills something it Will be Fulfilled. I mean, the idea that God somehow Fails in the End is ludicrous.]

Instructions for the Divine Sons and Daughters of God

But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of Evil....

Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt Love thy Neighbor, and Hate thine Enemy. But I say unto you, Love your Enemies, Bless them that Curse you, do Good to them that Hate you, and Pray for them which Deceitfully use you, and Persecute you; that ye may be the Children of your Father which is in Heaven:

For he maketh his Sun to Rise on the Evil and on the Good, and sendeth rain on the Just and on the Unjust. For if ye Love them which Love you, what reward have ye? do not even the Publicans do the same? And if ye salute your Brothers only, what do ye more than others? do not even the Publicans the same?...

Judge not, that ye be not Judged. For with what Judgment ye Judge, ye shall be Judged; and with what Measure ye mete, it shall be Measured to you again.

And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy Brother's eye,
 but considerest not the beam that is thine own eye?
 Or how wilt thou say to thy Brother, Let me pull out the mote
 out of thine eye; and, behold, a beam is in thine own eye?
 Thou Hypocrite [Mask Wearer], first cast out the beam out
 of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out
 the mote out of thy brother's eye...

Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock,
 and it shall be opened unto you;
 For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth;
 and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.
 Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread,
 will he give him a stone?
 Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?
 If ye then, being Evil, know how to give Good gifts unto your
 children, how much more shall your Father which is in Heaven
 give Good things to them that ask him?
 Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do
 to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the Law and the Prophets....

Beware of False Prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing,
 but inwardly they are ravening wolves.
 Ye shall Know them by their Fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns,
 or figs of thistles?
 Even so, every Good tree bringeth forth Good Fruit; but a Corrupt tree
 bringeth forth Evil Fruit.
 A Good tree cannot bring forth Evil Fruit, neither can a Corrupt tree
 bring forth Good Fruit.
 Every tree that bringeth not forth Good Fruit is hewn down,
 and cast into the fire.
 Wherefore by their Fruits ye shall Know them.
 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves:
be ye therefore Wise as Serpents, and harmless as doves...

It is enough for the Disciple that he be as his Master,
 and the Servant of his Lord.
 If they have called the Master of the House Beelzebub,
 how much more shall they call them of his Household?
 Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing Covered,
 that shall not be Revealed; and Hid, that shall not be Known.

What I tell you in Darkness, that speak ye in Light:
and what you Hear in the ear, that Preach ye upon the Housetops...

He that Receiveth you Receiveth me, and he that Receiveth me,
Receiveth him that Sent me....

No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and
love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other.
You cannot serve God and Mammon.

Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought of your life,
what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your
body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat,
and the body than raiment?

Behold the fowls of the air; for they sow not, neither do they
reap, nor gather into barns; yet your Heavenly Father feedeth
them. Are ye not much better than they?

Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature?
And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field,
how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin:

And yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not
arrayed like one of these.

Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which today is,
and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more
clothe you, O ye of little faith?

Therefore take no thought, saying, What will we eat? or,
What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed?

(For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your
Heavenly Father Knoweth that ye have need of all these things.
But seek ye first the Kingdom of God, and his Righteousness,
and all these things shall be added unto you.

Take therefore no thought for the morrow; for the morrow
shall take thought for the things of itself.
Sufficient unto the day is the Evil thereof.

...All things are Delivered unto me of my Father: and no man Knoweth
the Son, but the Father; neither Knoweth any man the Father
save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will Reveal him.
– Matthew 5:37, 43-47; 7:1-5, 7-12, 15-20; 10:16, 25-27, 40; 6:24-34; 11:27
[Of course, Jesus gave many more instructions than those listed above,
but there is so much negative Judgment in most of them, I don't
believe Jesus said them.]

II
MY CONFESSION: PRELUDE TO DIVINE SONSHIP

We were born before the wind
 Also younger than the sun
 Ere the bonnie boat was won
 As we sailed into the Mystic

Hark, now hear the sailors cry
 Smell the sea and feel the sky
 Let your soul and spirit fly into the Mystic

Yeah, when that fog horn blows
 I will be coming home
 Yeah when that fog horn blows
 I wanna hear it, don't have to fear it
 And I wanna rock your gypsy soul
 Just like in the days of old
 Then magnificently we will float into the Mystic
 – Van Morrison, “Into The Mystic”
 [Van the Man really nailed this song
 off his Moondance album.]

I've been interested in the idea of Divine Sonship ever since I became one on June 27, 1970, at about 11 p.m., at Coronation Park, at the CNE in downtown Toronto during the two-day rock concert called the Festival Express. I have learned since that this was part of the evolving Manifestation of the Sons of God in the Material World. But before we deal with my New Birth it might be wise for me to share my experiences with God the Father, Jesus Christ, the Holy Spirit, and the Holy Bible that led to my moment of Enlightenment. The following account comes as the result of a ruthless self-analysis dealing with forgotten trauma. I hope I do not bore you. I must admit that Sigmund Freud's talking cure really works if you're honest about yourself. I'm not proud of everything I've done, but I've lived most of life in a state of Grace because the Lord Jesus Christ Died for my Sins. But there was a time when it was different.

Presidio Days

My first experience which I can remember was in Kansas City, Kansas, while my Army Officer father, a Major at the time, worked with a local National Guard unit. I believe I was six years old at the time. I had been raised a Christian, but neither of my parents were very religious. My father's mother was a pastor's daughter from the Midwest and lived in Fresno, California, with my grandfather, Edgar Nichols, who had been a member of the Fresno Police Department and then a private investigator, and upon retirement, did carpentry on various projects.

Everyone called my grandpa, "Doc," because he had delivered a baby in his squad car while still with the FPD. Another humorous note on his time with the FPD was the fact that his squad car was the first to have its radio stolen after the FPD became radio dispatched. He parked it in front of a coffee shop, and was inside when it was stolen. I learned this last thing after he was dead when the Fresno Bee published the account in the "20 Years Ago section."

Anyway, my father had been wounded in the hedgerows of Normandy in WWII, after which he recuperated at an Army hospital in the San Francisco Bay Area, where he met my mother who was an Army officer nurse from Alameda, California. I was subsequently born at Letterman Hospital in the San Francisco Presidio at 9:26 a.m., on May 2, 1947. We lived in a house near Golden Gate Park for my first year, but I have no memory of it. My mother would tell me that the roaring of the lions at the nearby zoo kept her awake at night.

When I was one year old my father was ordered to Ft. Benning, Georgia, for additional training; I was left with my grandparents in Fresno for six months. For some reason my mother went with him without me because she was having problems raising her first child and was a

nervous wreck. My mother was also a pathological liar and later told me that she had left me behind with my grandparents because there was an ongoing June bug epidemic in the South at that time.

I believed her until I experienced June bugs for the first time when I was in my thirties, and found them to be harmless. I used to flick them off the back porch screen door from our house across the street from Fresno High School and I enjoyed the hissing sound they would make when they realized that I was fooling around with them. This was one of the lesser lies my mother told me, but those are stories best left to the shrinks.

My grandmother was very religious and taught me by example, even though all that I can remember during that period was having my diaper changed on their kitchen table. After my father returned from training he was ordered to the Monterey Presidio. This was right around the time that Ed Ricketts – “Doc” in John Steinbeck’s Cannery Row – was killed by the Del Monte Express when his car stalled on the tracks. Ricketts had called the Monterey Peninsula the Great Tide Pool, and had cofounded the Pacific Biological Laboratories on the spot where the Monterey Bay Aquarium stands today.

My parents had been huge fans of Cannery Row, the comedy novel Steinbeck wrote for the American troops coming home at the end of WWII. They wanted to be able to laugh again and Steinbeck rewarded us all with this very funny novel. I wish I could have heard and remembered Dad and Mom’s conversations about Ricketts following his tragic death.

My mother would tell me that the quarters we lived in at the Presidio was haunted by an old dead cavalry officer, and she would really freak out when she heard what she described as

boot heels walking on the old wood floors at night. Her father was Welsh, and I believe she had a bit of the old Celtic witch in her. She had an overactive imagination or a guilty conscience because most old houses make unexplainable noises.

Whenever my brother, sister, and I heard weird noises in our house, we just laughed and blamed it on George the Ghost. Where we got that name is still a mystery to me. Lately, when recalling those incidents, I have strong suspicions that it was not George, but the ghost of my dead Victorian grandmother, who haunted my mom's dwellings out of spite for her not having her grandson before she died.

For example, right after I moved into our family residence on East Keats in October 2000, strange things kept happening. Like the night I adjusted the old electric Seth Thomas mantle clock to 9:26 a.m., the time of my birth – where it would stay since there seemed to be no modern way of hooking up its antiquated electrical system. It had a crystal glass casing over its face and after I opened it, set the time, then closed it, I sat back to take a good long look at it. Suddenly, the crystal glass casing just snapped off and crashed on the floor in a dozen pieces. I felt a strange presence. It was like an angry ghost upset over the time of my birth.

Later, after living there for a few years, a lady came to visit me late one night but I had forgotten she was coming over and fell asleep on the couch watching TV. She told me later that when she knocked on the door an old lady had answered and told her that I was not home. I told her that no old lady lived at my house, that I lived there alone, and perhaps she had gotten the wrong house mixed up with mine. It had to be, I explained, because there were no old ladies in any of the houses on my block. She waved her hand at my living room and said she looked in at

the time and saw inside the house. She didn't see me but swore it was the same house.

My mother died at 75, but she didn't fit the description the girl gave to me. Besides, she hadn't died at the house but at the Nancy Hinds Hospice. That's when I flashed on the idea of the ghost of my dead grandmother that I never saw but I wasn't taking any chances. I'm no longer bothered by her for I performed a full exorcism in every room of my house. I figured she had haunted my mother while she lived and stayed at the house after she died in order to haunt me for not being born in time for her to hold me in her arms. But that's another story.

In fact, I've had a flood of old memories since I moved back to the East Keats residence. I thought of my residence in the beginning as Psycho House, but because of the old traumas I've remembered and relived, I now think of it as Therapy House.

My mother was extremely careless when it came to situations where I could be hurt – obvious things that most mothers understand. For example she often told the story of her learning how to drive in Pacific Grove, which is very hilly. She said I would laugh hysterically when she slammed on the brakes of my dad's Oldsmobile, which sent me careening to the floor, banging me around. She also told me how stupid I was when I fell off a cement platform that lined a set of steps to some building on Kodiak Island and broke my nose for the first time. I fell forward unable to stop myself because of the cold I had my hands in the pockets of my pea coat. That was something that was easily foreseeable. But she was able to dismiss her negligence without a second thought. My "accidents" were simply and solely my own stupidity.

The same was true when I wanted to play with my new sled when I was three. It was really cold outside and she didn't feel like taking me someplace far where I could safely play.

She solved the problem by taking me out to the parking lot. I was having fun and thought I could sled under a car, but I banged my head on the car's differential and almost lost consciousness. She would always laugh when she told this story, blaming it again on my stupidity.

North to Alaska

But I get ahead of myself. After Monterey, our next destination was Fort Richardson, in Anchorage, Alaska. The war with Korea was taking place at the time and we were always on high alert. My dad had spent the first years of WWII stationed in Alaska, when the Japanese invaded the Aleutians, so that is likely why he was ordered there instead of Korea.

In fact, while stationed there in September 1943, he saw the uncle, Major Frank Taylor Gash, Jr., of one of my high school friends, Frank Taylor Gash III, take off with his B-24 Liberator on his last mission, which was to lead a squadron of the Army's 11th Air Force on a bombing run over the Japanese installations on the Japanese Island, Paromushiro. He had led a similar raid a month earlier and had earned American aviators' respect by being elected President of the prestigious "I Bombed Japan Club." One imagines the Doolittle raid survivors as being the first in this small group of aviators.

Frank later played for me a video created by some kind of historical society preserving true stories from World War II, and the interviewee pilot, part of Major Gash's squadron, was flying in formation on the way home when they came under Jap Zero attack, and notes sadly as he watches Major Gash's plane going down into the brink, with machineguns firing to the bitter end: "Well, boys, there goes Frank." His mother was presented later that year with the Distinguished Flying Cross for heroism in leading the attacks.

By the way, the original Frank Taylor Gash was an infantryman in WWI and suffered the effects of being gassed in the trenches to his dying day. Some nights Frank and I would take his old WWI rifle out in the fogs and fire 50 year old ammunition at selected targets. That rifle had quite a kick.

Frank's father was a naval officer and had been the radar operator on the U.S.S. Helena, a heavy cruiser in the South Pacific sunk by a Jap torpedo. He abandoned ship and had to swim for it in shark infested waters to a nearby island. We used to get in discussions with him whenever we talked about the Second World War. He always told us that logistics were always at the center of any successful winning strategy, and that made sense to us.

Anyway, on our family's way to Alaska we stayed briefly with an old couple that my parents knew in Tacoma, until my brother was born in Ft. Lewis. Then we embarked for Alaska. I have flash memories of this period: a great fire that nearly burnt Ft. Richardson to the ground; a mess hall across the street from our quarters totally on fire; a group of firemen trying to put it out; a coffee can that kept rising and falling in a smokestack.

My mom said she had lined the windows with wet towels and thought we were all going to die. I just thought it was hilarious each time the coffee can came up the smokestack, and was rolling on the floor when one of the firemen was left behind by the fire engine, and then the comedy of him running after it.

Then there were the green shades on my bedroom window to keep out the light from the Midnight Sun; my dad leading parades; riding on a tank and in an Army amphibious vehicle while it left the road and entered a ditch; riding my red pedal fire engine with my red plastic fire

helmet in our basement, a little blonde girl in the neighborhood behind me, her hands on my shoulders, while I pulled the cord that rang the bell on the hood. I loved being happy and rarely let things get me down. I'm still the same today.

Not to forget the constant bummer of having to humor my mentally defective brother; not getting to play with my Lionel train set which I got for Christmas because I was not old enough to work it and the torture of watching my dad play with it with his Army buddies as they all got drunk together; helping my mother break the family china when my dad didn't show up for a special dinner one night: I remember slamming down a coffee cup on the floor under the table over and over again, unable to break it because I was so small, then my mother in full fury taking it from my hand and throwing it against the wall, shattering it to pieces; and finally the temper tantrum I threw when my dad wouldn't take my picture – while I was decked out in my cowboy suit with a six-gun and holster belt – because he was doing something else.

My mother really didn't have the mental capacity to deal with me. First, she tried to free her time by putting me in the Ft. Richardson child-care facility. But most of the kids there were from non-commissioned officer families and they would pick on me because I was an officer's son. I kept getting into fights and finally I was no longer welcome there. My dad came up with another solution: he had one of his privates, a Gomer Pyle type, named Dale, assist my mother around the household. This served two purposes: childcare, and a watch upon my mother's extracurricular activities.

But, like I said, Dale was the Fort patsy so to speak, and thus his sense of humor was moronic. One evening I got so scared because Dale hid from me while waiting for a bus after

getting a haircut and not coming out of hiding while I cried and cried. I never felt so alone and abandoned as I did that evening. I was so traumatized I can't remember how I got home. But it was a convenient way for my mom to get rid of the spying eyes of my father and she took advantage of every opportunity she got to fool around.

It wasn't easy humoring my weird brother. He would often hide in the closet sucking three of his right fingers with his special blanket. He was rarely happy. He really started to lose it when he was twenty and was eventually diagnosed as a paranoid schizophrenic. I had no doubt that that was an accurate diagnosis.

And before I forget: watching Santa Claus descend in an Army helicopter at the Fort. This would later get me in trouble in Kindergarten in Kansas City when my teacher met in conference with my mother and told her to tell me to cease telling such unbelievable lies to the other children, and for an example, repeated the story of me watching Santa Claus landing in an helicopter in Alaska, because it was close to the North Pole.

My mom corrected her – one of the rare times my mother took my side on a matter – saying that it was a true story. The teacher then told my mother that I was rebellious because I wouldn't sleep during nap time and I wouldn't take my blue jean cowboy jacket off for our class picture when it was really hot outside. My mother informed her that I believed I was a cowboy and cowboys always wear their jackets. I still have that class picture. If only she had continued to stick up for me; go figure.

Speaking of Santa Claus, I was in awe of him so much I froze when I sat in his lap one Christmas after bragging about what I was going to say to him. But my tongue got stuck and I

just sat there the whole time he did his “Ho, ho, ho,” act. My brother mocked me afterwards and I had a hard time living that one down.

My last memory of the Alaska period was playing on the rails of the ship taking us back to the Bottom Forty-eight – Alaska was still a Territory at the time. I also remember life boat drills; the piping for meal times; watching a movie with my brother while mother suffered in bed from seasickness. And the hilarious episode where my brother accidentally let go of his helium balloon and then cried so much many of the sailors chased it for him – which was like a comedy of errors – and I couldn’t stop laughing, until it sailed beyond the bow into oblivion.

Not to mention the call that came over the loudspeakers that a whale could be seen on the starboard-side bow; but after I rushed to the site I was unable to spot any whales and was very disappointed. My dad told me later that he had seen it and I was mad at him because he didn’t get me in time. When I think of it now, I used to get mad at my dad all the time, even though I hero worshipped him.

Kansas City

After two years in Alaska my dad was promoted to Major, where he was then ordered to head the National Guard unit in Kansas City. We lived in a red brick apartment complex in Kansas City, Kansas, just across the Missouri River from Kansas City, Missouri. I remember some nights crossing the river to the other side where there was an outdoor drive in theater. My dad would point to an area above the river where he said the water reached the year before in a great flood as we crossed the bridge.

So, my mom would make a big bag of popcorn and we would sit on the front fenders of

my dad's Buick and listen to the movie coming out of the box speakers hanging from the driver's side windows. The world seemed so right in those days.

I was in love with my mother before my brother started falsely accusing me for the things he had done. I thought of her as a movie star: she was blonde (she called her hair "dirty blonde"), blue eyed, and left handed. She was a looker which blinded me for awhile until I started to get hip to her evil ways.

I used to compare her in my mind with Dinah Shore who had a popular show on TV at the time – "See the USA in Your Chevrolet" – especially with singers like Eddie Fisher, who sang big hits like "Oh, My Papa" – my dad really liked this song and always enjoyed my version of it when I sang it to him. Anyway, that movie-star image of my mother rather rapidly changed due to my brother. The fact is that I cannot recall a single time that my mother ever told me that she loved me.

Of course, I resembled the men on her side of the family – the Welsh Craddocks, whom she hated with a fury – while my brother resembled my father, who was from Scottish blood. Both of my parent's distance ancestors – from Scotland and Wales – settled in the New World in the 1750's. Of course I can't swear that my resemblance to her father's side of the family was the reason she liked my brother best, but it serves as a guideline nevertheless.

I attended a Lutheran parochial school in the first grade and would often come home with tape across my mouth because I talked in class too much. My mom then told me one of the most outrageous of her lies. She promised me that if I was ever in trouble or was scared of something I had done, to always be honest and tell her the truth and I wouldn't get into trouble. One day on

the playground I tried to climb the chain link fence that enclosed the yard and when I reached the top my new shirt got caught on one of the link prongs at the top and ripped. When my mother asked me what had happened, I gladly told her truth believing that I wouldn't be punished. Sucker! She promptly punished me and when I reminded her of her promise to me, she punished me more for being insolent. I rarely told her the truth after that.

The really cool thing about going to this school was getting rides from my dad in his Army jeep. Being dropped off in front of the other kids gave me a great deal of confidence handling the work in the First Grade. I went to a normal school in the Second Grade because I didn't get along with the Lutheran teachers, who were like nuns, and I learned that what I had studied in the First Grade was the same as what was being taught in the Second Grade, which was really boring to me going over the same stuff I had already learned: "Look at Tom run down the road", "See Spot run down the road" – that kind of stuff. I was always the first to raise my hand.

My home situation got even worse when my brother was three. He discovered that when he broke something and blamed it on me, my mother would believe him and punish me twice: once for the broken object, and twice for not admitting I had done it. I would plead my case, but in vain. I couldn't stand the pure evil look my brother gave me when she believed him over me. He was not only weird but also sadistic. He loved getting me into trouble. My grandfather thought he was a bad seed and I had to intervene one night when he got so pissed off for what my brother was doing that he beat him over the head with a brass ashtray.

My mother struggled with her feelings for my brother until, finally, when I was in my

forties he threatened to kill her and I was forced to get a restraining order against him. When my mother was on her deathbed at a local hospice dying from ovarian cancer, she wouldn't even let me tell my brother. My mother didn't go into that sweet night without a struggle.

She once called me to her bedside and placed my hand under the sheet onto her stomach. I reeled back in shock. It felt like fiberglass! She then told me the medical name for it, but she said it with that old weird smile of hers, meaning she had enjoyed shocking me. She held on for a quite a time, for it was during the first Hmong Rape trial and I was on the local news TV stations almost every day. On the day I told her I had won – hanging the jury 10-2 against my client – she nodded her head, and an hour or so later, said softly, “I’m leaving now,” and she never said an intelligible word again for the two days or so before she gave up the ghost. I learned what a death rattle was the hard way. She died on Columbus Day, October 12, 1998.

I guess that her holding on for the length of the trial was her way of saying that she really loved me. At least I like to think that.

I didn't get a chance to tell my brother for a few months. He was carrying on a conversation with an invisible audience on the Fulton Mall outside my law office when I told him that mom was dead. He was devastated and I almost felt sorry for him.

Back in Kansas, my dad took my brother and me to work one day and we got to shoot an M1 Garand at the in-door rifle range. I missed my target by a mile. Years later, when I was in Basic Training at Fort Ord, I caught a chill on a two mile run to the beach shooting range (we used the amazing M14) and spent three days in the hospital with a fever. I saw Casablanca for the first time while recovering in bed, and read a science fiction book about the world uniting to

repel an alien threat, bringing my mission from Xenon to mind (see below).

These three days were vital training to passing the shooting test and I feared not passing and being recycled to begin all over again the training from square one. Fortunately, the day after I got out of the hospital we took the test and I shot Expert. At least I had learned something. I am still a damn good shot and believe strongly in the Second Amendment, enacted to protect my God-given Right to possess and bear arms.

Meanwhile back in Kansas City, my dad then gave us a tour of the stock yards and explained the role of cowboys and cattle drives in Kansas City history. And then my dad would hit the bars, and my brother and I would amuse ourselves with bottles of Squirt and play the table shuffle board game that was in almost every bar. My dad loved drinking in bars in the afternoons.

In the summer we would visit my dad's old Air Force buddy in Tennessee and I got to see the Mississippi River when we crossed it in St. Louis. I learned when hiking through the woods in Tennessee with Lee – my dad's old Air Force buddy's daughter – that you had to check the back of your neck every few minutes because you would almost always find a wood tick there. I also went frogging and managed to prong one with the skewers provided. I remember that the legs tasted exactly like chicken when they were barbequed.

And, of course, there is the time I almost drowned in the pool at the air force military base. I didn't know how to swim and I was with a bunch of kids jumping into the deep end right by the ladder, then grabbing the ladder and climbing back, where you would do it again. Unfortunately, I jumped too far out and missed grabbing the ladder. I was on the bottom of the

pool and I was sure I was going to die.

I then got the idea to walk to the ladder which I did eventually, collapsing on the cement poolside, trying to catch my breath. As I lay on my back, the lifeguard scolded me for playing in the deep end. He said he almost dived in to rescue me but wanted to see if I could do it myself. Wow, you had to drown before he helped you. Drowning, in fact, is my greatest fear. I wouldn't be able to hold out for too long if I was being waterboarded.

We were the first to get a television set in the apartment complex we lived in, so our apartment ended up being a magnet for all the neighborhood kids. I had been a radio addict before then, loving the Lone Ranger show. But the TV blew me away. I remember watching the Howdy Doody Show, where Clarabell the Clown would open up the huge Hostess Cupcake where the camera would then zoom in on the white cream filling inside, where an old black and white cartoon would then be shown. And they would always televise the skating rink in Rockefeller Square, where people skated under the gigantic Christmas tree.

I also recall the TV hosts talking to their children audience as if they could really see us, getting us to go into the kitchen, get the brand of cereal they were selling, and then show him the box of Frosted Flakes or whatever cereal, again as if they could really see us. Ah, the golden age of advertising. And I'm astounded when I remember the amount of sugar we would pour on our bowl of cereal, scooping it off the bottom of the bowl with a spoon when the cereal was all gone.

I also remember the premiere of my favorite show, Superman, and wished that I could join him in his fight for truth, justice and the American Way. I remember that I used to know how to fly like Superman in my dreams, but the day came that I forgot how. I also watched

almost every old “B” Western that had been filmed in Hollywood and was a huge fan of Hopalong Cassidy.

In fact, on my sixth birthday, my mother told me that if I could blow all of the candles out on my birthday cake with one breath, I could make a secret wish that would be granted as long as I didn’t tell anyone about it. I secretly wished for a Hopalong Cassidy outfit and waited until my seventh birthday for my wish to be granted. I never told anyone about it.

My wish was never granted and when I complained to my mother she told me I must have told someone and to forget about it. Anyway my parents fought a lot and after a heated argument my father would tell my mother to take a pill – she was on prescription tranquilizers – after which he would play around with us at our bedroom window then head off to his favorite watering hole. He gave me a beer once at a party in Alaska when I was three and after drinking it I went to sleep and peed in my bed. My mother was furious.

I was so into cowboys that I loved watching country and western bands on TV with their cowboy outfits, but my mom hated the music and would always turn it off, claiming it was music for ignorant Okies. I really liked Hank Williams, Patsy Cline and similar artists, but I must admit that I like the music better now that it so closely resembles rock’n’roll.

And now, back to that experience I was talking about at the beginning. During the time we lived in Kansas City I kept having this weird experience after I said my prayers at night. The prayer my mother taught me had an eerie affect on me, for the last line was, “If I should die before I wake, I pray the Lord my soul to take.” It made me afraid of going to sleep because I might not wake up. But then I would feel an invisible hand on my chest gently pressing down.

In fact, I came to depend upon this experience for peace of mind since I was unable to sleep until it happened.

I asked my mother what it was and she told me that I should save the question and raise it with my grandmother the next time they telephoned Fresno. That time came a few months later, and when I asked my grandmother whose hand was on my chest, she said that it was Jesus tucking me in for the night. That satisfied my fears and like I said, I came to depend upon it for the several months that it lasted.

I remember watching Eisenhower taking his oath of office live on the Kindergarden television. My parents were Democrats and wanted Adlai Stevenson to be elected, but he lost. I remember during Presidential elections all three television channels would carry the conventions from start to finish, so we watched them since that was all that was on TV. We used to love it when each State cast its ballot; the state's spokespersons would give lavish introductions about the greatness of their State before they cast their vote. TV hardly carries those any more. But now there are hundreds of channels to watch, so does it really matter? I believe something has been lost in our culture, but I'm just an old man now.

Anyway, back in Kansas, as the result of zealous neighbors I attended a Southern Baptist church's Sunday School as a guest, and soon became resented by the elders for winning a lottery for a candy treasure. The Sunday School students were all given a key with numbers on it and I held the winning one, even though they did all they could to disqualify me because I was only a guest. And even though I eventually won the treasure my mother took it away from me and made me share it with my crazy brother. I remember him laughing at me whenever we opened our

Cracker Jack boxes, because he always got the better prize. I never cared about church after that.

One of the best experiences I had while living in Kansas was the dawn of 3D movies. I saw my first one in Witchita while my dad was attending some kind of conference. The cardboard 3D glasses were kind of cool, with red and green cellophane lenses, and the screen looked really weird when you took them off. It was a John Wayne movie called Hondo, and I thrilled to the arrows that looked like they were coming right at you, making you duck behind the seat in front of you. I was really angry when the Indians killed Hondo's dog.

I relived that experience a few months later back in Kansas City when we went to see Charge of the Feather River, with Guy Madison, the star of the TV series The Adventures of Wild Bill Hickok, with Jingles his sidekick, played by Andy Divine, weighing in at over 300 pounds. He was always lagging behind, begging Hickok to wait for him. I really liked that show.

I also loved The Wonderful World of Disney, especially the series on Davy Crockett. I really wanted a coonskin cap and asked my mother for one, but she bought one and gave it to my brother instead. She didn't try to hide the fact that she liked him more than me. My brother loved it until our sister was born. All of my mother's attention after that was spent on creating the same bond with my sister as she had had with her mother. My brother was bitterly jealous, but I thought it was hilarious. Well, I have to admit that I was a little jealous also.

I remember that the summers were a paradise for kids. We were never bothered with the horrible humidity or the hatchings of insects on a grand scale. I was reminded of this years later when I spent nine weeks upriver at the Disciplinary Barracks at Ft. Leavenworth in the summer

of 1973. One day I was called out of my mess hall duty to report to the JAG office, and as I walked out into the courtyard that separated the various buildings, the entire ground, nearly every inch of it, like a moving carpet, was crawling with crickets. It was like a Biblical plague. I had to walk over them, for there was no other choice, and the whole way was crunch, crunch, crunch.

The summer storms were incredible. My wing of maximum security prison cells was eight tiers high – my individual cell was on the 6th tier – and at nights after lights out at 11 p.m., I would lay back on my bed and enjoy the magnificent claps of thunder as they rolled through the area between the windows and the cells. I loved lights out because all the cell doors were locked shut and the jungle was closed for the night. It was the only time I felt safe in prison.

Yes, lights out. That was the cue for several of the blacks to start singing, “Duke of Earl.” A black a few tiers below me would start with, “Duke, Duke, Duke,” and then a few more would join in, and they sang the song perfectly. They sang it every night I was there. Another black inmate called himself the Undertaker, with his DJ station down in the basement across from the “Tombs,” the solitary confinement cells, where the guards would beat the shit out of you before tossing you inside. He was a great disc jockey. He didn’t just play album cuts, he would play the whole album, and one night he went through the entire Rolling Stones repertoire, album by album, which gave me some kind of enjoyment while in captivity.

Each cell had three plug in ports with a cord and plug in which to choose. There were three channels: Rock, Soul, and Country and Western. The Undertaker played rock on the Rock channel, and when he wasn’t hosting, the Prison would play the underground FM station out of Kansas City. One night they played the whole Dark Side of the Moon album by Pink Floyd.

That was really bitchin’.

Ah, the Tombs. That was almost my fate one day in the mess hall. Leavenworth had a majority black population, about 80%, with whites constituting about 8%. They ruled the place. Well, I was on mess hall duty full time, in the table clean-up crew, when one of the blacks in the dishwashing crew thought I was taking too much time in bussing the next load of dishes to them. He was a tall, skinny black, and he walked from the kitchen to my station and confronted me angrily, asking what was the holdup. I waved to two black men at separate tables taking their sweet time in finishing. When he saw that he was out of order he got even madder. I stiffened and clenched my right fist at my side, ready for his attack.

Then I caught his eye, and nodded to the front doors where two guards were watching us closely. If you got caught fighting, it didn’t matter if you started it, for you both were taken to the Tombs for punishment. We both were very aware of that and I hoped he would follow my nod and see what fate awaited a bad decision. His buddies were all gathered at the kitchen entrance, waiting to see what their buddy would do. When he finally backed down and returned to his crew, they all heckled him as I sighed in relief.

Later as I was cleaning off the tables another of the crew, a short stocky black, very muscular, that worked out daily with weights, approached me and said, “You lookin’ for a fight, Whitey?”

I smiled at him. “I’m not that stupid,” I responded. He nodded and walked away and none of that crew ever bothered me again. I had gained their respect, whereas the tall skinny guy got a hard time from them forever after. I learned how volatile mess hall duty could be. After

all, I had replaced another white guy who had been given the “he dropped a dime” treatment, which constituted having a blanket tossed over your head, and then being battered with combination locks inside socks. He came into the mess hall several weeks later and his face was all stitched up like Frankenstein’s monster.

One night I was awakened at about 2:30 in the morning. My job was three days on and one day off, alternating between morning shift and afternoon shift. I was supposed to be awakened at 4 a.m. for the morning shift, but like I said, it was only 2:30. “I don’t have to get up until 4,” I told the guard.

“Just get up,” the guard said, “the Sarge wants to see you downstairs.”

The Sergeant was sitting on a fold up chair before a card table covered with files. “Ok, Nichols,” he said, “you want to tell me what happened?”

“I was hoping you could tell me,” I replied, still at a loss over what this could be about.

“Don’t give me any of that shit,” he retorted, his voice rising a bit.

“I don’t have an idea why I’m here, Sergeant.”

“Are you afraid of dropping a dime?”

“Over what? I am not lying, I really have no idea.” I could see he was not believing me, but there was nothing else I could do.

He then related to me the events behind his investigation. It seems like the new Hispanic very-young looking inmate didn’t go to lunch with the rest of the tier and while he was alone in his cell, five cells down from me on my tier, a gangster black thug assaulted him with a few of his friends. The black had earlier tried to make the Hispanic his new bitch, but the Hispanic had

refused and then was stupid enough to remain alone in his cell afterwards. They stripped him, sodomized him, then wrapped the radio plug-in cord around his neck and then attached the cord to the bed and shoved him beneath it so that he was slowly being strangled to death. Mercifully, I had slept through the whole thing, and I told him so.

“Are you meaning to tell me,” he went on, thinking he was setting a trap, “that you didn’t wake up when they rolled the gurney in front of your cell?”

“I was sleeping, Sarge; I swear it. I would tell you what I knew otherwise.”

He dismissed me and at the morning shift, I worried that we would all be accused of dropping a dime and receive the required beating. But fortunately, the victim awoke from his coma and fingered the guilty parties. Another sigh of relief.

The black people were not the only threat in Leavenworth. A young white man who manned the other drop-your-plates-off booth on the opposite side of the mess hall was imprisoned for the attempted murder of his commanding officer – he had thrown a live grenade into his commander’s tent. He was a crazy environmentalist who hated me for taking large sheets of butcher paper and lining my booth with them because the prisoners handing in their plates were quite messy about it, and a lot of food ended up on the floor.

When he complained to me about how many trees I was killing to make my work easier, I confronted him with his crime. His retort: “Trees don’t kill people!” I could see the look of murder on his face but I feared him not. I kept taking large sheets of butcher paper until my last day and he never did a damn thing about it. I would gladly have gone to the Tombs if he ever made a move. I really didn’t like that guy.

On the walls at the rear of the mess hall an amateur artist – who later got the electric chair – drew several murals, one of which depicted a farm house and a country road that ran in front of it that meandered over a hill and out of sight. I would often stare at that mural and imagine walking down that road to where ever it led, and perhaps the artist found out when he was electrocuted.

The music was really great that summer. “China Grove,” by the Doobies, “Smoke on the Water,” by Deep Purple, and “Touch Me in the Morning,” by Diana Ross, played over and over on the radio and I never got tired of them.

By far my most enjoyable experience during my nine weeks at Leavenworth was in the morning shift when the sun would magnificently rise over the Missouri River. I would view this through the mess hall’s massive windows and the sunrises were truly awesome. Also, on Friday afternoons a civilian band, drums and horns and all, would play hit songs in the mess hall, like “Hawaii Five-O” and other big band songs.

I spent most of my free time in the Library reading the New York Times, the Washington Post, and the Wall Street Journal, for their coverage on Watergate. The revelation that Nixon had recorded all of his conversations was music to my ears. In the end, I got the same pardon from President Ford (the only unelected President in history) that Nixon got.

Anyway, back down river in Kansas City in the early Fifties, we would have fun with the fireflies, which we called lightning bugs. The little girl upstairs would tear off their light source on the bottom of their bellies and make rings by sticking them on every one of her fingers like a fairy princess. I would capture them in jars with holes punched in the lids, and some times they

would escape inside our apartment and my mother would really freak out. For some reason I always enjoyed that.

I would play Cootie on the stair well inside our apartment unit with the little girl and one evening during a thunder storm when the thunder clapped really loud, she threw up her partially constructed Cootie and ran upstairs to her bedroom. I followed her until she hid under her bed. She was pathologically scared of thunder but I thought it was hilarious. We resumed the game next to her bed after I collected all the scattered pieces on the stairs and every time it thundered we would throw up our Cooties and laugh like hell.

My brother was unbelievable at dinner time. He would refuse to finish his dinner and I had to wait until he was through before I was allowed to leave the table. My brother would resist my mother's scolding, but as soon as he heard the ice cream truck coming down our street, he would wolf it all down in time to get his ice cream dessert. I believe he did that in order to bug me. He enjoyed being the favorite child until the arrival of my sister, where he soon took second fiddle, as I had when he was born.

Toward the end of our Kansas City life, my brother and I were sent home from school early one day because of an approaching tornado. We didn't take the bus home, but walked over the hill to our apartment through a housing development. My brother cried almost the whole way, and when we were about halfway home he told me that he thought mom and dad were breaking up because of the intensity of their arguing. I tried to cheer him up by telling him that they always argued that way, sometimes throwing things at each other, and that seemed to calm him down. The tornado missed us by ten miles which almost made me sad because I really

wanted to see one.

One last thing. When I was seven, right before we moved back to Fresno, I had my first sexual experience with a girl. My parents had gone someplace for the evening and had hired a twelve-year-old babysitter who had brothers of her own. After a while she showed us how to arouse ourselves and then proceeded to jack off both me and my brother. I was very excited for awhile, but because one day when my dad had seen me idly playing with myself before taking a shower, he had told me that God didn't like me doing that – well, after awhile I started thinking about that and it ruined the fun of it. Wow, sexual guilt at seven years of age. What a crazy world. My dad had five wives. What a hypocrite.

Fresno Again

When my father got promoted to Lt. Colonel and was given orders to head a regiment in South Korea, we moved to Fresno temporarily. My dad drove us to Fresno down Route 66 in his two-toned Buick, and my favorite stops along the way were the Painted Desert where I bought an Indian blanket made by the Navajo in a booth by the wayside, and the Grand Canyon. I was really into American Indians and loved the Sante Fe Train Calendars, where each year was covered by a portrait of a famous Indian chief.

I was in seventh heaven when we arrived in Fresno and discovered that the local dairy – Producers – had a picture of Hopalong Cassidy on the label, and declared that it was “Hoppy’s Favorite.” I still drink it today, even though the Hoppy label is long gone. Happy California cows now adorn the label.

Before we got a new house in Fresno, we stayed at my grandfather’s house on University

Avenue, just off Fresno Street, down the street from the Eules Park baseball stadium. My grandpa would take my brother and me to the ballgames and we would sit in the Parker's Pipe box seats, stomping our feet during rally's and always going home before the game was over when it was looking very bad for the home team. Grandpa was almost always right about the outcome. The most fun came when some one would pop up a foul ball and everyone would be silent and watch to see if the ball left the park, then wait in suspense waiting for the ball to land on someone's car roof with a metallic thud! Then we all would wince and hope it wasn't our car that got hit.

In the early days of television, when it was still a novelty, families would get together around their pianos, and sing together new hit songs, and perform comedy acts. Two of my father's cousins, Francis and Milo, called themselves Pat and Mike, after a famous radio comedy duo. In fact, it wasn't until I was in my Thirties that I learned their real names because everyone called them Pat and Mike. They and their wives would gather around the piano and my grandmother would play the new music, and between songs, Pat and Mike would do their act. I assume this was normal fare for most American families before television took over.

I know that most black singers got their start singing Gospel in local churches, and I imagine the same holds true for most white singers: either church or from local gatherings around the piano. Then there was rock'n'roll, where singers gathered together in groups, singing on street corners or garages or wherever they could.

During those days, my grandmother would encourage us to look through the collection of National Geographic magazines they had accumulated. She knew how boys think and knew we

would get a slice of life in our study of the human anatomy when we saw the naked African tribal women. We loved staring at those pictures. My mother didn't like it and she and my grandmother never got along.

My dad was in town long enough to buy a new house on North Anna, off Fresno Street, between Blackstone and Dakota, that my mom had found. She had spent what seemed to me at the time, a long time finding it. But, California was still under the old law where a woman couldn't sign a contract without a male cosigner, so she had to wait for my father anyway. My dad seemed happy with the purchase and before we knew it he was off to Korea to head his regiment and prepare the way for the rest of us.

However, two tragedies intervened that made the move impossible. The first was my father given the choice between resigning his commission or being court martialed for disobedience of his Colonel's orders. He went to a local village that had been declared off limits because the Colonel had a Korean mistress there. My father was a ladies man and couldn't resist the temptation to have fun with the Colonel's mistress. Unfortunately, his Korean driver crashed his Jeep during a joy ride while he was having his fun, and the incident brought his hanky-panky to light. He chose to resign his commission. He eventually reenlisted for four years, rising to the rank of sergeant, but retiring at his highest rank of Lt. Colonel. But by then my mother had divorced him.

The second tragedy was my mother screwing around with local contractors and housing developers. Since my sister was still a toddler at this time, she would send my younger brother and me out into the many fields surrounding our house for at least two hours, while she had her

fun. We lived on the edge of the city, the country being just blocks away. Electrified fences kept livestock and horses within bounds and sometimes we would be chased by bulls if we took a shortcut through their grazing fields, but they would always halt before they got to the electrified fence, which we would hop over at the wooden posts; we would laugh at the bulls as they glared at us angrily. We also would dare each other to touch the fence, and I never got used to the shock it would give you.

On those occasions when we had to take two hour hikes we would leave my mother weaving old wool coats into strips, then forming them into rugs. I would notice that after being out in the fields for a couple of hours that she was at exactly the same spot weaving the rug that she had been when we started. So, once again she lied to me. But by then I was wise enough to not confront her on the matter.

One time one of the contractor's bought a couple of children's carpenter's belts with tools, and after putting them on we were to go outside and look for work at the several partially built houses in the neighborhood. I could never understand the amused looks the carpenters would give us as they declined to let us work because of insurance reasons, leaving my brother and I at leisure to set nails in the soft melting road pavement when it was over a hundred degrees outside, then wait until a car went by to see if they would run over it and get a flat tire.

I read my first book when I was seven years old – I believe it was Kit Carson written for a juvenile audience – the first of many to come. I devoured one book after another: books about General Custer, Crazy Horse, Wild Bill Hickok, Buffalo Bill Cody, Abraham Lincoln, U.S. Grant, Robert E. Lee. and many others. When I was older I tackled harder books to read by Mark

Twain, Alexander Dumas, Robert Louis Stevenson, Jules Verne, H.G. Wells, and Andre Norton, who made telepathy real to me. And I fell in love with the writings of Edgar Allan Poe.

I couldn't get enough of Classics Illustrated comic books, and thus received a well-rounded education – although shallow – in world literature. I loved science fiction and remember reading The Menace from Earth by Robert A. Heinlein, getting my first taste of adult science fiction. “By His Bootstraps” was a bizarre time travel story, and “Sky Lift” told of a torch pilot's sacrifice to get medicine to a colony on the planet Pluto. I liked this story much better than Tom Godwin's chicken-shit “The Cold Equations,” about a similar mission where a young girl stowaway is airlock-jettisoned because her extra weight wasn't factored in and her presence meant there would not be enough fuel to make the rescue. This was voted one of the best SF stories before 1965, but it is based on a stupid idea. I mean to me it was a no-brainer for the pilot to save the girl and take the chance that the colony would perish. Real saving of one life because you could, rather than blindly following orders in the hope of saving the many. It would have been a much better story if the author had taken the time to use science to figure out a way that nobody had to die, but go figure.

I had a good friend in the Fifth Grade, John Wilmouth, whose mother used to be an illustrator for Walt Disney. She worked on Fantasia and John would show me stills from the studio to prove it. He also had every Tarzan novel by Edgar Rice Burroughs, but he refused to loan them to me because he believed I would like them so much that I would never return them. When I asked my mother to buy me some she refused because she said I was not old enough to read him because he wrote for adults. I learned later that she and her fellow prudes regarded

Burroughs as a soft pornographer, even though his books pale in comparison to modern soft porn, like The Carpetbaggers by Harold Robbins.

My mother rapidly moved from our new house to a rental when she discovered that my father was coming home in disgrace. I asked my mother why we had to move, since the house was brand new and the rental was a crappy house in a crappy neighborhood. She told me that a contractor friend had told her the truth about our house, that is was located on property belonging to the Indians and all we were really doing was leasing it for 99 years. It wasn't until I took Real Property in Law School that I learned that this was one of her whopper lies.

Actually, the woman who worked in the office across the street from our new house was worried about my mother cheating on my father, because she observed the coming and goings of the contractors my mother was fooling around with. Anyway, during this period my mother attended a Methodist Church and I was forced to go to Sunday School, where I became aware of the Bible Stories for children, and received my first Bible, a Revised Standard Bible. I would glance through it, staring at the pictures, but never reading it.

I wasn't kidding when I said the rental was crappy. The backyard was overgrown with three foot high weeds so that when summer came we played outdoors in the front yards of the neighborhood. So that my mother could save money, all we wore were underwear and shorts. To save on shoes, we went barefoot. I remember having to wait until my sunburn peeled before I could play without pain. And those damn sticker vines that always presented a prong no matter its position on the ground. They weren't even indigenous to Fresno, but had been carried to the San Joaquin Valley on rubber tires from the Oakies as they migrated west from the Dirt Bowl in

the Thirties, like in Steinbeck's The Grapes of Wrath.

But every afternoon we would come inside for the Mickey Mouse Club. I believe I was in love with Annette (we all called her "full of Jello" for obvious reasons), along with every other red blooded male in America.

When my father returned my mother started to freak out. One night at a party at our crappy house, my dad got so drunk he passed-out in their bedroom bare naked, on the floor, his back propped up by the side of the bed, his genitalia fully exposed. My mother was furious, and grabbing all three of us by the arms, paraded us into the bedroom to behold his nakedness. I dread this memory even now, especially since it made me feel great shame.

Their fighting got worse and one night my mom drew an imaginary line on the living room floor and made us choose sides. This traumatized all three of us and we were unable to move, shaking and crying in mental torture. My dad stood there, drunk and frozen in disbelief because we weren't immediately choosing him.

He even got drunk in the day time. One time that really embarrassed me was when he had me read Rudyard Kipling's poem, "If -" out loud to him. When I reached the line that goes:

"Yours is the Earth and everything that's in it,
And – which is more – you'll be a Man, my son!"

– he was bawling like a baby. I had never seen my dad cry before but I guess that poem had special importance for him. One day I found his diary he wrote when he was in Normandy. He stated that he had read Psalm 91 to give him courage. He was shot in a Normandy apple orchard in the hedgerows by a Nazi machinegunner. He almost lost his leg. Afterwards, he was unable to engage in his favorite sport, skiing.

It wasn't until I was home on Christmas break from Officer Candidates School that I learned the true story of how he had been shot. I asked him about it while chowing down on a Crab Louie on Monterey's Fisherman's Wharf at some restaurant that Herb Cain had recommended in his column for the San Francisco Chronicle.

My dad landed on Omaha Beach at D + 11, eleven days after D-Day, to wit, on June 17, 1944. They marched into the interior meat grinder toward Saint Lo, and he told me that he became nauseous when passing dead bodies on the way. That night while they camped, a tank commander approached my dad requesting aid because an enemy artillery battery had zeroed in on them and was causing casualties.

My father then approached his commanding officers for permission to send out a patrol to locate it. The commanding officers had commandeered a French farm house and had helped themselves to its wine cellar. They were drinking around a table and invited my dad over for a drink. One thing led to another and while they were getting a buzz telling war stories, a shell landed right on top of the farmhouse, knocking them all to the floor. It was a farmhouse where the hay for the cattle was stored in the uppermost story of the farmhouse, and thus absorbed most of the impact, which is why they all survived. Otherwise they would have all been blown to hell.

"Hell, Nick," my father's commanding officer shouted as they all got to their feet, brushing the dust off their uniforms, "You've got to find that damned artillery battery and take it out before it kills us all!" My father had a buzz and he decided foolishly that only his officers and he would go out on the patrol, because he needed to show his men that they were worthy leaders and wouldn't send anyone out on a mission that they were not willing to do themselves.

Not one of them had combat experience and as they wandered through a hedgerow that contained an apple orchard, a Nazi machinegunner opened up on them. My father and one of his lieutenants were wounded; my father in the leg, the lieutenant in the stomach, which is often a slow and painful death. My dad ordered the other officers back to base to get a medic while he made a tourniquet for his leg and applied pressure on the lieutenant's wound.

The officers didn't know how to work a compass and got lost in the dark and it wasn't until late the next morning that they were found among the apple trees. Amazingly the lieutenant lived and my dad got a ticket home, which probably saved his life. The lesson that my father learned was not in time to be of any value. You just don't send all of your officers on a dangerous mission because if they are all killed, your unit has no more leaders.

Wow, I thought afterwards, as he drove us back to his house in Salinas, so that's why he never told us before. About halfway home he stopped next to a lettuce field, got out of the car, and wandered around for a bit before pulling up a big head of lettuce. He loved fresh salads and didn't see it as stealing. The visit didn't do anything to allay my brother's hatred of my father, feeling that way until my father died in December 1975 at the age of 62 from a massive heart attack. Anyway, I was slowly losing my father hero worship at the time.

In the summer we would have picnics in the public areas below Pine Flat Dam, and my mother would collect river rocks from the Kings River. We all had to participate and those rocks are still in my back yard in a stream-style rock garden. But boy I hated carrying them from the river to the car for some of them were pretty big and weighed a lot.

Once we had a large family gathering at the picnic spot and we would play in the

shallows of the swift moving cold water of the Kings River. I'll never forget the drubbing I took from a college age relative who would hold my head under water as he showed off in front of my mom in her bathing suit. I was screaming for her to stop him because he was almost drowning me but all she cared about was looking good and she didn't lift a hand or say a word to save me. I truly hated her for that for, like I said, drowning is my biggest fear.

Speaking of mental torture, another of my mom's sadistic quirks was to threaten to put us up for adoption every time we did something she didn't like. We believed her and we'd go to bed trembling on those nights, sometimes hurting from the whippings she would give me with my dad's riding crop. He carried one so he wouldn't put his hands in his pockets, a great sin for Army officers. I hated that damn thing. Finally, when I grew to my present height of 6' 2" at the age of 14, I grabbed it out of her hand and told her that I would punch her if she ever tried to whip me with it again. I took it and hid it out in the garage where she couldn't find it. She never hit me again.

My mom loved telling us weird stories, disregarding any argument that we were much too young to hear some them. For example, as an Army nurse she was assigned to an Army psych ward. She made friends with a very big, retarded patient that she called Lenny, after the Lenny in Steinbeck's Of Mice and Men. Her favorite tale was of the crazy soldier who had a huge handlebar mustache, who would smile lustfully at her and twirl the ends of the mustache whenever she passed by. Well, she showed him, for one night when he was sound asleep she snuck to his bed and cut the ends off with a pair of scissors. When he woke up the next morning he went stark raving mad, yelling that he was going to kill my mother, but he never had a chance,

for she called on Lenny to save her and he grabbed the guy and squeezed him tight. I believe she was transferred after that.

When I grew my first mustache when I was twenty, I remembered that story and told my mother that I would punch her if she ever tried anything like that on me. She complied, but only because there was no Lenny around to save her.

Another of her weird stories was about the first time I saw Ducee, one of her friend's bulldog. Ducee had enormous testicles and as my mother and several of her friends were gossiping around a table, I pointed to Ducee and said, "Ducee's got big balls," which set them off in hilarious laughter. I hated that story.

My mother was a great snoop. She had a Sherlock Holmes detective kit when she was a little girl and would search her older brother's bedroom to blackmail him with such things as she would find, like rubbers. She would experience great joy when telling these stories to us. She especially enjoyed the look of shock on our faces when she would show us pictures of her brother dressed as a girl by their strict Victorian mother. Later I discovered that this was something that privileged families – like FDR and Ernest Hemingway – engaged in, believing it would lessen male aggression and tendencies toward violence. My dad was so worried about my mom doing this to me, that when my blond locks started to get long in Alaska, he took me to the barber for a buzz cut. My mom went through the roof, but I never felt sorry for her. My hair grew in brown after that.

I shouldn't have been surprised when after the end of my Junior year in high school she found my yearbook containing all kinds of incriminating evidence. I had removed the bottom

drawer from my dresser and hid the book beneath it, thinking that she would never find it; but she found it without any effort and confronted me with it the next morning when I came home with a hangover. She hated men and would accuse me at these times of being “just like my father!” which was the ultimate evil to her.

She would be so happy when she told us tales of her life before she met my dad, when she had been a popular blonde in high school and of all the men who had wanted to marry her. Unfortunately they were all killed in the Pacific War. She would constantly blame her father for all sorts of evil because of his alcoholism, so it wasn't very hard to understand that she hated him. She never told us how he died, but my father told me when I was in Advanced Infantry Training, that he had been found dead of a heart attack in the gutter outside of a brothel. At least he had a pleasant death. She never told us stories about my dad.

I asked her once why she had married my father. She said her mother was dying of cancer – this was after her father died – and wanted to see a grandchild before she died. She wasted no time marrying my father. He told me while I was staying with him on weekends during Advanced Infantry Training, that she had sex with him on the first date. She didn't even want to have children but she was willing to do anything for her mother, a Victorian prude.

She had such a bond with her mother that when she was at a train station coming home on a weekend pass, she felt her mother's spirit pass through her and she knew right then that she was dead. Later she discovered that this was the exact time that her mother had passed away. She was very upset that she had ultimately disappointed her mother. I believe she held this against my father, because she had failed to produce a grandchild in time. That was a story that I wish I

had never heard. The idea of my birth being in vain was quite disturbing.

My mother bought a Family Bible soon after we moved into our new house on East Keats Avenue. I remember browsing through the pictures, but I had no interest in it otherwise. We were taught that the Bible was holy and that you shouldn't put anything on top of it because that would make God angry. I believed her though I never understood why this was so. It seemed that God got angry over trivial things.

When I was nine I thought I had gone to Heaven when we went to see Forbidden Planet at the Hardy's Theater. Robbie the Robot was a real trip along with the Monsters from the Id, especially the giant fiery tree sloth, which scared the hell out of me. In those days going to the movies was nearly an all day event. There would be a newsreel, a cartoon, perhaps a short, then a "B" movie, and finally, the main event. We came into the movie near the end, so we waited through all the rest of the show before they came back to the main movie. I liked that movie so much I wanted to wait and see it again, but my mom had had enough. My brother and I would sneak under the chain that roped off the stairs to the balcony level, which had been condemned, and sit in the front row and enjoy the movie in style.

Right before Christmas when I was in the Fourth Grade at Wolter's Elementary, I was trying to tie my shoes – my mother was left handed and taught me how to tie them backwards – after school in the clothes closet when a classmate asked me if I still believed in Santa Claus. I said I did and he said I was old enough to know the truth that he didn't really exist, that it was just parents playing a game, pretending to be Santa. I told him he was crazy and he grabbed me by the arm and told me to go look in my mother's bedroom when she wasn't home and he bet me

I would find the presents I wanted for Christmas.

As soon as I got home I checked and got the shock of my life. There they were, buried in her closet – the Christmas presents! I never told her that I had searched her room but I told her what my classmate had told me and she said I should not believe him. She reminded me that I had seen him descend in a helicopter at Ft. Richardson, so how can it be true that he wasn't real?

She said this lie with the straightest face I'd ever seen. She probably would have passed a lie detector test. Perhaps she was crazy enough to really believe it herself, but I never trusted her again after that. I had really liked the whole story of Santa Claus and Christmas and was really sad that it wasn't true. I couldn't believe the lengths adults would go to in order to perpetuate a myth they knew wasn't true.

Don't Be Cruel

I remember when Elvis Presley came out with "Hound Dog," getting my introduction to rock'n'roll, but since my mother didn't listen to any radio station playing it, I had to wait a few more years before I really go into it. I played with the kids a few streets north of us, and one day they took me into an older boy's house who had just bought a copy of Elvis' "Don't Be Cruel," and I really got to like it as we listened to it over and over.

My oldest daughter, Evangeline, was born on August 16, 1979, exactly two years to the day of Elvis's death. It was also the birthday of Madonna and poor Evangeline would hear nothing but Madonna when MTV celebrated her birthday every year during the 80's with a Madonna-thon of her music videos. Oh yes, "Gotta Serve Somebody" by Bob Dylan, was released the same day she was born. Even though Wikipedia states that the record was released

on August 20, 1979, the FM station in San Diego obviously had an advanced copy because I heard it on the way to the hospital on the 16th.

For some reason I have yet to comprehend, my mother wouldn't let me have a bicycle until I was ten years old. My brother whined so much about me having one, that he got his when he was nine. Anyway, when I was ten in 1957 I watched a movie on TV and couldn't believe that it was a new one, because most of the movies shown on TV were black and white oldies. It was called Paths of Glory, with Kirk Douglas, one of Stanley Kubrick's early masterpieces, and it had a profound effect on my visions of heroic deeds during wartime. If you've seen the movie, you will know what I mean. Because of a failure to take the "Ant Hill" – the French Army was literally being shot to pieces in futile attacks – three men were picked by lot to die for cowardice for the sins of the commanders. They had refused to move on orders to attack because it was suicide. Because it was an anti-war movie it flopped at the Box Office and thus was grave-yarded to television.

At the time my sister was six and in the first grade, my brother was nine, and I was eleven, and we would walk together just over a quarter mile to Wolters Elementary, which was still in the County and not in the Fresno Unified School District – and it went up to the eighth grade. We would stop on the dirt path that continued where Keats Avenue left off and that divided the horse ranch from the huge open field to the north of the trail. We would give sugar cubes to a pinto horse named Sue. One day I climbed the barbed-wire fence and hopped on Sue's back, thinking that I was a real cowboy and I could ride her easily.

After all, when we lived in Kansas, my brother and I would dress up as cowboys and my

dad would take us to the pony rides where we could ride the real thing. I always had fun, but those ponies were used to having other people ride them. Sue was not. As soon as I was on her back, she bolted, trying to throw me off. I held onto her mane for dear life as she galloped through the yard, finally coming to an abrupt halt, then bucking me off, head over heels, onto the ground. As I got up, brushing the dirt off me, she looked straight at me, snorted, then went back to where my brother and sister were waiting with the sugar cubes. I lost interest in being a cowboy after that and walked around bow legged for a few days. My goal in life changed to wanting to be the first man on the Moon.

Sometimes when my father was around, he would take us up to Barstow Avenue, a half mile north of Shaw, where an irrigation canal ran alongside the south side. Lots of kids would swim in these ditches and the first time my father took us, he taught me how to dive. You had to be careful of all the broken glass on the bottom, because drivers would pitch their empty bottles out of car windows and they would land in the canals. We had been vaccinated for polio so we didn't have to worry about catching it.

Some people across the street bred brindle boxers and they soon had a brand new litter and offered my mother one of them. She chose a female and my dad named her Lady of Gustice, but we called her Gussie. I loved that dog. My mom had her spayed and she had a limp from one of dad's friends hitting her with his Jeep. One night she didn't come home when I called for her. She would roam the neighborhoods mooching food off people if she could, or rolling in lawn manure, but she always returned when I called her name at dinner time. Like I said, one night she didn't.

Weeks later, the dog pound called my mother, letting her know that they had picked up a brindle boxer running down some country road. My mom brought her home believing she was Gussie, and ignoring me when I said no, she wasn't Gussie, because she had a pink tinge to a white patch on her chest, and didn't have a limp. Anyway, when my mom first took her to the vets for shots, the vet asked her if she wished to have her spayed. "She's already spayed," my mother answered. Once my mother made up her mind it was almost impossible to change it.

She had a point on this one. The dog had immediately recognized her, jumping all over her at the dog pound. And when I got home from school and opened the front door to greet Gussie again, she tore outside and ran across the street to the house that bred the boxers. We reconstructed what must have happened.

Someone in the country who had bought a dead ringer of Gussie had gone looking for her after she ran away. They thought that the house where she was born would be good place to search. Thus, when they saw Gussie they thought she was their dog and whisked her off. Later the runaway was found and eventually became our new Gussie. It was kind of humorous, especially when we thought that maybe the people who owned the runaway had wanted to breed her. What a surprise they must have gotten. That should have been enough to make them think that perhaps they had kidnapped the wrong dog.

But, like I said, I never saw the real Gussie again. Eventually my mother had Gussie II put down because she was suffering greatly from some kind of cancer. She was only nine. My mother waited until I was away in Santa Cruz with Frank, Jerry "Harky Clarky" Clark, and Tom McMahon, to put her down. This was the week of the Watts riots and we had been forced to

spend the week because Frank's old Chevy's engine was being repaired after he revved it too high coming back from Rio Del Mar one evening.

At first I hated my mother for getting rid of my dog, but since she knew that I liked her too much to put her down even though I knew she was suffering, I soon got over it because she had done the right thing. I was glad in the end because I couldn't face the dilemma of getting rid of something I loved like the kid had to do in the movie Old Yeller.

East Keats was a block away from the edge of the city, and all there was north of Barstow were open fields. In fact, that open field to the north of the dirt trail that led to Wolter's was a kid's paradise. We regarded it as our own personal possession and we would build forts and have dirt clod fights with the kids who lived on the streets north of us. I believe I had the most fun of my life as a kid battling in those dirt clod fights.

I was very patriotic – and still am – with a father in the Army. I remember him marching us in the living room and I learned how to stand at attention, a knowledge that actually came in handy during Army Boot Camp. My favorite TV show was called The Big Picture, produced by the U.S. Army. In the last years before I lost interest in the show it was showcasing the Special Forces in Vietnam that President Kennedy had created in his effort to contain communism. But I get ahead of myself.

Another thing that disturbed me about being a soldier when I grew up was playing Avalon Hill battle games. Frank taught me how to use artillery effectively when we played Gettysburg and Waterloo when we were Sophomores. One of the things one could do for success in battle – it is actually a real tactic – was a stacking of units known as “soaking off” where the sacrifice of

a few units could be used in order to stack superior numbers against the enemy in another location. I thought what a bummer if your unit was designated as a “soak off.”

There were only three TV channels in those days, four if you had enough reception to get the station in Bakersfield. In the day time there were only quiz shows and soap operas, and to while away the hours when it was 105 degrees outside, we would turn down the sound when the soap operas were playing and make up obscene dialogue for the characters. Endless fun at no expense.

I really loved the Three Stooges – with Curly, not Shemp – which they would play every afternoon on the Al Radka Show. Al Radka was a local legend and called himself the Fourth Stooge. He also was host to a late night movie, where he was free to satirize the commercials. For example, in a Producers Milk commercial, he is seen walking through a milking line and pretends to rub a cow’s teats as if they belonged to a woman, that sort of stuff. In fact, he came up with the theme song for Producer’s Milk: “P-R-O, D-U-C, E-R-S, spells Producers.”

Everyone liked the Three Stooges but it was soon taken off the air because some children were bonking each other on the head with shovels and other blunt objects and it created ire in the parental community. There were a lot of stupid people in Fresno. In fact, some girl a few grades younger at Wolters, really believed she was Curly and had to be treated by the shrinks to cure her.

We also used to put on puppet shows in our kitchen window for the kids in the neighborhood, and even though we only charged a penny apiece, we loved performing. We could extemporarily make up skits and the kids all laughed and loved it. One day we all got

bored and took our clothes off and went running naked through the vineyard and orchard that bordered our back yard. The fact that this was forbidden made it very exciting.

The vineyard and orchard belonged to the owner who lived in a an old farm house with an rickety barn at the northeast corner of Shaw and Mariposa. We called him Mr. Hikes – I have no idea why – for it wasn't even close to his real Armenian name. We and our neighbors occupied the tract houses that were built on Hikes' property that used to be part of his vineyard. We had no back yard fence, and we would love it when the grapes were ripe for we would pick our fill off the vines before the Mexican workers came and stripped it.

We denied getting naked, of course, when some of the parents in the neighborhood complained to my mother about the incident. We told her that someone was just trying to get us into trouble and she shouldn't trust any of them. I never had any trouble lying to my mother, because she believed that I would never lie to her, a weakness of all pathological liars.

It wasn't until I was in the seventh grade that the Bible reared its hoary head in my life again. I overheard two girls in my class, who attended a Pentecostal Church, discussing the end of the world scenario that the Bible allegedly taught. This concerned and scared me greatly, but my mom said not to worry, the Pentecostals were all crazy holy rollers who believed in a lot of nonsense. Even though I had been intrigued by the end of the world, I still wasn't interested enough to crack open the Bible and read it for myself.

And there was an event when I was twelve that caused me so much trauma that I suppressed it for years. It wasn't until I moved into our old family residence on East Keats in October 2000 that I began to remember it. It totally crushed all my dreams and made me think

about running away from home.

I was on a semi-Little League team at Wolter's, playing hard ball, and I really wanted a first base mitt, which are called gloves in other areas. I specifically requested it for a Christmas gift and waited patiently for Christmas to arrive. I was anxious and filled with glee as I tore open the package that contained my mitt. When I opened it, it was the end of the world. It was a catcher's mitt! I cried, "Mom, I wanted a first base mitt, not a catcher's mitt. Take it back, I never want to be a catcher."

She got really angry and almost slapped me. She told me that it had been on sale and she couldn't return it. Besides the salesman had convinced her that I would be real grateful because it cost more than the mitt I wanted. That ended my baseball career. I ended up giving the mitt to the team and never playing again after that. The salesman had obviously been a young, probably good looking guy, who talked my mother into buying something she didn't want and then convincing her that I would like it in the end. When I self-examined myself recently, I found that I still hold a grudge against her about the mitt. Hatred is a hard thing to overcome.

But then there was the comfort I would get watching movies that I liked. I remember getting my first taste of Marilyn Monroe one evening after we were invited to a back yard party where Monkey Business with Cary Grant and Ginger Rogers was projected onto an outdoor tripod white screen. Although she had a minor role in the movie she was all I could think about for weeks.

I saw one of my favorite horror movies at this time, Invasion of the Body Snatchers, on television, which scared the hell out of me with the Seed Pod People replicating real people,

which were then disposed of. I know now that the Don Siegel film was a take on the paranoia of McCarthyism, but it was done in a semi-documentary style that disturbed me at a deep level.

Siegel would go on to make such classics as Hell is for Heroes, Two Mules for Sister Sarah, The Beguiled, Dirty Harry, Escape from Alcatraz, and John Wayne's last movie, The Shootist.

Psycho

Another thing when I was in the seventh grade was the movie Psycho. Our whole family were huge fans of Alfred Hitchcock and loved his TV show. For months he had talked about the movie that was coming that changed the way movies were shown thereafter. We would go to the movies almost every Saturday, and saw multiple trailers and previews of Psycho. We all looked forward to seeing it. Unfortunately, the day it premiered, I believe it was a Friday – we had planned on seeing it together the next day – she secretly saw the movie with one of her nurse friends. The movie disturbed her so much she refused to let us see it. She didn't take a shower for years afterwards.

I had to learn about the movie from my friends, which made me even madder at my mother. When I finally saw the movie years later, I understood her concern. She was worried that it would give ideas to my crazy brother. She never understood that she was just as crazy as the mother of Norman Bates.

My mother attended Choir Practice at the College Congregational Church and wouldn't get home until late, usually after 11 p.m. The Untouchables aired on the same night and was on between 10 and 11, and we would stay up in disobedience because we liked the show so much. When she came home earlier than 11, we would hear the car pull up in our driveway, turn off the

TV, and rush into our beds. The first thing my mother would do was to put her hand on the top of the TV to see if it was warm – it was in the days of vacuum tubes – so she always knew what we were up to. She hated that show because we started talking like the gangsters for fun.

I went to Sunday School at the same church (Burt Kennedy was one of my classmates), but it only went up to a certain grade and after that you were required to attend the main services. I finally quit when I was fourteen because at the main service we would always sing, “Father, Son, and Holy Ghost,” and I wanted to know who the Holy Ghost was. No one could answer my question, so I was out of there. I hate going to church to this day; not only because I can’t sing, but also because I compare it to going to meetings with your probation officer. I am a free Divine Son of God and I’m not on probation.

Many times we had to wash our mouths out with soap because she didn’t like something we said. I hated that more than getting whipped. She would make us really rub our teeth into the bar of soap, which would make us almost puke. I never made my kids do that; to me, it was cruel and unusual punishment. I hated her for that.

The first question the shrink asked me when I went through the prison orientation at Ft. Leavenworth was, “Do you hate your mother?” I thought the question was ridiculous, but I had forgotten about these and other traumatic events she had caused in my life. The fact was that I did indeed hate her, but I loved her as well, which really confused me. It would be years before I finally escaped her influences, well, at least most of them.

In 1962, the next event that almost got me interested enough to read the Bible was a movie we went to see called The Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse, starring Glenn Ford. Even

though it was about a playboy reluctant to get involved in World War II, there was a very scary scene with ghostly figures riding across a stormy sky. My mother told me that the Four Horsemen were in the Book of Revelation, but she couldn't tell me where. I tried to read it but the subject matter was so weird, I was unable to keep the interest needed for me to find it.

Bullard High School

When I was thirteen, I finally managed to get a paper route with the local newspaper, the Fresno Bee, with a Walt Disney designed mascot on its cover. Our old field north of the dirt path that led to Wolter's had been transformed by the Wathen brothers into a new Headliner tract home development and that became my source of money for the next 21 months. When I finally got my subscriptions up to \$80.00 a month, I was in hog heaven. That lasted for about a month.

I had to save most of the money for college, even though I thought of it as a down payment on a car. My mother let me spend some of it, but that was only on clothes and shoes so that she didn't have to buy them for me any more. And of course my brother started complaining that it wasn't fair that I was making money and he wasn't, so my mother's solution was making me split my route in half so that my brother could have a paper route too.

During this period I subscribed to Mad magazine. When a copy would arrive in the mail I would spend a few days reading every word, laughing my head off. When the next issue was due a month later, I would haunt the mailbox waiting for it to be delivered. Alfred E. Neuman's catch phrase, is still my basic philosophy today: "What – Me Worry?"

My mother bought us Star Charts and we would lay out on the front lawn on hot summer nights and spot the various constellations. The Milky Way was easily observable in those days

but not anymore. There is so much light nowadays that you are lucky if you can spot the Big Dipper (Ursa Major] or Orion's Belt.

In those days we would take our empty bottles across Shaw Avenue to Fresno-Shaw U-Save Liquor for refund, and once the owner, Herb Maybe, accidentally paid us too much money. When we got home we were elated over our windfall, but my mother made us take the extra money back. This proved to be to my advantage since a few months later a job opened up for a new stock boy and Herb asked my mother if I wanted the job. He had been impressed with my honesty over the bottle returns, which was ironic since we were only too happy to take advantage of him. But I'm getting ahead of myself again.

Oh yes, before I forget, after my brother was diagnosed as a paranoid schizophrenic he suffered from the delusion that mom had had a torrid love affair with Herb after I was drafted into the Army, and had given my mother a vast treasure that was hidden somewhere. As far as I know, he still suffers from this delusion.

I was a Freshman at Bullard High, the last year that they had a 9th Grade. I had gone up to 8th grade at Wolter's, but that was the last year for that as well. As a result I never attended Junior High School. Some infamous people attended Bullard High. Rick Sterns was a Senior at Bullard High in the graduating class of 1962. I have no idea who his father was, but he was recruited by the CIA after he graduated and was involved in Middle Eastern affairs. One can only guess what he knew about the JFK assassination.

He later helped to change the rules at the 1972 Democratic National Convention while on McGovern's staff. A brief scandal broke out when a woman from the Jewish Telegraphic

Agency accused him of being pro-Arab and anti-Israel and demanded that he be dismissed from McGovern's staff. McGovern saved him by saying it was just a misunderstanding and that was that. But it makes you wonder about CIA involvement in our own elections.

On the first day at Bullard I met my good friend, Darlene Wickline, because her locker was next to mine. I asked her for help in working the combination lock because I had never worked one before. She was a beautiful dark-blond girl, but I hardly saw her again after that, except at football games where she was a majorette. But in the past few years we've become close friends.

Her father, Lawrence Aaron Wickline, was a Lt. Colonel in Army Intelligence and took part in the invasion of the Japanese-held Island of Peleliu in the War in the Pacific. According to Darlene, he was horrified at the savagery of the Japanese who refused to be taken alive by the Americans – they had to use flame throwers and grenades to remove them from caves.

Anyway, I had a good friend, Bob Edmonds, who lived just off swanky Van Ness Boulevard. I loved spending Friday nights at his house. We would stay up late and watch the Tonight Show. Johnny Carson had just replaced Jack Parr and his shows were outrageously funny. The show would last an hour and a half. He would make fun of the commercials, especially with two regular sidekicks, Buddy Hackett and Jimmy Dean, who would trade insults extemporaneously that you would swear had to be scripted they were so witty and hilarious. I don't know if those shows are still available, but the Tonight Show went down hill after that as far as I was concerned.

I had met Bob in an English literature class, and we got a big kick out of an assignment

where the teacher had us read a story by Robert Lewis Stevenson about a Polynesian man named Keawe. The essay was to answer the question, “Was Keawe Religious?” As it was, he was just a superstitious man like all the early Polynesians.

We would also listen to comedy records by Jonathan Winters and Bob Newhart and a comedy spoof of JFK’s First Family, and laugh our asses off. Poor Bob had to go to a private school in Lake Tahoe at the beginning of our Junior year because he had been caught with a huge cache of liquor, with a few of our other friends, and his father had flipped out. He told me once that he had witnessed an epic bar fight in a parking lot outside of a Tahoe bar between Lee Marvin and some other drunk one night near the casinos. Marvin won.

We finally got my mother to take us out to Me-n-Eds Pizza Parlor on Blackstone because we had never eaten pizza before and Al Radka did their commercials on his show. Even today they still make the best pizza in Fresno. On Friday evenings it seemed to be a hangout for older high school kids, but that soon changed when the Bob’s Big Boy was opened at the corner of Blackstone and Shaw. That became the “in” place for the cool kids for years to come, and one of the main marketplaces for illegal drugs toward the end of the Sixties.

We also talked my mother into buying a stereo record player so we could buy albums. The first single 45 I bought was “Dream Baby,” by Roy Orbison, and the first album was The Beach Boys. Or maybe the first 45 I bought was “Wild Weekend,” by the Rockin Rebels. Well, it was one of the two. It wasn’t until I was a Junior that I finally got up the courage to ask girls if they wanted to dance, and I loved it when they said yes. I loved to dance to rock’n’roll.

Those were the days when Westerns ruled the small screen, with series like Cheyenne,

Maverick, Have Gun, Will Travel, Sugarfoot, Wanted, Dead or Alive, featuring great actors that would become screen legends like James Garner and Steve McQueen, who starred together in The Great Escape, and Charles Bronson, who starred with McQueen in The Magnificent Seven, and with Garner and McQueen in The Great Escape.

There were also private detective shows, like 77 Sunset Strip and Surfside Six. Connie Stevens was Cricket in two of them. I had a crush on her.

There were other popular Westerns on TV, like Gunsmoke, The Virginian, and Rawhide with Clint Eastwood, but they were too melodramatic for my taste and I hardly ever watched them. I'm the kind of guy that loves the shoot-outs between the good guys and the bad guys and a good ending, like in Rio Bravo, with John Wayne, Dean Martin, and Ricky Nelson. All hell breaks out at the end.

My mother decided that the death of my grandfather signalled the time to divorce my father, while he was still a sergeant in Germany. I became suspicious when she would not allow me to attend his funeral, which seemed cruel at the time. My dad had flown home for the event, and I remember him in the back yard, staring longfully into the night sky afterwards, like Luke Skywalker staring into the double suns in Star Wars. He was crushed, but not as crushed as when he got back to Germany and was informed that his wife was divorcing him.

I was a Freshman at Bullard High School and the divorce really pissed me off. I was against it but my mother didn't give a shit. She had bought our new house after we moved from the crappy rental from one of her contractor "friends" in her own name, for in 1956 women in California were for the first time allowed to sign contracts without a male cosigner. So she kept

the house. I saw that she had been planning for the divorce from the beginning, but had put it off until my grandfather died.

When my father finished his Army career in Germany, and retired as a Lt. Colonel, he moved to Hollister and then to Salinas, since he was a big fan of John Steinbeck, as was my mother. Another of their favorite authors was Fresno's own, William Saroyan. In fact their love of reading was one of the main forces that had kept them together. Ironically, when my mother was Director of Nurses at Sierra Hospital, she would often talk to Saroyan when he was a patient there. She told him that his stories were in the book of short stories in her English 1A class, like "The Daring Young Man on the Flying Trapeze," and he asked her if he could see it. He went through all of the stories and made notations and I still have that book in my library today.

Thus I was without a father at a critical stage of my life. Near the beginning of my Sophomore year, Robin Rush, the football coach, tried to recruit me for the football team, likely because I had just grown to my full height of 6' 2", and my shoulders were broad. But my mother refused to sign a permission slip, thus destroying my chance to play football in high school. After all, I might get injured, or worse still, I would no longer have a job so that I could afford the clothes I wanted to wear.

If my dad had been around, he would have signed it in a flash. My mother didn't want me to lose my paper route job because she would be responsible for buying my clothes again and that was more important to her than my sports career. I really hated her for that.

During a few summers, my mom would take us to her brother's cabin in Boulder Creek, in the Santa Cruz Mountains, and we would hit the Santa Cruz Boardwalk. I loved the old

wooden Giant Dipper roller coaster and was overjoyed when I grew tall enough to ride it.

There was a small drainage creek that ran below the hill on which my uncle's cabin stood. There were a lot of trees, but it was bare in a couple of places that allowed you slide down the fallen leaves on flattened cardboard sleds. Once, my brother got a weird look in his eye and he pushed me down the hill in one of the places covered with trees, causing me to slide head first into one of them. It almost knocked me out giving me quite a bump, but he barely got into trouble, even though I thought for sure that he had tried to kill me. My mother accepted his lame excuse that it had been an accident. He's still out of his mind, since he refuses to take his medication most of the time, and he still roams the streets talking to invisible people.

My mother never watched over us when we were in Boulder Creek. She didn't mind my brother and myself hitchhiking into town to watch a movie – I remember seeing The Naked Maja, the story of the famous Spanish painter, Francisco Goya, with Tony Franciosa and Ava Gardner, about the famous nude painting, which was kind of boring since we never saw Ava in the nude, and the story only picked up when the French Army invaded. We would buy comic books at the drugstore and spend hours on the front porch of the cabin reading them. I loved reading science fiction comic books and I was a sucker for Superman and Batman too.

Once I read a book I found in my uncle's small library. It was a book of short stories by Noel Coward, and the one I read was about statues of Roman gods coming to life and interacting with normal people. Coward used to write stories in Jamaica like his neighbor, Ian Fleming, who dwelt at Golden Eye, the name he gave to his beach house on the island. Fleming wrote the rough drafts of all his James Bond novels there, snorkling in the lagoon in front of his house

when he wasn't writing or drinking.

Once my brother and I hiked about a mile up Boulder Creek, which ran across the highway from my uncle's cabin. It was running almost dry and we would leap from one big rock to another in the blessed shade and coolness of the ravine. We left the creek's ravine on the opposite side where there were a few houses, some in the process of being built. As we walked on the road by the new development, a lady braked and stopped her car. She was middle aged and very angry, grabbing our arms and holding us hostage. She accused us of being thieves and demanded to know where we lived. Thinking quickly, I pointed to a house about twenty yards away. "We're on vacation and staying at the Reynold's," I lied, making up the name. She ordered us to stay where we were – adults used to think that any kids were like their slaves and had to obey them – while she proceeded to walk up the sidewalk to the front door.

We waited until she got to the front door and rang the bell, then we ran like hell back into the ravine. On the way we ran into a bee hive and they swarmed us. Not one stung me but my brother was covered with bee stings by the time we got home. My mother was furious at the lady, but I kind of thought the bees were a form of justice since my brother had tried to kill me.

Lest I forget, in the background during these years was the constant fear of nuclear war. I remember my mother attending a survival class and coming home and telling us that the best thing to do was to head for Ground Zero to be instantly vaporized. I learned to live with it.

I remember sitting in my Latin class during the Cuban Missile Crisis thinking that a nuclear war would cover up the bad grade I was getting in the class. Bullard High School was a college prep high school, and in my Sophomore year I read Catch 22, about an Army Air Force

bombing unit. I ended up identifying with the antihero Yossarian when he deserted at the end. I was learning that in the real world war was not all that it is hyped up to be.

My mom started dating other men in the summer between my Freshman and Sophomore years. One of them, a gambler lawyer named Bob Roder, had worked his way through law school by winning at poker. He had a Corvette and a Cadillac and did everything he could do to make us like him, like teaching us how to stack a deck of cards, taking us to see Westside Story, and El Cid, taking us to Yosemite in his Cadillac, and finally, buying my brother and me a new watch. My brother, who was extremely jealous of Bob, took a hammer to his new watch, but my mother could have cared less.

On the drive to see El Cid at the Hardy's theater, we all stared at the Del Webb building still under construction because a few days earlier someone had fallen to his death and seeing the sight gave us all a real creepy feeling. Also, Bob had a paperback copy of The Carpetbaggers by Harold Robbins under the driver's seat of his Cadillac and I picked it up and asked him if I could read it. Or, maybe I didn't ask. Anyway I took it home and read it, rereading the erotic portions more times than I can remember.

Their love affair ended abruptly when Bob got busted in an illegal poker game in Clovis one night, which was detailed in the newspapers. Well, at least he wasn't a housing developer. I think he had helped my mother in her divorce proceedings, but who knows? for she never talked about those things.

I had been in a special education class while in the 8th grade at Wolters so I was allowed to take advance classes at Bullard in my Sophomore year. One of the classes was World

Civilization. It was mainly for Seniors and I was the only Sophomore in the class and I was getting the top grade until we came to Plato near the end of the year. I got a D on the next test because I wasn't able to understand Plato's assertion that this was not the real world. It just made no sense to me. He said the real world was the spiritual world, that was purely good, and said that the physical world, the one I existed in, was Evil and was created not by God, who could have nothing to do with Evil, but by a demiurgos, a lesser deity. It still doesn't make any sense to me today.

I had a good friend, Bob Okomoto, in my Geometry class, and we would play name that song games in class. On Mondays all the kids would recount Sunday's episode of Bonanza, and talk about the characters like they were real people. "Will Hoss get married?" we all wondered. In fact, The Twilight Zone, McHale's Navy, and Hogan's Heroes were the most popular TV shows among the students of Bullard High.

And the music! This was the time my generation really started making its mark as the largest consumer group in American History. We spent millions of dollars on new music, and the first Monster Hits came out at this time. "The Twist," by Chubby Checkers; "He's So Fine," by the Chiffons; "Sherry," by the Four Seasons; "It's My Party," by Leslie Gore; and "My Guy," by Mary Wells, all became number one with a bullet hit gold records. In fact, as long as Leslie Gore, Mary Wells, and the Chiffons, are not inducted into the Rock 'n' Roll Hall of Fame, I could care less who's in it.

I mean when you consider the fact that "He's So Fine" was the main inspiration for George Harrison's "My Sweet Lord," the Chiffons should have made it. I'll never forget walking

into the University of British Columbia's cafeteria to witness for the Lord, when I caught the melody in the background as it was broadcast over the cafeteria speakers. I thought, I know that song, what is it? And then came George Harrison's voice, and I knew I was wrong.

Years later I discovered that I had been partially right, in that Harrison was sued successfully for plagiarism for copying the melody of "He's So Fine." This is most evident in the part where the Chiffons sing, "I really want to know him, I really want to know all about him," whereas Harrison sings, "I really want to know you, I really want to go with you." And so forth. As John Lennon told Harrison in an urban legend, "Gee, George, if you'd just changed a bar or two you would have gotten away with it."

Another Beatles urban legend before I forget. After the movie Yellow Submarine, which had portrayed a magical Pepperland that could be attained on LSD, the Beatles created a telephone hot line, and then distributed the telephone number, which, when called, could tell you whether or not you were in Pepperland. You would call the number and ask, "Am I in Pepperland," to which the prerecorded message would answer, "No." In other words if you had to ask, then you weren't there. Now that I think of it, if you have to ask whether or not you have the Holy Spirit, the answer will always be no.

The only contact I had with the original wave of rock'n'roll was when they played "Solid Gold Oldies," which was rare, but still part of the Top Forty Format. I loved the old Chuck Berry songs, as well as Fats Domino, Little Richard, and Jerry Lee Lewis, especially during the Chuck Berry revival under the Beach Boys, Beatles, and Rolling Stones. Good memories.

Oh, yes, there was also a parental panic over a couple of songs that were released around

this time, “If You Want to be Happy,” by Jimmy Soul, and “Louie, Louie,” by the Kingsmen. Supposedly you could make out obscene language like “piece of ass,” in the Jimmy Soul song about marrying an ugly woman, and verses like “I smelled the rose in your hair,” were an alleged reference to cunnilingus and other sex acts in “Louie, Louie.” Some radio stations cancelled the airing of these songs, and like I said there was a parental outrage, but it was mainly imaginary and only in the minds that thought dirty.

However, it may have been the reason why the local stations played the Paul Revere and the Raiders version of “Louie, Louie” in Fresno instead of the Kingsman version which was played across the nation. It was a big hit, as evidenced by its popular reception years later in the movie Animal House.

Oh, yes, when Paul Revere or Santana played at the Rainbow Ballroom, we danced to them instead of watching them. That soon changed when the Jefferson Airplane played at the Wonderland skating arena. Anyway, the fact that we got a different version of “Louie, Louie” was unfortunate because the lead guitar of the Kingsmen really laid out an impressive hard rock solo on “Louie, Louie.” The Kingsmen were the Pacific Northwest rivals of Paul Revere and I only heard their version when FM radio stations started to play the hit songs of the Sixties.

We never got to hear “My Generation,” by the Who, or “Mustang Sally,” by the Wicked Picket. I guess KYNO and KMAK, the local AM stations that played rock in Fresno were really concerned about pissing off the local pastors and offended mothers. KMAK even played album cuts so we got to hear the long versions of songs like “Light My Fire” by the Doors, though they never played “Break On Through.”

That Christmas vacation a bunch of us went to see some movie downtown and afterwards we hung out in the high class lobby of the California Hotel, where I perused my first copy of Playboy magazine. I found that I loved staring at pictures of beautiful naked women. This tainted my taste in women for years after. If they didn't look like a Playmate, I wasn't interested, and thus missed out on many an adventure.

My mother hated Hugh Hefner till the day she died. One of her favorite stories was telling her friends that Hefner's seduction of my soul began when I replaced the picture of Jesus over my bed with the Playmate of the Month. So much for the Greatest Generation. She also had this habit, shared with my ex-wife, of bragging about her failures, as if her life was cursed by God. Bad things were continually happening to her and she never accepted responsibility for any of them. She superstitiously believed that bad things came in threes, and for her, they usually did.

For example, one of her favorite pity-me stories was about not buying stock in McDonald's at the ground floor level. Art Bender, whose kids went to Bullard, opened up one of the first McDonald's franchises in Fresno, at Blackstone and Shields. He opened his second on the northeast corner of Shaw and Mariposa, about two blocks from our house – it's a Burger King today – when I was a Sophomore and he and my mother became friends of sorts. He almost begged her on his hands and knees for her to invest in McDonald's because he understood a winning formula when he saw it. My mother never invested and regretted it until the day she died. She loved telling that story for she saw herself as the perfect victim of fate.

Sometime in my Sophomore year, the school put a juke box in the cafeteria, but it only

lasted a short time. I remember hearing it playing during the first lunch period when I was in my Biology class and it played the same song, over and over, “Walkin’ the Dog,” by Rufus Thomas, a song the Stones covered in their first American album. But after witnessing Bob Abbot and Cecy Nyeland doing the shimmy to a song, the faculty saw that that was enough and removed the juke box. What a bunch of prudes, I thought, having enjoyed watching them dance.

I went to my first concert with Bob Okomoto. We saw Ray Charles and his band with the Raylettes, and Ray Charles wasn’t known at the time as the Genius for nothing. I still remember how eerie the Memorial Auditorium was in the dark, with the glow of cigarettes being lighted all around the galleries, and how exciting it was when the Raylettes were announced and hit it off with “Hit the Road Jack,” “You Are My Sunshine,” “Georgia on My Mind,” “I Can’t Stop Loving You,” ending with the house-rocking “What’d I Say?”

It was also the first time I attended a mixed racial crowd. None of the majority of black people in the audience were discourteous to us, for they were there for the same reason we were and in my opinion they liked impressing white people with their genius. What I mean was that there was no tension in the air between the whites and the blacks.

The only negative experience I had with black guys in high school was one night after a dance in the Bullard High cafeteria, someone had stolen my black ski parka and after the dance, I got a ride to Blackstone Bowl, where it was warm. Eventually, I had to walk home after midnight down the north side of Shaw Avenue. As I turned left off Shaw at Fresno Street, a carload of blacks got out of their car and started chasing me. I eventually went to the ground in the tall four foot high weeds in the open field on the west side of Fresno Street, and since our

area was still in the County, there were no streetlights. It was very dark.

I learned reading James Bond novels that if you hid in bushes or tall grass at night, it would render you almost invisible so that no one could see you unless you moved suddenly or they stumbled upon you. It was a big field and they passed on both sides of me as they beat the bush, but I remained still and survived that close call. Unfortunately I caught a chill and was sick for about a week. It was a bummer having a Registered Nurse for my mother. I never got to stay home unless I was burning with a fever. Otherwise, you went to school.

I saw some good bands at the Memorial Auditorium: Dick Dale and the Deltones, the Beach Boys, and the Dave Clark Five. The Dave Clark Five is one of the most underrated groups in rock'n'roll history. They were the only band going head to head with the Beatles before the Rolling Stones edged them out of the way. Not to disparage the Stones, for they were truly great.

I really liked the Beatles, of course, but since all the young girls had a huge crush on at least one of them, it made talking to girls very awkward. When we went to see A Hard Day's Night at the Crest theatre, we couldn't hear a word because the girls were screaming hysterically. Most janitors hated the showing of this movie because they would have to clean up all the urine from the girls peeing in their pants.

I remember in November 1963, riding in Larry Duncan's Impala as "She Loves You" came on the radio by a new group called the Beatles. I immediately identified the name as being similar to Buddy Holly and the Crickets, but the Beatles were also about the "beat," which explained the strange spelling of their name. I heard their American album, Meet the Beatles, with "She Loves You," "I Want to Hold Your Hand," and "Don't Bother Me," with glee, playing

it so many times I could anticipate the next song when I heard one of them on the radio, even if they didn't play it afterwards. "I Saw Her Standing There" from an earlier album was my favorite song at the time. I still think their English version album Rubber Soul was their best one.

As for my favorite Stones' album, Sticky Fingers without a doubt. I mean, just think of all the great songs on that album: "Dead Flowers," "Can't You Hear Me Knocking," "Brown Sugar," "Wild Horses," "Bitch," and "Moonlight Mile." Who gets tired of them? Not to forget Brian Jones' brilliant sitar work on "Paint it Black," off the Aftermath album. None of that classic Hindu style of George Harrison. Jones was a fabulous musician, and he showed how the sitar could be used as a lead guitar in a rock band.

I also got into Fresno's form of social media at the time, which consisted of transistor radios and AM radio stations. My friend, Mark Chenault's dad owned the most popular station, KYNO, and the program director went on to create the "Boss Radio" format for the whole nation. They took requests at night, and there were always prizes to win if you were the certain caller at the certain time (I was the ninth caller one night and won a copy of "Look At Me," by Dobie Gray). I loved my transistor radio with the earphone plug so I could listen to it when I was supposed to be sleeping. It all seems so dated now, with the invention of the iPhone and all.

Like most of America, I was a sucker for the family comedies on TV. Shows like Ozzie and Harriet, where Ricky Nelson often played his new hit songs, which was my only window into early rock'n'roll; The Donna Reed Show (I was in love with Shelly Faberas); Leave It to Beaver (I was a big fan of Eddie Haskell); My Three Sons; and of course I Love Lucy. In fact, I was

acquainted with almost every Hollywood plot and was able to predict almost without flaw what would happen on the shows my daughters were into at the time.

No one I knew in high school wanted to become a Christian for it was commonly believed that if you became a Christian you had to obey the Ten Commandments, which meant no fornication. This interfered with my main goal in high school, which was to get laid. You wouldn't be caught dead with a Bible in your hands in those days. Masturbation was also called the Sin of Self Abuse, and my mother told me that it led to insanity. But that never stopped me and I never went insane.

Liquor is Quicker

Ah, and then there was that job at the liquor store. Herb would tell me war stories of his time in the Navy in the South Pacific. He said after they would sink a ship, hundreds of Japanese – he like almost everyone else called them “Japs” – would be left in the brink. Instead of rescuing them or allowing them to swim to shore, they would drop depth charges on them, believing that if they reached the mainland they would just kill more Americans. He then analogized that the competition in the modern business world was just as ruthless. “It’s a dog eat dog world, Woody! Never forget that.” And of course I didn’t.

I started out at \$1.00 dollar per hour for a one month probation period, after which I would get the minimum wage of \$1.10 per hour. But Herb’s associate, Joe,, didn’t like that idea. When I asked him after a month for my raise, he went downstairs and ran his fingers under the conveyer belt that brought the goods upstairs and found dust. He then told me I was doing a shitty job and I should be glad I wasn’t getting fired. I never got minimum wage there, but after

all, it's dog eat dog world.

During the last week of summer vacation, before I became a Junior, Bob Edmonds and I got drunk; me for the first time, he for the second. We had a six pack of 16 oz. Olympia and a bottle of wine, and we haunted the fig orchards that surrounded his house off swanky Van Ness Boulevard. I discovered that I could overcome my shyness and fear of girls on alcohol. Before I started drinking I was unable to ask a girl to dance or go out on a date. I would rehearse it in my mind and it seemed so easy until I attempted it, then I froze like an idiot.

The first time I went out with a bunch of my buddies to get drunk, I drank a fifth of whiskey not knowing how much alcohol I could tolerate. I chugged it like I was drinking a Coke and finished it in under an hour and I swear I've never been sicker in my life. I really believed I was going to die. I threw up more times than you can count and spent the next few hours dry heaving promising God that if I lived I would never drink again. So much for that promise. The real choice I had to make was that with drinking I had confidence with women, sober I did not. So of course I never gave up drinking.

I eventually did give up drinking twice, both for periods of seven years each, and each time to prove to others who were so quick to judge that I could stop any time I wanted to. The reason why I resumed each time was that I discovered that I became very self-righteous and judgmental when sober and that disturbed me more than the occasional binge and hangover. Eventually I learned how to moderate my drinking, a concept which drives the Alcoholics Anonymous people crazy.

Fortunately, my job in the liquor store coincided with the liquor culture at Bullard High

and suddenly I was very popular. A lot of kids drank in high school, and I loved drinking with them, listening to Roger Miller songs like “Dang Me,” Chug-a-lug,” and of course, “King of the Road.”

It was a great time to be alive. Especially when I discovered Ian Fleming. The paperback rack at the store was filled with his James Bond novels and those books awakened something new in my spirit. I started with Dr. No. Carl Jung called it the “erotic instinct” that could be aroused with the appropriate literature. Whatever you call it, I discovered what a powerful force it could be. I was suddenly transported into an adult world of sudden death, endless thrills, sex and violence. I couldn’t get enough.

I’ll never forget when I found out Ian Fleming was dead. I was alone with my brother at the cabin in Boulder Creek. I grabbed my uncle’s bottles of gin and vermouth and made us both a martini – that’s right, shaken, not stirred. We said a toast to his ghost in his honor. I believe that was in August 1964, the last time I went to Boulder Creek. I came down with the measles after kissing a girl that had them, and had to remain out of the sun.

My mother didn’t like me around girls and I think she was jealous. It was almost before graduation from high school that I could tell her truthfully that I was going out on a date. I believe my fear of women was the result of my mother’s discipline. I blew a lot of relations with women because once I detected my mother’s behavior in their actions I would freak out. I will let the shrinks work on that one if they wish.

Otherwise I was in favor of the American humorist Ogden Nash who boldly declared about the bedding of women: “Candy is dandy, but liquor is quicker!”

After I became a Junior, JFK was soon assassinated and the world started going to hell. Beatlemania was proof that America was suffering a nervous breakdown. On Friday nights we would get some beer and head out into the fig orchards – at the time Fresno had the largest fig orchards than anywhere else in the world – which were patrolled by the Sheriff’s department. We could hear their engines before they even got close and we always managed to avoid them and not get caught. My number one rule at this time, and still is, “Don’t get caught!” My number two rule is, “Don’t tell anybody”; and the third rule, “If you can’t do one and two, then don’t do it.”

For my science fair project in my Junior year chemistry class, I did an experiment with several of my classmates and took good notes. I wanted to show the effects of alcohol on the central nervous system by having my specimens write a poem after one drink, then a few minutes later the same poem after two, three and up to six, at which time I ended the experiment. The poem was a nonsense poem, the kind that were popular then:

Roses are red, violets are blue
I love peanut butter

I had to end the experiment because I was also one of the specimens, and after six drinks I didn’t give a damn anymore. We all had such tolerances that there was little difference in the handwriting from the first to the last drink, but you could tell some of the difference, making the experiment successful in my opinion. I took the handwritings and created a poster board laying out my experiment. When the judges asked me how I got the handwritings I had to lie because otherwise I would be confessing to underage drinking, which was a big no-no until drugs took over. I told them that my dad had done it at my request in a local bar, Herb’s Joint. Avoiding the

confession cost me a prize, but oh well, that's life. I always obey my number one rule.

And of course in 1965 – the year I graduated from high school – Life magazine did a pictorial on the class of 1965, since it marked the twentieth anniversary of the end of WWII. On the day I graduated, “Satisfaction” by the Rolling Stones was the number one hit on the Top Forty, while “Like a Rolling Stone,” by Bob Dylan, and “Stop in the Name of Love,” by the Supremes were the number two and three. I was really looking forward to my future, where the sky was the limit.

Talking about the Stones, one late spring day in 1964, a few of us, including Marilyn Livingstone (I called her “Doc,” a nickname that stuck from: “Dr. Livingstone, I presume?”), Ronni Gelegan, and Rosemary Marciochi, were partying at Christie McCarthy’s house on Maroa Street, and when Eric Hopper showed up, he had the new Rolling Stones album, their first one in the States, and we really rocked out to songs like Bobby Troup’s “Route 66,” “Suzie Q,” Buddy Holly’s “Not Fade Away,” Chuck Berry’s “Carol,” Rufus Thomas’ “Walking the Dog,” Marvin Gaye’s take on “Can I Get a Witness,” and the exquisitely raunchy “King Bee,” with verses like:

Well, I’m a King Bee, baby,
 Buzzin’ around your hive,
 I can make honey, baby,
 Let me come inside.

I love that memory. It’s always more fun with girls present. It was a great introduction to essentially black music that we never heard. In fact, one year later, I saw the Rolling Stones with the Byrds at a morning concert at Ratcliffe Stadium the day before they went to LA to record “Satisfaction,” a couple of weeks before graduation. The Stones were swarmed in the end by the audience after they played “The Last Time,” and they had to leave in an armored truck to protect

them. My friend, Eric Hopper, had a young teeny bopper sister that followed the Stones to the Holiday Inn on Freeway 99 and saw them get busted that afternoon by the police when one of the women traveling with them went topless out by the pool. That's Fresno for you.

When the Stones got to LA the next day, they recorded a TV show called Shindig, in which they performed many of their songs live. In fact, the whole show was dedicated to them. They played songs like "Little Red Rooster," and closed the show with a premiere performance of "Satisfaction," where Mick Jagger played his harmonica. They hadn't played it when they were in Fresno. "Satisfaction" was the number one rock song for over twenty years, with only "Stairway to Heaven," by Led Zeppelin finally toppling it from its throne.

The Spinach Bomb

I'm reluctant to tell this story because it involves explosives, a touchy subject after 9/11, but it's probably necessary since it had such a negative effect on my life. It was late April, 1964, and our cafeteria hang-out group was always up to mischief. We loved cake sales, for we would eat our lunches as close to the cakes on the table where they were being displayed. When no one was looking, one of us would grab a cake and then hide it under the table and then pass it down to the end where we would all gather round to devour it.

One day I brought a firecracker to school and we placed it under a plate and lit it, BANG! But it just dislodged the plate and hardly anyone noticed it. So to appease our disappointment, Tom Smiley brought a cherry bomb to school the next day and gave it to Melvin Richtel, because Smiley was in another lunch period. Richtel gave it to Gary Rossi, who had the bright idea of placing it inside a Hoppy's milk carton and then packing the carton with spinach.

The spinach at Bullard High was a constant complaint among the students. The year before the Senior class had taken a cafeteria plate with the horrid green slime to City Hall and placed it on the Mayor's desk, showing him the crap we were being forced to eat. I loved the idea of using that lousy spinach for a protest. We had all agreed that we would all hold the match together, thinking that if enough of us were involved, they wouldn't dare kick us all out of school.

However, as we moved the flame to the fuse, it went out, but not before everyone ran helter skelter out of the cafeteria. I was so disappointed that I lit another match, lit the fuse, and then ran. Before I got to the doors there was an enormous explosion. I turned my head and saw the blast wave as it blew open the side windows looking out over the quad. There was spinach everywhere. In fact, when my daughters went to summer school at Bullard twenty years later, there was still spinach stains on the ceiling.

The Vice-Principal, Loren Gaither, a royal class prick, rounded up the usual suspects, to wit, our entire cafeteria hang-out group. Gaither interrogated us one by one, saving me for last. He had that "I've got you now" look on his face as I sat down across from him. I learned later from a girl who had office duty that day, that after Gaither had whittled us down to Richtel and me, Loren asked Melvin if he had lit the cherry bomb, reminding him of his Jewish heritage.

"I swear to God, Mr. Gaither, I didn't do it," he replied in a begging manner.

Technically, that was true. He hadn't lit it. But not only had he attempted to light it, he also had provided the cherry bomb, a fact that he had conveniently omitted. Melvin eventually was able to go to a good law school and became a successful attorney. So did a few others in our

group. But at the time I held their fates in my hand. But I've never been a snitch.

Anyway, there were dozens of folded notes on his desk top. He told me frankly that if I confessed I would only be suspended for two weeks. It was near the end of the semester and after negotiating for being able to do my homework and making up tests in exchange for coming in the next day to scrape off the spinach stuck to the windows – I was still hanging on to my Number One Rule – when he waved his hand over the notes on his desk.

“Go ahead, pick any one up and read it,” he coaxed. I picked one at random and opened it slowly and with a sense of dread. It read, “Woody did it. He ruined my dress.” I was dead in the water. “Tell me who the others were in on this, Woody, and I promise to make it as easy on you as possible.”

“All right,” I said, foolishly believing that he would keep his word, “I did it and no one helped me. I did it all alone.” That really pissed him off. He had visions of himself being a great hero, breaking up a student revolt – a paranoid fantasy of the Greatest Generation at the time – and I was now getting in his way. I loved the look on that asshole's face.

That's one of my pet beef's: this myth that just because they had survived the Great Depression and World War II, their generation was the greatest. If it was so great, then why did the people who had worked so hard so that their kids could go to college, turn against their own kids when they ended up smarter because they had gone to college? Baby Boomers are much maligned – and I can see why, because more of us were Yuppies – Young Republicans – than hippies or war protesters – but I believe we were the Greatest Generation, because we fought for free speech and an end to Wars of Imperialism, well at least until President George W. Bush,

who gave us the useless and mindless war in Iraq.

As far as I am concerned, the so-called Greatest Generation gave us Vietnam, and that is a great weight against them, especially when the hard-hat workers turned against their kids in the streets. It took Watergate and Nixon to make them realize that the government lies to us all the time.

Well, I came to school the next day and scraped that damn stuff off the windows, on full display in front of the other students, who didn't attempt to conceal their laughter. I did my time and my homework. I had a high B average before the cherry bomb and needed that at a minimum if I wanted to run for student office in the fall.

My suspension ended on a Thursday, and when I entered the campus, someone, namely Bart Ginsburg, had climbed to the cafeteria roof the night before – and where the weekly event board was posted, had added: “Thursday: Woody Returns.” That was a hoot. Gaither even tried to blame it on me. So much for his crackdown on the student revolt.

Anyway when I tried to turn in my homework, only Ms. Bennett, my English teacher – it was in her class room when the speaker system came on and announced the death of JFK – and Mr. Crill, my American History teacher, would take them. Crill told me that Vernon Walker, the Principal, had ordered all of my teachers to flunk me. They all followed orders except Bennett and Crill, but even then I ended that semester with 4 D's and 2 C's – the C's in Ms. Bennett's and Crill's classes.

I marched furiously into Gaither's office and demanded to know why he weasled out of the deal we had made. He shrugged and said Walker overruled him and there was nothing he

could do about it. So much for running for student office in the fall.

I even got a visit from the Fire Marshall who came to our house for the lecture my mother seemed to enjoy. If I had to do relive that day I would not have chosen to light that damn fuse. I had played a minor role but I ended up being overly punished in my opinion. I got some satisfaction from saving the careers of some of my so-called friends, not sure to this day if they really deserved my sacrifice for them.

And every time I think about it, the amusement is soon quenched when I think of the poor girls and their dresses. The silver lining was that no one was injured.

Where the Action Is

The Summer of '65, after graduating from Hoover High – I was out of the Bullard High district and needed a transfer to attend, which that prick Walker wouldn't accept, forcing me to attend Hoover – also marked a milestone in the history of rock'n'roll. Dick Clark started a new spinoff from American Bandstand, starting a new show on the West Coast called Where the Action Is, getting Freddy "Boom-Boom" Cannon to sing the theme song. "Palisades Park" is by far my favorite Freddy Cannon song.

Paul Revere and the Raiders were a regular act on the show and during this period they released some of their most popular works. For example, "Just Like Me" has one of the earliest lead guitar solos in the heavy metal style, the other group leading the way being The Kinks. The lead guitar player for Paul Revere even named his guitar "Fang." Sonny and Cher were big hits at that time as well.

At the end of that summer, we would ditch surf in the canal that ran out by Fig Garden

Drive. You had a least of mile of uninterrupted canal through the fig orchards so you would have a really good ride. We were propelled by tying the rope to a car's bumper which would drive along the dirt path on one side of the canal while the surfer held the other end. We all got drunk on Carlo Rossi's Red Mountain Wine and while I was traveling in Burt Kennedy's old Nash Rambler on one of the rides, he ran it off the path and it rolled over down the bank. Fortunately, only the car suffered damage. That was a lot of fun. As I rode home with another pal, Chuck Cunningham, we left Frank Gash and Burt Kennedy running naked through the fig orchards, terrorizing the Mexican workers.

And before I forget, at the end of the Summer of 1964, the Animals came out with "House of the Rising Sun," a song that really knocked me out, and "Remember (Walking in the Sand)" by the Shangri-Las and "She's Not There," by the Zombies, really turned me on. At the beginning of my Senior year the Kinks came out with "You Really Got Me," and kicked off the heavy metal music scene. Signs of good things to come. Or not.

Unfortunately, the Johnson government celebrated our generation by sending a good portion of us off to Vietnam. No one I knew was gung ho about going there. I got a college deferment since it seemed like a really bad war. I remembered all those episodes of the Big Picture that had highlighted the Green Berets over there. A jungle looked like a lousy place to wage war.

I couldn't understand how Americans could be drafted when Congress had not declared war. After all that was a constitutional mandate. I knew this because we had to learn the Constitution before we could graduate from the 8th grade at Wolters Elementary. By the time my

daughters went to high school, Civics was no longer a requirement for graduation. Is it any wonder that they are all mainly socialists at heart?

Tom Smiley

In 1966, in my second year at Fresno City College, in my World History class, the instructor gave us an assignment to read certain chapters in the Book of Daniel that were relevant to the civilization of the Babylonian Empire. The instructor was brought up a Lutheran, but hated the Roman Catholic Church so much he eventually became an atheist.

Oh, yeah, around the same time, Barry McGuire came out with “The Eve of Destruction,” and the Byrds came out with “Turn! Turn! Turn!,” a song by Pete Seeger. My mother pointed out that the song was adapted from a passage in the Bible, but was unable to tell me where. My good friend, Tom Smiley, a staunch Lutheran who believed in Adam and Eve and Noah’s Ark, showed me where in the Book of Ecclesiastes the song had been adapted.

I really liked the TV show Star Trek at this time, but only watched it occasionally because of the night it was broadcast. As much as I could I would get out of the house and avoid trouble with my brother and my mother. Just being around them disturbed me mentally. It was hard to study at home for the second my brother got home from school he would turn on the TV at almost full volume and not turn it off until after midnight. I actually spent a lot of time in the City College library where I could rehearse my lines in Speech class with a tape recorder. I won fourth place in a speech contest at the University of the Pacific College in Stockton.

Years later I participated in the George A. Hopper Moot Court Competition with my partner, Janet Maus – who got me through law school – sponsored by our law school, San

Joaquin College of Law, held in the downtown County Court House, and we took first place. I love to present evidence at a criminal jury trial and to cross examine witnesses, especially liars, and most people lie under oath on the witness stand, especially law enforcement.

Anyway, back in my City College days – tuition was free, but you had to pay for your books and student body card, which gave you discounts at Movie Theaters, which cost ten dollars – Mark Chenault’s dad’s local radio station, KYNO, would stop playing the Top Forty Sunday Nights at 11 p.m., to air “Teen Dialogue,” where Big Bufe Karraker, a local pastor, addressed problems local Christian teenagers experienced in high school. He would raise the topic, then take phone calls from his audience, mostly judgmental Christians.

I remember getting really angry one night when the movie The Graduate was being condemned. The listeners were especially peeved over the hit song from the movie, “Mrs. Robinson,” by Simon and Garfunkel. The verse that stated that Jesus loves Mrs. Robinson more than she knows really pissed them off. It seems that adultery was unforgiveable to these people and Jesus forgiving Mrs. Robinson was letting her get away with it. I was sure glad that I was not a Christian.

I mean, they acted like the story of the woman caught in the act of adultery in the Gospel of John (8:1-11) wasn’t in the Bible. These Christians didn’t realize that they were the stone throwers in the story and were too self-righteous to know it. After all, in the story Jesus did not condemn the woman. He let her get away with it. I doubt if Simon and Garfunkel are Christians, but they understood the story better than the Christians who called in.

Christians had first bugged me when pastors were calling for the burning of Beatles

records because John Lennon had bragged that they were more popular than Jesus. Why was Truth so upsetting to these people? We used to joke that there were more churches in Fresno than gas stations.

Tom and I had been debate team partners and competed in several rounds at scheduled events. Tom had been in the class from the beginning of the Fall semester, but I had joined at the beginning of the Spring. Thus Tom had already accumulated an acceptable file but he expected me to reinvent it all from scratch before he would discuss it with me, whereas I told him we both could use his file and that way we would have more time to rehearse together. He never saw it that way. I also argued that if he taught me what he knew, he would know it better than anyone else in the competitions to come. He didn't go for that one either.

Thus, we never won a round because the opposing team would raise an obscure point and I was unable to answer it because I didn't know the file well enough. Once Tom made up his mind about something – win or lose – there was no changing it.

He was like most Christians who are horrified by the idea of Universal Salvation, because you don't have to earn it the hard way, and being of German heritage, he was very stubborn and uptight about some things. You would have thought that Lutherans would understand what true Grace was.

Tom wanted me to learn it the hard way and saw it as a wrong thing to just give it to me. Anyway, we were at a competition at a junior college in Chula Vista, and the first night, friends of ours from Fresno, Dave Rice and Jerry Harley, picked us up at the motel in which our team was staying, and drove us to Tijuana. We hit the bars on Avenida Revolucion – Revolution

Avenue – and in one where you had to descend a flight of rickety stairs, we were immediately swarmed by whores who saw it just as easy to grab you by your balls as shake your hand.

The whores, though eager for our money, did not like Americans and within a half hour Tom started a fight with a drunk Mexican. We had to fight our way up the stairs to escape for the whole bar turned against us, and once we got into our car, another Mexican in a car next to ours, pulled out a knife and started jabbing it at the passenger window, which was my window since I was riding shotgun. Just then a cop put on his lights and both we and the crazy driver with the knife pulled over on a very dark side street.

As he took a statement from Dave, Tom started to sneak up around the cars to come at the cop behind his back. I told Dave to drop the complaint he was making about the knife, and after he did, the cop let us both go. As we drove back to the border, I asked Tom what he was going to do sneaking up on the cop like he had. He answered, “I’m not going to the Tijuana jail! Haven’t you heard about bad it is?”

I saw that he had thought about using violence against the police, but I soon forgot this since we were both drunk out of our minds. The irony of all this was the fact that one year later we both spent three days in the Ensenada Jail, which had just as bad a reputation.

On way back to our motel, we listened to Wolfman Jack on the radio, for his station was located in Chula Vista, where a gigantic radio transmitter was located not far away in Mexico, in violation of the FCC, so that the station was broadcast over a huge area. In his deep booming voice, he would howl and declare his station as “the Bix X over Chula Vista,” and later, “the Big X over Los Angeles.” When the atmospheric conditons were just right we could catch it as far

away as Fresno, and if the movie American Graffiti is correct, George Lucas used to get it as far north as Modesto. He even had the station located in the movie near Modesto there for dramatic effect.

At the beginning of the Summer of 1966 I started to notice changes in Tom's personality. We had spent the last semester at City as a debate team partners, and Tom would get very critical with me. By the end of the school year, all he wanted to do was to fight, and to get his friends to fight with him he bought a pair of boxing gloves. I never had boxing lessons but that didn't prevent me from getting into fights. I lost as many fights as I won, but I gave up fighting when I was 21 because win or lose, I always felt like hell the next day with the usual black eyes, busted lips, and torn pants, especially at the knees.

Bullard High School had some great fighters, like the Binatena brothers, Ken and Alan, Dennis DeLiddo, and George Peverill, who was short but one of the best fighters I've ever seen, easily taking on big country boys. These guys were my genuine heroes. They saved me so many times at dances and other events where our natural enemies, the dudes at Clovis High, were always getting into rumbles with us.

DeLiddo became the best wrestling coach in Fresno State history. I remember in wrestling tryouts at the beginning of my Junior year at Bullard High, when I wrestled Alan Binatena, Dennis was right there giving Alan pointers, and I barely made it to a draw. Once again, that all fell through because my mom wouldn't sign the permission slip.

The free-for-all kind of fights you see in most John Wayne movies, where you hit the guy next to you and hope it's not your friend, were quite common. For example, we would all be

having a good time at the Rainbow Ballroom dancing with pretty girls to the live bands, while the overhead light ball – later known as a disco ball – made moving spot patterns on the floor – until someone would holler, “Bullard!” which was a call to battle stations, and the free-for-all melee would begin.

Well, the Bullard champs had an apartment across the street from Fresno State and we’d go over there to party and have fun. One night Smiley wanted to fight me so bad that he started deliberately annoying me in a way that led to me getting so pissed off that I put on the gloves and went out into the parking lot with him. After about ten minutes of solid hitting, I managed a hard uppercut that caught him on the chin and knocked him off his feet. But even though we took a pause afterwards for about ten minutes, he couldn’t wait to get back at it. The Binatenas, DeLiddo, and Pevrill were fully attentive, circling us like boxing coaches, giving us pointers – we were really making their day. And then Tom caught me with an uppercut and knocked me on my ass.

“That’s it!” I shouted, walking away. “You win. I’m going home.” And that was that. But at least I had shown some true grit in front of my heroes and it became a really cool memory.

Strange Days

Tom and I began experimenting with marijuana at the end of that summer and the winter of 1967. I bought a hookah pipe and we’d smoke and listen to the Doors, Country Joe and the Fish, Jefferson Airplane, Donovan, Bob Dylan, Big Brother and the Holding Company, the Grateful Dead, Cream, and, of course, James Brown and Jimi Hendrix.

My mother really liked Tom, and she would flirt with him and my other male friends

whenever they came over and she was home. I discovered years later that when they got together when I was not present they would talk about screwing her. What a lousy mother.

That Spring Tom and I visited Frank Gash who attended UCLA and lived in a Fraternity house. We would get wasted and then run around the area naked, going on Indian raids, and other crazy things. One night we went to a popular night club in Westwood, fully clothed of course, but only Frank was admitted because he had a better fake I.D. than we did.

There was a bar across the street with a golden rooster neon sign. We went in and sat at the bar and it took us awhile to realize that it was a gay bar. The first clue was that there were no women present. I was sitting next to a young man who started buying me drinks. Things were going fine until he realized that we weren't gay and he was wasting his time and money. One huge guy with long curly blond hair got offended and lifted me up off my stool by my shirt collar at the nape of my neck and proceeded to carry me to the entrance.

I don't know if he was going to drop kick me, but I suddenly realized who he looked like. I looked him in the eye and shouted gleefully, "You're Gorgeous George! The greatest wrestler in the world! Can I have your autograph?" He put me down and sat me at his table and bought me a drink, after which he told me to get the hell out of there. I never got his autograph. But even if I would have, it would have been a forgery. The real Gorgeous George had been dead for four years.

Smiley and I then hitchhiked back to Fresno and the first person to pick us up had gone to Fresno State with Al Radka and had many humorous stories to tell, but he only took us so far as San Fernando. Almost immediately after he dropped us off, it began pouring rain. We were

drenched immediately, which made Tom really sad because he had bought a poster of Bob Dylan, who he was really into at the time, and it was ruined in the downpour. Cops eventually pulled us over and gave us both a ticket for hitchhiking on the Freeway, then they drove us a few miles up the road out of their jurisdiction where we were told it was easier for drivers to see us.

There was a connecting road that wound down a hill, so we walked down it to see if we could get some shelter. As we rounded a corner, we were confronted with a Billboard that proclaimed: "Jesus Saves." There was a house at the end of the road and a toolshed. There were no lights on in the house and we stared through the back porch window to the inside where it was warm and dry.

Thoughts of breaking and entering entered our minds and just when we began to vocalize our thoughts, a car pulled up with the family that lived there. They were returning from an Evangelism Convention in Texas and had arrived back home at that exact moment. They gave us some blankets and an electric heater and let us spend the night in the tool shed. Here were some Christians who actually practiced what they preached. We slept poorly, but we were semi-warm and dry. We walked up the road in the morning and almost immediately got a ride from a sailor on leave. So, for one night, Jesus really did save us.

In my last semester in Junior College, I, Frank and my brother took a Music Appreciation class from Mr. Moser, an ex-Austrian. We would smoke a joint before class and then enjoy the classical music in style. Our instructor made me appreciate Mozart among others.

Speaking of Mozart, on the plane from SEATAC taking me to Ft. Leavenworth following the defeat of an appeal to the General at Ft. Lewis, the black commander of the Stockade

escorted me on the trip without handcuffs, and as we flew over Mount Ranier, which was absolutely beautiful, I dialed in an airplane radio channel with the earphones provided, and between the sight of Mount Ranier, sparkling in the bright sun as the light was reflected off the snow capped peak, the music was Mozart's Symphony Number 41 in C major, otherwise known as the Jupiter Symphony. The music and the scenery were so perfectly synchronized that it felt surreal, which was just fine because it took my mind off the fate that was waiting for me at Leavenworth.

The Summer of Love

Back in 1967, it was the Summer of Love – which was a truism in my case – and at the end of June, Tom, I, and Frank rented an apartment in Sin City, a popular student party district just west of Fresno State College. We had parties there almost every night and the police were being constantly called for noise disturbance. I was into Marsha Storms, the beautiful 22 year old blonde graduate who lived in an apartment above our own, and Tom was into his new fad, body building. Marsha was the first girl who lived up to my expectations of beauty, a true Hugh Hefner girl next door.

I had one of the most enjoyable afternoons of my life smoking a joint with Marsha and listening to Sgt. Pepper's Lonely Heart Band all the way through. Afterwards we took a shower and made love. I'll never forget the feeling of deep satisfaction I got when I drove Marsha up to Millerton Lake in my top-down Triumph Spitfire. The sun was hot and blazing overhead, the wind was blowing through our hair, and I was shirtless in my swim trunks and she was in her tiny bikini, and as we descended into the river valley between the bluffs of the San Joaquin River,

Cream was on the radio playing “I Feel Free.”

Another perfect moment where the music matched the scenery. Even though that affair ended badly, there were still some perfect moments to be had, especially when we got back to my apartment. Tom and Frank were out of town in L.A. and I had the place to myself. I enjoyed Paradise the whole time I was in it. We had some great moments in bed listening to the Thunderball and Lawrence of Arabia soundtracks.

One night Tom brought one of his new friends to our apartment who shared a mutual interest in another thing Smiley was really into: motorcycles. He was called Morgan and had been a member of the original Hell’s Angels chapter near Ratcliffe Stadium in Fresno, before the Fresno Police Department chased them out of town. He was a regular guy who had a very friendly Doberman Pinscher named Doby.

One night when I came home after work, Tom was in the driveway, shirtless, holding Doby by the collar, using him as a shield from being arrested by the police, who were there for God only knows why – I believe it was for being drunk and disorderly in public. The cops eventually grabbed him and put him in the back of a paddy wagon, leaving Doby in my custody. This proved to be wake-up call for Tom, for he decided after getting out of jail to drop out of college and volunteer for the draft.

One night Morgan asked me if I wanted to go for a joy-ride on Tom’s motorcycle. Sure, I said, liking the idea of riding with one of the original Hell’s Angels. He raced down Blackstone to Belmont like a bat out of hell with me hanging on for dear life, breaking all kinds of traffic laws. He eventually ended up dumping us both in a parking lot downtown and I burned my leg

against the hot exhaust pipe.

There was one time during this wild ride when he turned off Belmont onto a dirt trail next to an irrigation canal that was really exciting. He told me that this was a shortcut that the Angels always used when eluding chasing police squad cars. Fortunately there were no police cars in pursuit that night.

I Can See For Miles

In the Fall Tom spent his Basic Training at Ft. Lewis, Washington (where my brother was born), and his Advanced Infantry Training at Ft. Polk, Louisiana, aka “Tiger Land.” He came home for Christmas after Basic Training, and we spent time getting high with my hookah pipe, listening to Their Satanic Majesties Request, the Rolling Stones’ answer to Sergeant Pepper’s Lonely Heart Band. I can still hear “She’s a Rainbow,” and enjoy the raunchy irony of “She comes in colors,” and tripping to the psychedelic “2000 Light Years from Home.”

We also went to the Big Brother and the Holding Company concert at the Rainbow, and had our minds blown by Janis Joplin and the lead guitar player. The band came on stage, and since they had already put on a show earlier, their instruments were all tuned and ready to go. Suddenly the lights came on and Janis immediately went into “Down on Me,” and never stopped. It was a flawless performance and the best concert I ever attended.

It was not too much longer after Big Brother that the Buffalo Springfield played at the Rainbow. They started off slow and out of tune, and it was looking like a bum concert, but at the halfway point, realizing the audience was not digging them, they went into “Bluebird,” and the place started rocking and was finally ready for “Mr. Soul.” And “For What It’s Worth” was

perfectly performed.

I really liked Aretha Franklin and Marvin Gaye, and wished that if I could sing I would want a voice like his. In fact, I was really into Berry Gordy's Motown Sound, with songwriters like Smokey Robinson and singers like Stevie Wonder, and groups like Gladys Knight and the Pips, the Temptations, and the Supremes. Black people didn't seem so scary any more.

On Christmas night a few of us scaled Little Table Top Mountain. We were semi-intoxicated but managed the semi-difficult climb. There was a huge metal cross painted silver planted on top by some church where Easter sunrise services were held. We hung our legs over a precipice, smoked joints and spaced out on the excellent view. The night was cloudless and crystal clear and it was easy to imagine Santa driving his sleigh across the starlit sky.

A friend of mine, Rocky Morelli, owned a Porsche, and we would drive out into the country with my hookah pipe and smoke grass at a floodgate we called the Castle at the Clovis Reservoir. It hardly ever snows in Fresno, and one night when we were driving home in a snow flurry, I had one of the most pleasant psychedelic experiences of my life. Staring out the windshield with the snow hitting the glass, with the windshield wipers keeping time, I tranced out as the Who sang a new song on the radio: "I can see for miles, and miles, and miles, and miles...."

The world seemed so perfect then.

Rocky had lettered in golf at Bullard High and he would often drive out onto the Fort Washington Country Club golf course and give us a tour, going over the lay of the course, how he had done this hole or that – his memory of his glory days in high school was phenomenal.

When Tom came home again in the Spring after he finished AIT, he told us that he had had the option of remaining at Ft. Polk as a drill sergeant or going to Vietnam. He chose Viet Nam. He really wanted to kill people and his personality had taken a change to the dark side.

On the day he left for the Nam, I said farewell to him in front of the branch library in Fig Garden Village where I had picked up a copy of the new Alistair MacLean thriller: I believe it was Where Eagles Dare. Don't ask me how, but I knew intuitively that it would be the last time I would ever see him, and, unfortunately, I was right. He didn't even last a month. I got a letter from him five days after I learned that he'd been killed and it disturbed me deeply. He bragged about being the machinegunner in his unit and firing down from the central highlands around Pleiku into the Ho Chi Minh trail until the barrel was glowing red, and thought it was hilarious when another soldier in his unit lined up a few Vietnamese at a village bar and shot them execution style. He also sent me a picture of a young woman's vagina saying that this is where the action was in Nam.

He was traveling in a convoy on top of an Armored Personnel Carrier, manning the 50 caliber machinegun, when their convoy was ambushed. It started with a Viet Cong RPG rocket launched at Smiley's APC. Eleven soldiers were killed in the ambush, including Smiley, who was recovered in pieces. My mother was devastated over Tom's death.

I held the American government responsible for Smiley's death, but after reflection, many years later, I had to admit that Tom had undergone a personality change and really wanted to kill the enemy. Thus, he died happy and with his boots on.

Purple Haze

At the time Rocky roomed with Chainsaw Adams, one of his old classmates at Bullard High, in an old house on the northwest corner of Sierra and Fresno. Chainsaw had one of the loudest, longest, and most hilarious bird calls I have ever heard. One night we snorted meth and I painted the clay bowl of my hookah, matching all the pieces – it had been broken and glued back together at least two times before – with a different day glow paint color on each piece, and the hoses as well, so that it would look really psychedelic under the black light. But the first time we used it after that someone jerked his hose when he fell back and knocked it over and broke the bowl for the third and final time. Well, it had been a good hookah while it lasted.

One night Rocky gave us all tabs of what he said was really good acid. We all got a speed rush because that's all it was. It was just speed and I was glad because LSD was alleged by the press to screw with your chromosomes, trying to make you believe that if you took it your kids would be deformed from the damaged chromosomes. Chainsaw asked me if I believed in God and I told him that if God created the infinite universe, then he must be greater than infinity.

“How can something be greater than infinity,” he asked. I answered that infinity represented the outer boundary of human perception, so it was kind of a moot question. I even created a formula for this: God = infinity plus.

Well, after Tom died and I realized how short life could be, I started taking a lot of LSD, beginning on May 7th, Tom's birthday. Tom had been blown to pieces on May 5th, two days before he turned 21. A year to the date earlier, Tom and I had spent three days in the Carcel de Municipal, the local jail in Ensenada, Mexico. In the year before that, 1966, the Americans who

partook in the Cinco de Mayo Yacht Race between Newport Beach and Ensenada had rioted and to prevent another one 5,000 Federales had been sent to keep the peace. They accomplished this by randomly rounding up Americans, throwing them in jail, then charging them \$15.00 a head to get out. This was to be the fate of over 500 Americans over the weekend, including Tom and me.

I was captured stumbling around inside Hussong's Cantina with Eric Hopper, in a tequila haze. The cop took me outside and before I had a chance to bribe him, he waved his arm and flagged down a passing paddy wagon. I said, "Hey, wait a minute," and turned to flee. But by then three other cops joined us and grabbed me, hitting me constantly over my head with their batons.

They literally uno – dos – tres'ed me, taking me by the arms and legs and then tossing me inside. There was a young American on the bench inside who looked at me with a look of stark fear on his face. "Hey, man," he said, "what part of LA is this?"

He was serious so I told him he was in Ensenada, Baja Mexico. He was so stoned on acid that he had forgotten about his trip to Mexico. As we took our time getting to the police station for booking, he explained that he and a couple of friends had taken the LSD in LA and he had been in a dream since then. They had driven down to Ensenada in a red VW bug, and he was sure his friends would bail him out the next morning. This gave me some encouragement since Hopper had been with me and knew what had happened to me.

As I dried out from my tequila binge in a huge cement dome covered drunk tank in the Carcel de Munipal, the door opened and Tom was tossed inside. I said, "Hi, Tom, what took you

so long to get here?”

The next morning the guards held a roll call, and when they called your name, “Woodrow Edgore Nicholas, Junior (pronounced with a Y instead of a J sound) – you would raise your hand and state: “Presente!” The Ensenada jail was a really fucked-up place.

On the second day a fat Mexican in an expensive new suit was tossed in with us. He had been arrested for being drunk and for perhaps being gay. He was outraged and when he put his head in the open window of the door to our cell, grabbing the bars, he began to angrily berate the guards. One walked by and hit him in the nose with a rubber hose, shattering it. There was blood everywhere but there was a doctor from Berkeley there to treat him.

Juan, the head bandito of Ensenada had joined our group a half-hour earlier. The police would throw him in jail twice a year and hold him for ransom until his gang came up with enough money to get him out. He was a Robin Hood type figure and wasted no time when he saw an opportunity. He snapped his fingers and three members of his gang went to the unconscious Mexican business man and stripped off his new suit – the doctor was still treating him and worked around the brief disturbance – and replaced them with rags.

Then Juan called for the guard and passed the new suit through the window. A half hour later the guard came back with a kilo of marijuana wrapped in old newspapers. Juan and his gang then rolled up big joints with the old newspapers and partied. They invited me but I wasn't going to get into any more trouble than I had to.

Later, Juan called me over and told me that if I taught him how to spell “TRUTH” in English – he was going to paint the plastered white walls of the city with the word in red paint –

and in exchange, he would make sure none of the inmates butt-fucked me when I went to sleep. It seemed like a really good deal and he was a swift learner. We only spent a few minutes tracing capital letters on the dirt floor. I had no idea what Juan's politics were but he was an okay guy as far as I was concerned. They said that sometimes Juan was even able to get whores inside the cell.

Later that afternoon, the acid head from LA was bailed out by his friends and we hoped our friends would do the same. They never did, nor did they inform our parents what had happened to us when they returned to Fresno. The only person I would have trusted to bail me out was Tom, and he was inside with me.

That evening they brought in a drug dealer who had swallowed all of the pills he was selling to destroy the evidence. They left him to die in our cell, which he did a few hours later, after moaning and struggling to breathe the whole time. Every time he would stop breathing, we would turn him on his side and he would start breathing again, but the last time he didn't. After he passed, the guards came in and dragged him out, face down, by his feet.

Another new Mexican inmate was so stoned out of his mind that he jumped up on the top of the wall – it was about ten feet high and the top was covered with broken glass cemented in place – and after shredding his hands and jumping down into the corridor on the other side, the guards rapidly bashed him in the head with a rifle butt and dragged him off unconscious and bleeding to the hole. I couldn't believe there was a worse place than the cell in which we were imprisoned. The toilet was a hole in the ground in a small enclosure and I refused to use it.

The same for the food. The guards would bring in a big kettle filled with beans and

swirling mysteries, with flies buzzing over it. You needed a cup to scoop whatever it was out of the kettle, otherwise you used your hands. I never touched that stuff. Luckily, Tom had stashed his money in a sock when the police arrested him and he learned enough Spanish to order tacos for us through the door's window, and the guards would get them from the little restaurant next door.

I ate in that little restaurant the day I got out. Two tacos, refried beans, and a Coke cost me a quarter. Money went a long way in Mexico.

Tom eventually managed to bribe the guard to make a phone call to our parents who had already been notified of our predicament from the doctor from Berkeley. At night huge moths would come out and land on the walls and then be caught and eaten by hungry birds, which were smaller than the moths. The Carcel de Municipal was a place you never wanted to be.

We eventually were released after three days with the intervention of the Berkeley doctor who had been arrested as he double parked on a street to help a young boy who was hurt. He had planned to go deep sea fishing with the chief of police, but it took him two days to get word to the chief as to why he had not shown up for the date. He was unable to argue his case because he had been knocked unconscious by a Federale and had a deep purple bruise beneath his right eye.

Tom's father was also a doctor and because of professional courtesy he was more than willing to get word to our parents so that we could bail out. My mother was furious because she had forbidden me to go and I had gone anyway. Mrs. Smiley had to beg her to come up with the money to bail me out and buy me a plane ticket home from L.A. Anyway, on the third day the chief of police picked us up in his black Cadillac and took me to the Western Union office to get

our bail while Tom waited at the edge of town by the highway so he could flag down Frank from UCLA who had agreed to drive down and pick us up.

After I got the money and paid off our fines, I returned to Hussong's Cantina and had a beer with one of the regulars at the bar. Hussong's was an old expatriot's bar, founded in 1892 and the birthplace of the Margarita, a drink Don Carlos Orozco invented for Margarita Henkel, the daughter of the German ambassador to Mexico, so the legend goes.

The regular was a rich American expatriot who had a house next to Bing Crosby's, and when he asked me what I had been doing, I told him about our adventure. He then pulled out his wallet and removed a plastic covered card.

"You need one of these," he said, handing me the card. It had an official emblem on it and was entitled "Protectione." It was a get out jail free card that you could buy from the police for a thousand dollars a year, and unless you killed someone, the police would leave you alone.

Then he asked me if I knew the kids that had died in a horrible crash when they had driven their VW bug off a cliff. This was easy to do for someone not familiar with the new highway development along the coast. We had noticed coming in to Ensenada that many turnoffs in the cliff area dead-ended to nowhere with no warning signs and had laughed at the idea of blindly driving off the cliffs thinking the turnoffs actually led somewhere. And if the kids had been stoned or drunk they could have done it unknowingly. I immediately thought of the acid head from LA.

"Do you know what color the VW was?" I asked.

"I believe it was red," he answered. My God, the kid from LA never made it back home.

I had another beer and then joined Tom at the edge of town where eventually Frank picked us up and we were out of there. One year later Tom was dead.

As a result I started dropping acid at least twice a week, and sometimes three times a week. One of the first things I learned on acid was that everybody is crazy. I also wanted to discover if it were true that you could find God on acid. At the end of May, I attended a party in Sin City where the renter of an apartment – Apartment “H” for hash – was a notorious hash dealer.

Earlier, we had spent a miserable three hours at a rock concert with Frank Zappa’s Mothers of Invention, and Mike Bloomfield’s “Electric Flag” as the opening act. Bloomfield was a favorite of mine for he had played with the Paul Butterfield Blues Band for the East-West album which is still great to listen to. I saw Butterfield twice, and both of them were on my best concerts list, so to see Bloomfield was a real treat. He had provided the sound track for the movie, The Trip, starring Peter Fonda. Unfortunately, the promoters were cheapskates and gave Bloomfield a horrible sound system. After he struggled through two songs, he threw his guitar down, said a few choice words about the sound system, then stormed off the stage with the rest of his group which included Buddy Miles.

When the Mothers finally took the stage after an unbelievable delay, they said the sound system was just right for them and put on their act. The acid I had taken was weak and I never really got off on it, so at the party afterwards I was somewhat bummed. We soon smoked all of the hash through a Viking-type horn pipe because the hash dealer knew the cops were on to him. Since there were no more drugs, we spent the time amusing ourselves. About one o’clock in the

morning, a good looking girl left with her boyfriend, and I remember thinking that that was too bad because, like I said, she was good-looking. But I changed my mind about her, especially in the months afterwards, since she came back to the party by herself with a couple of lids of marijuana, stating that it was too bad they were out of grass and she wanted to keep the party going. She placed one lid on the kitchen table, but no one was interested enough to start rolling joints. She hung out in the hallway leading to the bedrooms and watched us.

A group of us, including Rocky, were sitting in a circle in the living room playing with some spinning object that was somewhat mesmerizing and for the first time that night I began to finally get off on the acid. But that all got bum-tripped when a few minutes later, there was a loud knock on the door followed immediately by the Fresno Police Narco Squad, who kicked down the door and came in armed to the teeth. “Nobody move!” they shouted. But no one had moved except the girl who had brought the grass, who ran into the bedroom. When the police ordered everyone not to move, there were a few seconds delay, then everyone cracked up and began laughing hysterically because we had all been frozen stiff.

It was now about two in the morning, and all 25 of those present, including myself, were arrested and taken to the Fresno County Jail. But first they took us to the downtown police station and put us all in a holding cell, where you had to get the guard’s attention to push the outside flush mechanism for the toilet.

Even though we had all been patted down before being stuffed inside a paddy wagon, several party members still had concealed drugs on their persons. They tossed a lot of pills into the toilet and then called the guard and told him they had just taken a dump and would he please

flush the toilet. The officer happily complied, getting rid of the all the evidence, except for the two lids of marijuana that they allegedly “found” in the apartment, obviously planted by the girl snitch, who was working off a previous bust. Guess where the drugs were found? One lid in the kitchen that hadn’t been touched, and one in a dresser drawer in the bedroom.

I remembered that the girl had left the party with her guy the moment she discovered that all the grass and hash were gone, and had returned minutes before the bust with the required evidence. What a scam the whole thing was. They called her in to be interrogated first and we all listened and heard her screaming down the hall. They were building up the fear, but it wasn’t working that much. But what a melodramatic performance!

When it was my time to be interrogated, I remained silent until the detective asked me if I smoked marijuana, and after thinking, I answered no, thinking that a denial was better than a confession. This was really stupid of me. I could have been easily impeached and proven to be a liar, which under the Rules of Evidence, is evidence which can be used against you to prove consciousness of guilt. So natural thinking proved to be counter-intuitive to legal thinking. Never talk to the police unless you have a required lawyer present. A denial is often a confession.

Before my mother bailed me out late the next morning, we were subjected to two Bible missionaries who played a taped sermon from a Billy Graham crusade. Graham’s theme was the end of the world and he preached that we were living in the last days and needed to be prepared to face Jesus when he returned from heaven to judge us. We laughed and mocked them, but the message stirred something deep inside me that I was unable to name.

Depending upon what room you had been in at the time of the bust measured whether you were charged with a misdemeanor or a felony. We had much earlier finished off all of the hash, and the only drugs present were two lids of marijuana found in the kitchen and back bedroom. I had been in the living room and was charged with a misdemeanor. Rocky was a rock concert promoter, and he was sitting next to me at the time, also in the living room.

He used to promote acts at the Rainbow Ballroom in old downtown Fresno, where acts like Paul Revere and the Raiders, before they became famous, and later the Santana Blues Band, also before they became famous at Woodstock, used to play regularly. Rocky was well off and he was able to afford a good defense attorney, an aggressive woman. She arranged with the DA a good plea bargain: everyone in the living room got their case dismissed, because being unable to prove that the people in the living room knew about the grass in the kitchen and bedroom, we were technically “merely present,” while those in the kitchen and bedroom went down with misdemeanors because the DA was able to prove knowledge by the room they were in. For a couple of weeks it was the largest drug bust in California history.

In-A-Gadda-Da-Vida

A week earlier I had been on the top of the world. Rocky brought several groups to the Fresno Convention Center’s Exhibition Hall, with Iron Butterfly receiving the top billing. I got to introduce them, but because the acid I had dropped started to rush my perception of the world, I introduced them before they tuned their instruments, so the introduction came out lame. I was going to read the famous sky pilot poem, “High Flight,” by John Gillespie Magee, Jr., that begins with, “Oh! I have slipped the surly bonds of earth,” and ends with, “Put out my hand, and touch

the face of God,” but I ruled that out once I faced the audience. I had started hallucinating and as I looked at the poem, the words started crawling across the page like little bugs and wouldn’t stay still enough for me to read them. I couldn’t wait to get off that stage.

President Reagan did a much better job with the poem at a ceremony mourning the astronauts who had perished in the Challenger Disaster, which took place near the end of my first year in law school.

The Iron Butterfly concert audience got to hear a brand new song the band was going to record the next day in LA for their new album, called “In-A-Gadda-Da-Vida,” which was a real crowd pleaser. We partied with them afterwards in the “H” for hash apartment. I asked the leader, Doug Ingle, about the name of the song, wondering if it had anything to do with the Garden of Eden. He told me that that was the original title of the song, but one night he was really drunk and reciting the words to the song to the drummer, when instead of the title he blabbered “In-A-Gadda-Da-Vida” instead. They all laughed and liked that title better.

They had a new very young guitar player, a guy barely out of high school who had been a concert violinist. However, he proved to be a worthy successor. I had been a big fan of the original lead guitar player, who had taken LSD too many times and was now under psychiatric care. Oh, well, I thought, really getting into the groove of the song with a pretty young blonde cheerleader next to me.

Halfway through the 17 minute song, a mean guitar riff interrupted the eerie organ music background, and I was told by Doug Ingle at the party that this represented the Temptation of Eve by the Serpent. It seemed that Satan and Evil were having their day, and more than ever the end

of the world appeared to be approaching, just like Billy Graham had preached.

Spoonful

I believe I was the first person in Fresno to buy the new Iron Butterfly album. One night I had struck out with the blonde cheerleader and was about to go home and sleep off my drunk, when I realized that there was an LSD party going on in Danny's apartment. Danny was a friend of Rocky's and was a Golden Gloves boxer. It was 1:30 in the morning but the party was just getting started. Being broke, I sold my Iron Butterfly album to a friend of my brother's in order to afford a hit of acid.

I took a collection and made a last minute beer run – you couldn't buy or sell alcohol after 2 a.m. – and I made it to the store just in time. When I returned with a case of Coors, the acid began to take effect. I noticed an orange ring around the inside of the pool that hadn't been there before, and then I recalled that I had taken acid.

Danny's apartment was in the same quad as the "H" for hash apartment, and as I sat on the stairs to the second level, a good looking guy – think of Robert Palmer in the "Simply Irresistible" video – and two beautiful women came into the quad and went upstairs on the opposite side and into the apartment of one of our crazy buddies. They had a very weird vibe and were laughing the whole time. They didn't stay inside for long and came downstairs heading for Danny's apartment. One of the women was a blonde beauty, which made me jealous because she wasn't with me. I thought they must have been friends of Danny and late for the party.

They went inside Danny's apartment. The stereo inside was blaring out "Spoonful" by Cream off their new double album, Wheels of Fire. I really liked and believed "Politician" was

their best ever song. After a few minutes, Danny and two other big hard dudes approached me and said they needed all the help they could get. They appeared to be terror-stricken and said they needed help in removing the good looking guy and his two escorts from his apartment. No one knew who they were but they were really afraid and their faces were white as a sheet.

I walked with them and entered the apartment. Rocky was the only person I knew inside but they were all staring at the guy and women who had taken over the couch. Danny had a black light and certain objects were really psychedelic under the glow. I first spaced out on the cover of Disraeli Gears and then on a box of Tide. Then my eye caught those of the blonde and I began to sense the presence of evil in the room. But waves of bloneness were emitting from her hair and it made me forget about the presence of evil for the amount of time I couldn't keep my eyes off her. I felt her inside my mind as I stared into her deep blue eyes. She was smiling the whole time.

How could Danny and the two hard dudes be afraid of a guy and two girls? Rocky took me aside and I asked him who the blonde was. He didn't know and as we stepped outside between the door and the alley parking spaces to hear each other talk – “Spoonful” was still blaring out of the stereo – I could see the fear on Rocky's face. “Why are you all so afraid?” I asked, even though I was beginning to feel the first ripples of paranoia myself.

But before Rocky could answer two cars pulled up to the curb on the road intersecting the parking alley, about 50 yards away, and with engines revved to the max, and screeching tires, people started to get out of the vehicles. A hard dude friend of Danny's got out a back door of the car in front and met the driver of the other car, who got out and hit the hard dude over the

head with a tire iron. The hard dude ran toward us, blood gushing out of his head while the other driver chased him yelling, “I’m going to kill you!” The blood gushing from his head was bright red and appeared like fireworks bursting in the air.

“Oh shit!” I thought, “this is really happening.” I felt a really bad trip coming on and almost ran from the quad as the two men rushed past Rocky, one of the hard dudes following pushed the assailant into the pool. I went to the quad next door where Larry Duncan, an old high school friend, had an apartment. Larry was home and invited me inside. All during high school Larry’s parents’ business – Duncan Ceramics – was becoming more and more successful and the money was rolling in. He had given me a nickname in high school: “White Man”, because in the summer most kids had access to pools and thus had golden tans, whereas I was an indoor kind of guy, because I didn’t have a pool and the summers in Fresno are really hot.

Anyway, the acid was really messing with my head but the music he was playing – I believe it was a Momas and the Popas album – soothed my nerves. I was visibly shaking even though it was still in the 90's outside, and the walls were breathing, bending in and out. Was I having a bad trip?

When we heard the police sirens, Larry asked me what all the commotion outside was about. When I told him he couldn’t wait to run outside and I never saw him again that night. Finally, after I got on top of the acid, I returned to the scene of the crime. Two cops were asking questions of the guests of the party who had numbered around twenty. They finally got around to Danny and myself. Danny had locked his apartment and stood in front of it like he was guarding a treasure. He was, actually, because he had a thousand hits of acid fresh from San Francisco and

didn't want the police to come inside without a warrant.

The notebooks of the cops were almost full, and they lost their tempers when they started taking down Danny's side of the events. One of them snapped his pencil in half and threw it down in disgust, stating that he had talked to ten different people and had gotten ten totally different accounts. No wonder! I thought. After all, every one was stoned out of their minds.

After the cops left I learned what had happened. Our crazy buddy who lived upstairs had witnessed the whole thing and had flipped out. He dashed down the stairs shouting at the tire iron guy and chased him down the alley until they got to the houses that were across the street where the west end of alley intersected. Tire iron guy then crashed through the front picture window of a house that lined the street and was promptly confronted by an irate home owner – who happened to be Rosemary Marciochi's uncle – who held him at bay with a shotgun until the police arrived and arrested him. The hard dude who received the head wound was at the emergency room at the hospital. The good looking guy and beautiful blonde were no where to be seen.

I was left wondering what they had been into. They didn't know anyone that night but had managed to scare the hell out of everyone. It appeared that they had been Harbingers of Evil. Were they witches? I never found out.

An hour or so later, the hard dude returned from the hospital. His head was bandaged, and as he chugged at a bottle of Jack Daniels he bragged that the doctors had told him that if the wound had been another half inch deeper he would have been killed. It seems that these guys had been returning from the hard top races at Kearny Bowl – Al Pombo and Marshall Sargent

were still dueling like mad men around the track – and had insulted the wife of the tire iron guy, who had proceeded to chase them all the way to Danny’s. They don’t call these guys hard dudes for nothing. I sure would have liked to get to know that blonde though.

During that summer of 1968, Rocky and a group of us dropped acid and went to the premiere of Kubrick’s 2001, A Space Odyssey, in glorious Cinerama. It blew our minds and I started thinking about God again. We spent hours afterwards at Bruce Conte’s house trying to figure it all out, but we never did. At the end of the summer the movie Rosemary’s Baby came out: a story about witches and the birth of the Antichrist. Rosemary had been sent a book that revealed the couple in another apartment were witches and were hundreds of years old. The book had been entitled, All Them Witches.

On the weekends we would go to the midnight underground movie show at the Fine Art Theater on Maple Avenue, across from the Fresno Fair Grounds. I saw Russ Meyers films like Lorna, George Romero’s Night of the Living Dead, and many Kenneth Anger black-leather-and-motor-bikes homoerotic films with Aleister Crowley occult themes. One night we were late for Monterey Pop, but as soon as I sat down Jimi Hendrix started his set. I knew that even though we were late, we were right on time. Hendrix played a song at the end of his set by the Troggs, “Wild Thing,” and at the end of the song he sacrificed his guitar, setting it on fire.

This stunt surpassed the group before him who had wrecked most of their instruments and drums at the end of their set. They were the Who. It reminded me of the words in Eric Burton’s song, “Monterey”: “I think that maybe I’m dreaming.” We would smuggle 8 oz. Coors cans inside and have a jolly old time, throwing empty cans – they were made of light-weight

aluminum – at the screen when we didn't like something. A group of hippies sat on the floor space between the seats and the screen, passing joints, and sometimes the empties would fall short and hit one of them in the back of the head. Thankfully, they were pacifists at heart. Amazingly, we always got away with it.

Two other places we used to play were on Aqua Vista Drive, off the Sky Harbor road that snaked around the back side of Big Table Mountain and looked out over Lake Millerton and Friant Dam. Big Table Mountain had been a lava flow ten million years ago and was almost perfectly flat on top. From Aqua Vista we had a great view of the road and we had plenty of time to get rid of the drugs if the Deputy Sheriffs patrolled the area.

The other place was a road off Highway 41 – the highway to Yosemite – the turnoff at the 21 Mile House. It was an old dirt stagecoach road and it led to an old abandoned rock quarry. Again, after we climbed some rocks in the quarry, we had a great view for counter-surveillance.

There was a local legend about an old Indian or his ghost that hung out there and one night while we shared a joint we heard someone nearby and everyone ran in panic, believing it was the spirit of the Indian. But I stood my ground and learned that it was just a couple of young guys also getting stoned. I yelled at Rocky that it was okay before he drove away and laughed hard over the way they had all panicked when we were together again.

Also during that winter the Rolling Stones came out with their new album, Beggar's Banquet, and the song, "Sympathy for the Devil," tugged at my emotions. This and Rosemary's Baby disturbed me very much for I was still under the notion that good and evil were not intrinsic in the Creation, but separate forces caused by human will. The disturbance that was causing me

so much cognitive dissonance was that maybe my world view was wrong. I mean, were Satan and Hell real? and was I going there if I didn't repent and become a Christian?

OBE

I almost forgot: I had my first out of body experience (OBE) at the end of the summer of 1968, the night the Americans beat the Russians in basketball during the Summer Olympics. It was Owsley's White Lightning from San Francisco and it was pure fireworks, with electronic buzzing and popping noises and purple lightning bolts zig-zagging across the night sky. Later, when I was in bed drifting off to sleep – the first time I tried to sleep while still stoned – I had the sheet over my head to keep as much of the early morning light out of my face as possible. As I approached the threshold of sleep I heard a weird breathing noise off to my upper left side of the bed. Startled, I sat up and flung the sheet out of the way and got one of the biggest scares in my life. I was not in my bed, but I was floating eight feet off the floor looking at my body sitting up in the bed to my right.

What the fuck! I thought, and then my fear snapped me back into my body and there I was looking at the upper left corner of my bedroom in a space my spirit had just occupied. Had I just astral projected myself? Of course, I kept this to myself so no one would think that I was crazy. No one sane talked about OBE's at that time. I also, during many acid trips, experienced telepathy; one time a three-party telepathy, like a conference telephone call.

This was very weird. My friend and I took some acid and had a couple of girls over who believed they were witches. My friend believed he had a stronger mind than one of the girls and tried to assert it telepathically. They began staring intently at one another. I was linked mentally

with both of them and knew what was going on.

As it so happened, the witch had a much stronger mind and after a few minutes of the extreme stare-down duel – like the one in Roger Corman’s 1963, The Raven, between Boris Karloff and Vincent Price, where light blue and red laser rays emit from their hands with fingers out-stretched, Jack Nicholson observing them in a gallery above with two buxom women – my friend whimpered, “I give,” and the witch backed off. I wondered the next day if it had really happened, but that is one of the draw-backs with acid: one is never sure. You would have thought that I would have learned not to mess with a witch.

I really enjoyed experiencing this side of existence, but some times it just got downright spooky. But not spooky enough to deter me from taking more LSD, for I never really experienced what is called a bad trip – which is a nightmare experienced while one is awake – though I did come close a few times. During these times I would keep telling myself to calm down because the drug would eventually wear off. This always seemed to work.

Wild Thing

At the end of that summer we started partying on the midway platform of the Santa Fe train trestle that crossed the San Joaquin River. We would hang out over the river with legs dangling when trains passed at 60 miles per hour and shook the whole structure. One night when I was higher than a kite on acid, I raced the train to the Avenue 7 crossing in my ‘64 Triumph Spitfire, which I called the Wild Thing.

My passenger was crazier than me – it was the same guy who had chased tire iron guy – and told me we could make it, but I wasn’t sure because I had the car punched to the floorboard

and it wouldn't go any faster, and it looked like we weren't going to make it. It was too late to stop so I kept going. At the last moment there was a sudden burst of speed and we crossed just as the train passed. I felt the hair on the back of my neck fluff up as the train whipped past.

I really thought I was going to die, but miraculously, I was still alive. I started entertaining the idea of guardian angels after that, and, even more, the idea that I had died in one universe but lived in another. I never had this experience again until December 18, 2001. I was late for court in Coalinga which was 70 miles away. I took the McMullen Grade shortcut – it was a 2% grade, which was mainly built for trucks carrying the agricultural goods to market – all the way to Helm, which is also the lowest elevation in the Central Valley.

I was driving my red Celica GT and it was very foggy. It had started to lift and the old pickup truck in front of me was going too slow. I started to pass him when a huge cloud descended on me and I could barely see the hood of my car. This is one of the peculiarities of San Joaquin Valley Tule fog and I got to experience it for the first time. I had lived with the fog for years and wasn't afraid of it but I had never been in peril before in it. Oh shit! I thought, if there's a semi coming I'm dead, and then, of course, there was a semi coming right at me.

I have this gift, which I believe is quite common, of being able to slow reality down in times of stress or emergency. I locked eyes with the semi driver as I whipped the car to my right. Better to side swipe the old pickup than to hit the semi head on. The problem was that the semi whipped his truck to the left, then immediately corrected back to his right, but I had also corrected, whipping my car to the left at the same time. I whipped back to the right and went into a skid on the slippery road. I needed new tires for they were almost bald and I was unable to

steer out of the skid.

I ended up missing the head-on, but went into the second set of wheels on the driver's side of the cab. I saw the wheels coming at me and thought, O my God, I'm going under the wheels, and then I crashed and everything went black when the air bag knocked me out. When I came to a few moments later, I was still in the semi's lane. My first sight was of the air bag deflating, which puzzled me until I realized that I had survived. The front of my car was crushed but I was able to unfasten my seat belt and get out. I called my car the Little Red Wild Thing, and it had died saving my life. I again wondered if I had really died in one universe but lived again in another.

This experience was enhanced when I showed up at the Silver Dollar Hofbrau late one night – it was turned recently into a Hustler's Hollywood adult store – and sat down at the end of the bar in the regulars section. The regulars all looked at me as if they had seen a ghost. A Chinese guy, one of my old clients, had heard that an attorney had died after he fell asleep coming back from Merced and managed to hit the only tree in a field after his car wandered off Highway 99. He had assumed the attorney was me, for some unknown reason. Everyone at the end of the bar thought I was dead and it was worth it to see their faces turn white as a sheet when I walked in.

Anyway, back in 1968 on the Sante Fe train trestle, the party was going strong. I'll never forget later that night when some guy knocked the FM radio off the platform. He had been making out with a young girl and their passion had gotten carried away and they accidentally knocked the radio off the trestle. Cream was singing "Sunshine of Your Lo-o-o-ve," that last

word fading in the distance as the radio crashed on the river bank below.

That Christmas Eve I had a semi-religious experience when the Apollo 8 astronauts read Genesis 1:1-10 to anyone who was listening, sending back that iconic picture of the Earth rising over the Moon's horizon. It was kind of spooky seeing the Earth from that distance and knowing that we were all floating in a dark void of infinity. Fortunately, that Bible passage held the hope that someone might be looking after us.

LSD made me more spiritual, and I began contemplating religious themes. A girl who had the hots for me at this time gave me a copy of Siddhartha by Herman Hesse, because she said I reminded her of the main character. We went out a few times and once we really grooved on "It's the Time of the Season," by the Zombies. She eventually married Frank after he enlisted in the Air Force.

Anyway, the book really intrigued me. Books by Hesse were said to be popular with the original Haight Ashbury acid heads. Hesse's Steppenwolf and Heinlein's Stranger in a Strange Land, were also must reading.

Eventually, my tripping caused me to flunk out of Fresno State where I had been majoring in Political Science. However, I got passing grades in American and Russian foreign policy classes. I had flunked out at the end of January 1969, right after Richard Nixon had been sworn in. I was immediately drafted into the Army since Nixon's plan to end the war was to double the draft quotas. I was ordered to report to the Fresno induction center at the end of May.

A friend of mine, Eric Hopper, came over one morning in late January and got me out of bed, playing the new record he had just purchased. Eric had done the same thing several years

earlier when the first Rolling Stones album came out, so I knew this was going to be special. I had been tempted to buy the album at least three times when I went record shopping at White Front, a Kmart-type store. On the cover was a picture of the Hindenburg tragedy, but I had never heard of anyone in the band and I'd been burned in the past when I bought an album based on the cover alone. This one was definitely different and I believed it saved Rock'n Roll music at the time.

They called themselves Led Zeppelin and the first time I heard them I was hooked. Most people who heard it were too. In fact, we had many parties where we would drop acid, have girls over, listen to the album, and rock out. We called those Led Zeppelin parties. From the opening chords of "Good Times Bad Times," the soulful, "Babe I'm Going to Leave You," the psychedelic "Dazed and Confused," to the heavy metal, "How Many More Times?" that album was a perpetual joy.

Between January and May 1969, I got to know Alan Binatena a lot better, drinking beers with him every night at Big Al's, a popular pizza hangout. He had been shot in the head on News Year Eve a year earlier in Vietnam, and had had three brain surgeries, each one of which he was not expected to survive. The first surgery was to remove steel fragments from his brain that were from his helmet. The second surgery was to remove the fragments of his skull, and the third to repair what could be repaired. Alan went through a total personality change. He no longer wanted to fight – of course, one punch to the head could kill him – and he turned out to be a really nice guy. Before that he had been kind of a scary guy, but the Army had cured him of that.

Xenon, The Intergalactic Super Intelligence

I had some friends attending U.C. Santa Barbara and drove down to see them because they had access to the last batch of Owsley's Orange Sunshine. I purchased all they had and on May 5, I dropped a tab on the first anniversary of Tom's death. I was facing a real dilemma in my conscience since from my studies in Political Science and History I had discovered that Vietnam was a War of Imperialism, and that the Domino Theory was a bullshit hook created by the warmongers – aka the Military-Industrial Complex – to make the war palatable to the American public. I took the acid as a test to decide whether I should allow myself to be drafted or escape to Mexico. In reality I was just hoping to have a clear sign to go to Mexico.

The Orange Sunshine was the purest LSD I ever dropped. After almost an hour later I realized that I was stoned out of my mind. It had come on me so slowly and smoothly I never knew I was stoned until well into the trip. After about a half hour I had this sudden compulsion inside my friend's Isla Vista apartment to go down to the beach. It was overcast and a little chilly as I walked out on the tar-infested, seaweed scattered, sand. Swarms of sandflies hovered over these spots. There had recently been a horrible oil spill offshore and the beach was littered with seaweed and tar.

I was the only soul on the beach at that time, except for a German Shepard frolicking in the surf about a hundred yards south of me. Picking out a clear spot, I sat down and experienced the "Fool on the Hill" experience of the world spinning round at a thousand miles an hour, the lapping waves keeping time. I felt like I was on a roller coaster and dug my hands and heels into the sand to keep myself from being flung into space. The German Shepard then noticed me and

ran like hell toward me, nudging me aside with his nose. He then dug up a rock that was directly underneath me and ran off to the north with his prize in his mouth. I was stunned. I mean, what were the odds of picking the same spot to sit where the dog had buried his favorite rock?

My meditation was soon interrupted by a horde of sandflies covering me. I thought, Begone! and a force-field snapped them all away and kept them from returning. Wow, I thought, if I could do that at will I would be one of the most powerful people on Earth. That's when the organ music from the sky began playing. I looked out at the ocean and a small window appeared in the overcast, with the long rays of the sun shining down.

Xenon's Message

That's when the Superior Intelligence contacted me. Telepathically, he told me that the time had come for me to learn about my mission on Earth. According to Xenon, for that's what I decided to call him years later – he never named himself – I was recruited from another planet in this galaxy to be incarnated on Earth on a long-term basis to do whatever I could do when the time was right to prevent a nuclear war. Xenon was from another much older galaxy and he and his kind were the guardians of this one. Wow, had I just found God?

But what about the Army? I asked. He said I was to go into the Army where I would become a hero, which would be used to further my political ambitions so when the time came I would be in a position to prevent a nuclear war. The experience was so real that I believed it. I had read enough science fiction and so many science fiction comic books that I saw no reason to doubt it. I had no specific idea of who or what God was – I imagined some kind of intelligent Force – so I assumed that Xenon and his fellow Guardians were the sources of most human

religions.

He told me that I had to be very vigilant because there were evil forces in the cosmos – the Intergalactic Conspiracy – that wanted to see the Earth destroy itself. There had been many others before me but in the end they had all been smoked out and destroyed. Of course, I kept all of this to myself, and had the pleasure of returning Hopper’s favor in turning me on to the new Stones and Led Zeppelin albums by informing him that the new Steve Miller Band’s Sailor and Bob Dylan’s Nashville Skyline, were great and worth the money.

I’d like to say that Eric Hopper had a good ending to his life, but he didn’t. He’d been drinking with Frank Gash all day in the late 80's on Frank’s sailboat in Avila Bay, and on the way home, Hopper drove Frank’s Porsche – with a blood alcohol count of over five times the legal limit. Frank didn’t like driving when he was really drunk, in fact, he let me drive two of his cars before and I wrecked them both – and Hopper lost control going 90 miles per hour around a sharp curve in the Kettleman Hills, close to where James Dean bought the farm. Both Eric and Frank were wearing their seatbelts, but they broke, flinging the pair out of the crashed car.

Hopper went flying over one hundred feet and came down in a nearby field head first onto a boulder, killing him instantly. Frank went skidding down the middle line of the highway on his back, shredding his flesh and breaking both of his ankles. But he survived, and because of that the police tried to pin the driving on him.

He hired one of the best defense attorneys in Fresno, George Carter, who got him off at the preliminary hearing in King’s County Municipal Court, because he was able to prove from the marks on Frank’s shoulder that he had been wearing the seatbelt from the passenger side,

while Hopper had a round indentation in his chest from the steering wheel. The cop said when he approached Frank and asked him if he had been the driver, Frank then allegedly admitted that he had and then handed the CHP his wallet with driver's license. Yet Carter was able to prove the cop was lying because my friend had been wearing only his swim trunks and his wallet was in the glove compartment. Cops rarely tell the truth on the witness stand, especially when they are attempting to frame someone.

Ah, yes, back to Isla Vista. I recall being on acid and really tripping to "Living In the USA," with Boz Scaggs backing and Steve Miller on the harmonica, as I entered Bruce Conte's brother's house apartment on the cliffs above the beach, feeling that the song was really psychedelic. Bruce would play in local clubs, but he usually was unable to because he was under 21. He later became famous in the band Tower of Power.

Everyone I knew back in Fresno was surprised that I willingly subjected myself to the draft, but on May 22, at the induction center, I took my oath to uphold the Constitution and got on the bus to Fort Ord, in Monterey Bay, where my father worked as a civilian in the training department. I lucked out because the Drill Sergeant in charge of our platoon went home every evening instead of sleeping in the special designated room for him in the barracks. He said he was so sick and tired of living in the mud in Vietnam that he was going to spend as much time as he could with his wife in his own bed. Who could argue with that?

Army Days

Basically I had a good time in Basic Training. I took acid three times and drank a six pack of beer every night. For my back pain – I was overweight and way out of shape at the time

of my induction – I took many Darvons. A friend of mine and I would trade off every week for sick call, where we would renew our supply. I remember coming down from acid one Saturday morning in the hand-to-hand combat sand pit, tripping on the way my opponent’s hands moved like slow motion frame by frame – what are called “trails” – and the big surprise when the hand would connect – Pow! – with my body.

One night quite a few of us dropped acid. When it came on, we were listening to the radio in the Corporal’s room at the west end of the barracks. The radio began playing the brand new song by the Stones called “Honky Tonk Women,” which began with a cow bell and drum riff. Later, returning to the main barracks a big husky farm boy from Dinuba was visibly shaking, pointing at his mattress. It was his first acid trip and he was convinced that his mattress was breathing.

I got down on my knees and felt his mattress. My God, it was breathing! We all laughed when I explained to him that it was just our perception on LSD – the mattress wasn’t really breathing. In a few hours he would come down and be normal again. That’s the main trouble about LSD. The trip is too long. If they could trim three or four hours off the trip I would have taken it more often.

For the record, the last time I took acid was at the end of August 1970 in Edmonton, Alberta. I was staying at a military barracks the Canadian Government had converted to a hostel because, for some reason, a million kids decided to take to the road and hitchhike across the country that summer. When the acid started to come on me, two men started arguing in the room and I thought a fight was going to break out. I was feeling very heavy vibes of violence and I

decided to heed a call of nature in the latrine. As soon as I sat down and closed the stall door, there suddenly appeared a window on the door.

On the other side stood two little aliens inside some kind of room – I assumed it was inside a Flying Saucer. They reminded me of the Star Child who appears at the end of 2001. They had big wrap around eyes and were very small, like children. Don't move, I thought, or they will notice you. But one of them turned and looked over his shoulder and spotted me. He then walked casually to the window, placed his little hands on the glass, and stared at me. He spoke telepathically and told me “We are coming to get you in February.” Then he turned and walked away and the window disappeared.

I wondered for years whether any of this was true and always get a weird vibe every time February comes around. I've told my daughters that if I die in the month of February then you will know that they finally came for me. My younger daughter, Hannah, joked while she was taking me to my totalled Celica at the garage in Kerman, “Gee, Dad, you shouldn't have been so worried during that wreck. After all, it wasn't February.”

Slaughterhouse Five

I had ended up in Edmonton because at the deserter's halfway house in Toronto, where I stayed briefly, Steve the Astrologer from Wisconsin had done a horoscope reading because we were all anxious over the fact that we were being turned into a revolutionary communist cell. He spent a couple of hours on the astrology chart, consulting his Ephemeris' often. He told us there was a man in the Canadian Rockies that would help us in our religious quest to meet the new Jesus, whom he told us Jeanne Dixon, the famous psychic astrologer, had predicted was alive at

this time. He also believed Edgar Cayce's prediction that the Ancient Atlanteans were reincarnating in our generation, and I wondered if I were one of them.

So five of us hitchhiked out of Toronto for the Canadian Rockies. It took us two weeks to get there and we had many adventures. To begin with we separated into two groups, one of two people and one of three. I was in the group of three – me, Steve the Astrologer, and Ken Monroe – and it wasn't easy getting rides, but after a few days we got to Moose Jaw, Saskatchewan, where our journey came to an immediate halt. We hung out for the first two days at a combination gas station restaurant, but everyone willing to give us a ride was going the wrong way.

We eventually hiked a couple of miles up the highway and stopped at an intersection, where we waited all day in vain. Finally, Steve the Astrologer did an astrology chart for the next day and it indicated we were going to get a ride. We spent the night on the side of the road and I had a very realistic dream that dealt with us hitchhiking but there was a fourth person with us. In the dream I knew him, but when I woke up, I looked for him before I realized that it had just been a dream. I believe this was the Presence of God in his Holy Spirit. Also, there were fresh tire tracks inches from my body. Farm boy humor.

But after an hour or so a pastor picked us up. I thought, O boy, Jesus is saving us again, but he only took us two miles up the road and dropped us off at a gas station. The manager laughed when he saw us and explained that the pastor ran a trailer rest stop a mile back up the road and picked up hitchhikers and took them past the rest stop so they wouldn't bother the customers. Yay, real Christian ministry.

The gas station was at an intersection and to the south there was a store. We hiked to it and Steve offered his expensive spyglass to barter for some food. The owner said, “Hell, during the War we all needed help,” and told us to take as much food as we could carry. We settled for the necessities: a six pack of Coke, a jar of peanut butter, another jar of honey, a large bag of brown sugar, and a loaf of bread. It wasn’t much, but after starving for three days it was like a feast.

You might ask, Why the bag of brown sugar? Well, we would take out a scoop with our hands and wolf it down for energy. When you’re on the road, you take what you get.

Back at the intersection, a lone man picked us up and gave us a ride to Medicine Hat where he had a photo shoot lined up with an airplane at the airport. He told us that he took pictures for calendars in Canada and loved to tell stories. In the middle of one of them he stopped suddenly, slamming on the brakes next to a field with cows grazing. “That’s September!” he yelled, getting his tripod and camera out of the trunk. He hiked out into the field, lined up his shot, waited till the cows were looking his way, and took his picture.

At the hostel in Medicine Hat we showered and then got to pick out a free pair of new Levi’s and a lumberjack shirt at a table the government supplied. I couldn’t believe how generous the Canadian government was with their citizens.

Later, we got another short ride, leaving us stranded in a sea of wheat. By the way, when I finally got to Vancouver, I casually walked into a drug store in the West End, and as I thumbed through the calendars for the next year, to wit, 1971, I saw that picture after picture was credited to the photographer who had picked us up. It was also the first time I got to see a copy of Eric

Von Daniken's Chariots of the Gods? I had no money at the time, but I would buy one as soon as I did because aliens were now on my mind.

Back on the Trans-Canadian highway, after two weeks, we met in Jasper with our other buddies and Joan the Witch and her sidekick, Tom, whose father was a lawyer in Ontario. He owned an old Land Rover that was really cool.

For the first few days it rained in Jasper and we spent the time in Tom's tent next to one of the shallow lakes. In the day the lakes would warm up and then retain their heat at night, so it made some great swimming at night in the rain. When the skies cleared we were forced to find another camping site for the Mounted Police would have caught us camping illegally.

We ended up camping illegally on Lookout Mountain overlooking Jasper. We made friends with the young couple who manned the lookout tower for spotting fires. They were into the Urantia book, from which I read a chapter on the life of the young Jesus. It said that Jesus was an expert musician in his early years, and I really liked that.

There was a fountain spring at the top where you could bend over and drink the water as it bubbled out of the ground. That was the best water I've ever tasted, almost as sweet as wine. And when the sun was setting, highlighting the many peaks in the Canadian Rockies – it was a scene right out of the early art work calendars depicting the mountains in The Lord of the Rings.

Nothing happened like we expected except Joan the Witch taught me how to read the Tarot. She showed me the Book of Thoth by Aleister Crowley, who taught that the cards of the Tarot were actual living beings, and should be treated as thus. She had me feel each card to feel their energy.

I met Joan under very weird circumstances in a converted military barracks in Calgary. We had been saved from a summer storm which we could see approaching from our position on the Trans-Canada Highway, somewhere in Alberta. We were stranded in a sea of wheat, for 360 degrees, from horizon to horizon -- the wind rolled the wheat like waves as far as the eye could see.

Some hippies finally picked us up and gave us a ride to Calgary. When we arrived in the cafeteria at the barracks, I went to a wall covered with graffiti and was writing a witty little poem on the wall when I felt someone inside my mind. I turned around and locked eyes with Joan, smiled at her, finished the poem, and then walked over to meet her. The whole thing was like a living comic book because we had smoked with the hippies some parsley soaked in horse tranquilizers, which we called PCP, but what they called “angel dust” – what Hispanic gangs call “killer joints” when rolled with marijuana in today’s lingo – and I felt like a three foot high cartoon character. Anyway, Joan did a life reading for me with her Tarot deck, and, while it meant little to me, she was blown away and wanted to get to know me better. And that was that. We arranged to meet later in Jasper.

Steve, Ken and I caught our first ride from Calgary all the way to Banff National Park, where we spent the night in a campground. I don’t remember going through any foothills – the Rockies appeared to shoot straight up from the prairie floor. Anyway, when we awoke the next morning, Ken had already gone ahead of us, so Steve and I caught a ride with three French Canadians in a VW bug.

We were literally packed inside like sardines and only stopped once at the Lake Louise

Glacier. We all got out in the parking lot, took a long hard look at Lake Louise, then the driver said, “Well, we saw it, cross that one off the list.” These guys were a riot but smoked Gauloises cigarettes which I found to be foul smelling and very harsh tasting. I was unable to inhale without coughing. But beggars can’t be choosers.

Anyway, back in Jasper, we visited the village below where me met a young man from Edmonton who had a recent copy of Time magazine with an article about the new Jesus Movement that was sweeping the West Coast. It said they were all following the Book of Acts in the New Testament, so I read it in the following days. I told Joan of a section where the Apostles fasted and prayed and healed a person. I went without food, which wasn’t hard to do since we didn’t have any, and experimented but it didn’t work. Joan eventually did a reading for the guy from Edmonton, so we followed him to Edmonton and that’s how we ended up there at that time.

Back in Edmonton, after my vision of the aliens, when I went outside of the barracks it was night. Two people told me that they had seen a UFO, making me think that it was related to my window vision. However, I had little time to think about this because I had called Roy Richardson’s parents’ house – I lived with Roy and Kay Richardson in Toronto for a few months – since he was home with Kay on vacation and we had planned to get together if I ever arrived in Edmonton. While I waited, I tripped out on the full moon and the Northern Lights, a huge green curtain that undulated back and forth in the night sky, and truly looked psychedelic in the full moonlight.

Sorry about the Time Tripping, but after all, memory is time travel. Please forgive me for bouncing back and forth from time to time in order to tell my story. I feel like Billy Pilgrim, the

Time Traveler in Kurt Vonnegut's Slaughterhouse Five, for as I have been writing this account, my mind is constantly flooded with old memories, which keeps me going back to the future. I hope you are keeping track.

One more Edmonton story. As I was leaving the military barracks hostel in Edmonton, I played a game of chess with a Canadian man named Danny Dares. He was really good and the only reason I beat him was because toward the end another man who had been watching, told me of a move that would achieve checkmate in two moves.

Afterwards, Danny told me he had hitchhiked down to the Trans-Canada highway and flipped a coin to see what direction he should go. Heads, to the west; tails, to the east. The coin came up tails, but Danny went west anyway.

We both joined the Jesus People Army (JPA) around the same time in Vancouver. The JPA was led by Linda Miessner, a Jesus group out of Seattle that was establishing a movement in Vancouver at the downtown Pender Auditorium. Miessner had been a disciple of David Wilkerson in his outreach to drug addicts and had written the popular The Cross and the Switchblade about that ministry. Later he became a legend with the release of his best seller, The Vision, documenting a vision he had seen about America's future, which was mostly negative and just encouraged believers into thinking that they were indeed living in the last days.

Meissner preached to us once at Sister Walker's church in Vancouver's Chinatown and she had some very weird ideas about the Book of Revelation. She tried to teach us that the Jesus People's Army had been prophesied in the Book of Revelation, specifically that we were the Locust Army from the Bottomless Pit after the Seventh Seal was broken and the Fifth Trumpet

had sounded. I bad-mouthed her theory to our little flock afterwards, since the Locust Army was led by the Angel King of the Bottomless Pit, named Abaddon (Destruction) in Hebrew, Apollyon (Destroyer) in Greek, in other words, the Devil. I had joined the JPA in order to have the time to read and study the Bible, especially the Book of Revelation, and knew enough to resist such ridiculous speculation. But since they eventually merged with the dangerous cult “The Children of God,” maybe she had a point.

In fact, Sister Walker, a savvy black woman, had lent me her Scofield Bible, with a green leather cover. I still like to read my black leather Scofield, even though the leather is cracking, and I especially like its tactile feel and lay out, with its Moroccan Leather Liner, Oxford Flexible Binding, and Indian hemp paper. It’s hard to get a Bible nowadays with hemp paper, but it’s the best.

Other than that, I no longer read the study notes because they are so crazy. However it did show me how the various parts of the Bible could be organized into such speculations. It taught me that the Bible was a unified whole, including the Old Testament – especially the sections with Elijah and Elisha, heavy duty prophets who had started a royal bloodbath in the times of the Kings of Judah and Israel:

And it came to pass, as they still went on, and talked, that, behold, there Appeared a Chariot of Fire, and Horses of Fire, and parted them both asunder; and Elijah went up by a Whirlwind into Heaven. And Elisha Saw it, and he cried, My father, my father, the Chariot of Israel, and the Horsemen thereof. And he saw him no more: and he took hold of his own clothes, and rent them into two pieces. He took up also the Mantle of Elijah that fell from him, and went back and stood by the bank of the Jordan; and he took the Mantle of Elijah, and smote the waters, and said, Where is YHWH God of Elijah? and when he also had smitten the waters, they parted hither and thither; and Elijah went over. (II Kings 2:11-14.)

Preachers who are the descendants of the Canadian Latter Rain Movement of the Forties and Fifties, like Linda Meissner and Russell Griggs, love to preach and act out those verses, pretending they are holding Elijah's Mantle and then with a loud voice of command, slam the imaginary Mantle on the ground as they repeat Elisha's words: "Where is the LORD God of Elijah!" It's a real crowd pleaser, let me tell you. By the way in most Bibles, whenever GOD or the LORD are printed in capital letters, the Hebrew word being translated is YHWH, meaning the Great "I AM."

Danny and I actively participated in street preaching and we brought many souls to Christ, which was not too difficult at the time due to the great outpouring of the Holy Spirit. The JPA baptized over a thousand people in English Bay at Vancouver's West End. Later I joined the staff on our newspaper called The Goad ("The Words of the Wise are as Goads," Ecclesiastes 12:11), under the leadership of a woman named Rosemary. I also met Heather there, a girl I thought seriously about marrying at the time.

After a year the leadership under Russell Griggs in Vancouver and Meissner in Seattle were going bankrupt and they sold us out to the Children of God, a dangerous cult under Moses Berg from LA. Heather was visiting her ill mother back in Regina, so was not around when I left before the Children of God (COG) arrived and began their intense indoctrination.

A week or so later, I went to the Shepherd's Call – a coffeehouse that I was once in charge of with Mike Spicer – and stood outside by the back entrance, listening to the violent preaching of the ex-military Cult leaders. When it was over they all filed out down the outside wooden stairs to several busses, and I experienced a very rare event. I could see a red aura above

all of their heads, which I interpreted as a Sign of Evil. I saw Heather in the crowd and waved, hoping she would run into my arms, but she too had a red aura and had become a Pod Person out of Invasion of the Body Snatchers, so she just stared at me, and as the bus left for Texas for indoctrination, I saw her in the bus window and waved again, but she was in Zombie Land and that was that. She broke my heart.

Speaking of the Shepherd's Call coffee house, I took a couple of days off with another Brother so I could mingle with the hitchhiker's tents in the temporary campground set up next to the Four Seasons Hotel near Stanley Park. However, J.D. Kayde, a thumb up his ass elder, came to check up on us in his white four-door Ford, the perfect narc car. Everyone stared at us as we made our way to his car. I was really pissed off for everyone would naturally think that Kayde was a narc and that we were working undercover for him.

After he left we immediately distributed invitations to the coffeehouse and then went back to the Shepherd's Call and got our bus to pick up anyone at the campground that wanted to come to the coffeehouse. The bus was full of campers, most of whom seemed glad that we weren't working undercover. That was a special night at the Shepherd's Call.

Heaven

Three of our members formed a band, like Peter, Paul, and Mary, and played for the campers that night. They had written a new song they called "Heaven," and as they came to the end, repeating "Heaven, Heaven, Heaven," over and over, suddenly the room went still, and I swear I saw the Glory of the Holy Spirit falling from the ceiling like melted butter and dripping on everyone, believer and non-believer alike. When we were finally able to speak, our voices

sounded like they were being electronically modified.

I felt like I was in Heaven, as did everyone else. But when one of the more enthusiastic Brothers started agitating the crowd to perform signs and wonders, chaos ensued, and Mike Spicer and myself soon sent everyone home for the night. Jayde wasn't there – thank God – and he and Russell Griggs, the leader, shrugged it off as “Wildfire,” a rare event in Pentecostal and Charismatic circles. It was a real spiritual experience and I hadn't taken LSD for a whole year.

I had another non-acid psychedelic experience in September of that year. I, Ken Monroe, and Jean Breard, a French-Canadian friend of mine – we were all ex-members of the JPA, now calling ourselves “The Free People of Vancouver” – hitchhiked to the West Coast of Vancouver Island, to a place called Wreck Bay. This was a favorite counter cultural hangout, because it was a five mile long open beach, crescent shaped, with a very small tree-filled island dead center between the points of the crescent. Most people lived in clear plastic-sheet and two-by-four huts – the more expensive on a cliff overlooking the beach. Clothes were mainly optional.

It was not easy to get to, and we finally got a ride with a TV crew in their TV van, who were going to document the last days of the beach before it was absorbed into the Canadian National Park system. That's the reason we went also, to witness for the Lord during the last days of the free and easy beach. At the end there were at least ten people in the van. As we drove through the back roads the radio played the new Who song, “We Won't Get Fooled Again,” to which we all joined in for that final “YEAH!” We arrived at night, and the sky was moonless, but covered with more stars than I have ever seen before. It was quite stunning.

The tide was out and there was a large part of the beach where the sand was covered with

a thin sheen of water. As I walked toward the sound of the lapping waves, it looked like I was walking on water, and, as I looked back, I saw that my footprints were glowing a golden color from the bioluminescent plankton. It was truly psychedelic, and I was glad I was able to have that experience in a non-stoned state of mind. I realized that the nighttime starry sky was the equivalent of television for the ancient world.

The bay was a natural collecting place for all of the driftwood and cut lumber fallen from the barges that ran up and down the coast, and at night there would be huge bonfires using this wood, providing great places for social gatherings. It was very pagan, but unlike The Lord of the Flies, there was something innocent about it. But, then again, I could feel the spirit or ghost of the times – what the Germans call the Zeitgeist – changing all around me. This would all be gone in a year.

Anyway, Heather, as well as Rosemary, went through a nervous breakdown because of that damn cult, and Rosemary was hospitalized for awhile. I met her parents and would play chess with her father, the head of fingerprinting at the Vancouver Police Department, on Thursdays before we watched Columbo on the television. He beat me nearly every single time.

I often use Columbo's technique when cross examining witnesses at trial, where he walks away after interrogating the witness, making the killer think he is getting away with it, when all of a sudden Columbo turns around and says, "Oh, one more question!" And that one more question often sealed the killer's fate. Whenever a good cross works you have what is called in the business, a "Perry Mason Moment," where you have just essentially won your trial.

I also became really good at chess – I'm not anymore – and this was during the days of

the famous chess match in Iceland between Bobby Fischer and Boris Spassky of the Soviet Union at Reykjavik, where he used his signature Sicilian Defense masterfully. Unfortunately, if I didn't play for a couple of weeks, I would forget everything I learned because of my dyslexia with formulas and combinations, which had plagued me since elementary school.

I lost a spelling bee at Wolter's on the first word, and said "g" instead of "j," and was the first to be eliminated. Afterwards I swore I said the right letter, but everyone said I did not so I had to accept their version of reality, which taught me humility. I must have memorized the Pythagorean Theorem a million times and I still would not be able to bet on whether I can repeat it accurately. I had to give up my pursuit to be a scientist-astronaut because of this. Same goes for foreign languages. Weirdly, it never affected my study of the law. It all came to me so naturally, that I swear I must have learned it in another life.

Oh yes, I almost got deported because of Russell Griggs. He had made some kind of deal with a government high up, and we all ended up taking part in a Welfare Scheme, which we were told was not really Welfare because the Province was secretly funding our work among the drug addicts. However, when I was called into the RCMP office I was put on notice that there was no secret deal, but Griggs had put us all on regular Welfare. You were not allowed to go on Welfare if you were a Landed Immigrant. I promptly explained the fraud to them and they let me off the hook, after taking me off Welfare. The fact that I never saw a penny of that money was in my favor. I had a hard time believing that Russell Griggs was a con man, but that's putting it mildly.

Kill, Kill, Kill

Meanwhile, back in the Army at Ft. Ord, I spent two hours every day in bayonet practice, learning the Spirit of the Bayonet. Our drill sergeant was a big black man from Ft. Polk and when he began each session, he would yell, “What is the Spirit of the Bayonet?” to which we all responded, “To kill!” I was being trained to kill without thinking about it. I believe that this is what happened to Smiley, because he couldn’t wait to kill Vietnamese.

Because half of the men in my company were black, I started associating with black people for the first time in my life. I had very little experience with black people. My Grandpa had a black person named Louie who helped him with his carpentry, and their relationship went all the way back to his days in the Fresno Police Department. When I was nine, after his wife died, he would give me a dollar if I would spend Saturdays with him for company. He drove a really old car and in the mornings he would cook us breakfast in his old wood burning stove, have me go out to the chicken coop to get fresh eggs, then he would say, “Come on, Woody, let’s go get my nigger and do some work.”

He meant Louie of course, and in his own way, there was nothing derogatory about the way he used the word, for Louie, who lived in a nice neighborhood off palm-lined Kearney Boulevard by Chandler Field, was a really close friend of his, and you could say that he loved Louie like a brother. Thus I never associated the word as derogatory for black people, but I am sensitive enough not to use the word around them so I am not offending them, with the caveat that they have no trouble calling each other by this name.

Anyway, there were no black kids at Bullard High and our only experience with them was

when Bullard played Edison at football or basketball games. Most of the black men in my company in Basic were from Watts in LA. A lot of them participated in the Watts riots in the late summer of 1965. One of the black acid heads in my barracks, Bill Price, had allegedly stolen several TV's during the riots. I also learned that a lot of them loved acid and groups like the Rolling Stones and Temptations.

One night the men in my barracks had a monumental pillow fight with another platoon in the street separating our barracks. I took on the tallest black who was a good 6' 5", and he ended up knocking me off my feet – like Charlie Brown on the pitcher's mound – so that my dog tags fell off in the street. When the Green Beret captain of our company called me into his office to explain how my dog tags ended up in the street, I said I had no idea, but I'm sure he knew.

He had suffered some discipline for his actions in Vietnam. One day I had to clean his office and he had five or six framed pictures of a machine gun nest that he had single handedly taken out. Five or six dead Vietnamese littered the area in pieces. The pictures didn't try to hide the gore.

He soon learned that my dad was using me as a spy to determine if they were living up to the training standards. One Saturday, our company had traveled to a base movie theater to watch the first two James Bond movies. My dad called me out of the dark during From Russia With Love. He was waiting for me in the lobby. I had no permission to leave with him, but what the hell, he was a retired Lt. Colonel working in the training division. I knew most of the officers in the training division because I had interviewed them to see what training would be like with my Dad when I drove to Salinas one weekend to spend with my father. I remember that trip well: the

sky was overcast, and as I drove into the Salinas Valley, I could see in the distance an ominous power generating station with two hundred feet smokestacks belching black smoke into the atmosphere, and Credence was on the radio playing “Bad Moon Rising.” A good song for the end of the world.

Well, back at the movie theater, my father then took me to the hand grenade range and told me how the week before a trainee and drill sergeant had been killed in a hand grenade accident. He told me to keep my eyes open and give him a full report for our company was going there next week. The captain was pissed off about this and called me again to his office for a classic drumming down. But he had found out who my father was and offered me a squad leader position. I had become good friends with our squad leader – his father was a general in a tank division – but I declined to take his job and I could tell that that impressed the captain.

I made no secret to the squad leader of what I had been offered and declined and the squad leader cancelled all of my fire watch nights. This was necessary because the barracks were built in WWII and were meant to be temporary, but as it goes in the Army, they were never replaced and were maximum fire hazards. There was a Fort legend that an old wooden barracks like our own had caught fire one night and burned to the ground in ten minutes. There were metal cans attached to posts half filled with water where you could extinguish your cigarettes. In those days you were considered weird if you didn’t smoke.

We went to the hand grenade range the next Wednesday. They were using the old pineapple type instead of the new ones designed like a baseball because every American boy knows how to throw a baseball. I was to throw my hand grenade old style, kind of a looping it

over your head at the target in a straight arm manner. When it came to my turn, I kneeled in the small enclosure, pulled the ring, held down the handle, stood, lowered it back to throw over my head – but I got a tug instead so I didn't let go. I don't know the odds that the wire mechanism that the pin had been in could somehow get caught in the zipper of my field jacket, but that's what it did.

I held up the grenade attached to my field jacket to the lookout tower, letting them know that I had a problem. A drill instructor then ran at me at full speed and tackled me, clamping down both his hands over mine, yelling, "Don't let go, don't let go!" He had been at the range at the time the trainee and drill sergeant had been killed, so I didn't hold it against him.

"I'm not going to let go!" I yelled back and after a few moments of panic, a Lieutenant managed to disengage the hand grenade from my zipper and then I got clearance to throw the damn thing. They got a stellar review when I gave my report to my dad.

But it seemed like a really bad omen. Was Xenon trying to tell me something?

I had two more weird situations in Advanced Infantry Training (AIT). The first occurred when we forward assaulted a bunker uphill. We were to low crawl to the special pits where we would be protected from the grenades we were supposed to throw at the bunker. When I got to the protected area and reached into my ammo packs for the grenades – we had two of them each – they were not there.

Shocked, I low crawled back the way I had come and eventually found both of them just laying there on the ground. How did they get there? I never figured that out. My ammo pouches must have been too loosely closed.

Anyway, the second occurred when we were to forward assault a hill after the Armored Personnel Carrier – the kind Smiley had been killed on – dumped us at the foot of a moderately steep hill. When the back door opened, a Major with a canister in his hand was spreading smoke outside. As squad leader I was the first out so that I could get my squad in line for the assault. Stupidly, I took a whiff to see if it was just smoke, but I got a full dose of CS gas and just managed to yell “Gas!” before I fell to the ground, putting on my mask, and trying to blow it clear, but I couldn’t clear it and was doomed to fight for breath, totally out of commission.

We had all experienced normal tear gas in Basic where, wearing our gas masks, we were taken inside a chamber filled with tear gas. The instructor then ordered us to take our masks off and leave them off for the remainder of the test. The masks worked just fine, and breathing tear gas because you have to breathe was one of the most uncomfortable things I’ve ever experienced. The instructor went around the room asking us questions like what was the serial number on your weapon – we had M-14’s – or who was the President, or the Secretary of Defense.

The last trainee was asked this last question and was stumped and unable to answer. All of the rest of us yelled out, “Melvin Laird!” and the trainee finally answered correctly and we were allowed to leave. We were told that all of us would have failed if they had used CS gas instead of normal tear gas. I was learning just how true this was.

Anyway, back at the hill, my squad got their masks on in time and assaulted the hill without me. The Major picked me up, handed me my mask, which I had torn off because I was unable to clear it, slammed my helmet on my head, handed me my M-16, then kicked me in the ass and ordered me up the hill. I managed to get there just in time for the mop-up.

Oh yes, when we went out in the field to learn patrol and ambush, I had found a good spot to ambush the patrolling squad, but my spot ended up being on top of an ant hill. Suddenly I was covered with ants and squirmed to get out of there hoping the patrol would not see any movement. But they saw me and our ambush failed. A black from another squad hated me for that and I suppose guys like that could easily frag a person like me. No wonder we used blanks.

How many bad omens were there going to be in my future before I realized that if I were sent to Vietnam I wouldn't last very long? But I still had faith in my father's connection with the woman who cut the orders in Washington, so I just usually shrugged and laughed at these omens. But eventually there would be one too many.

In my limited spare time when I wasn't shining my boots or doing all of the little chores they had in store for me, I would read books or magazines. The number one song at the time was "Get Back" by the Beatles. I must have heard it a million times whenever I had KP and it always made me think of going home. This feeling was reinforced by other training companies for whenever we were transported out to the fields and passed their barracks, someone on KP would always yell, "Go AWOL!" I found this amusing.

An advertisement in a magazine intrigued me. It showed a man on his back with a conical ray emitting upwards from his brain as he experienced cosmic consciousness. It was an ad for the Rosicrucians. So, I figured, in my mind, surely I had actually experienced cosmic consciousness or something like it on the beach when Xenon had contacted me. This encouraged me to send away for their beginning studies and in return I got a book about the raising of Jesus on the third day by his disciples forming a ring around his tomb, with some Geometry lessons.

Geometry? I was way passed that and never contacted them again.

We had been given a pocket Gideon's New Testament when we were inducted, and I would skim read the passages dealing with the trial of Jesus before Pontius Pilate, because the song, "Sympathy for the Devil," had highlighted the part where Pilate washed his hands "and sealed his fate." But there was nothing about a group of Rosicrucians forming a circle around the tomb of Christ to raise him from the dead.

Toward the end of Basic we got a fresh Second Lieutenant out of Army Infantry OCS who was all gung-ho about going to Vietnam. He would lead us on runs to and from training, making us all chant, "Kill, kill, kill!" until the words began to lose their meaning. One day after I attended an interrogation meeting with higher officers related to my application to Artillery OCS – "Are you opposed to the use of nuclear weapons, Trainee Nichols?" – I was waiting outside for the bus and was staring at a building next door that had strange architecture.

Unfortunately I was thus looking the wrong way when an officer drove by and I failed to salute him. He slammed on his brakes, got out and gave me a drumming down, making me identify myself. He told he was going to report me for insolence to my commanding officer. Boy, I tell you, some officers really liked power-tripping their rank.

That was the day we went to the range where we had to low crawl under barb wire while explosive charges went off all around us and live machinegun fire was fired six feet over our heads. After I managed to complete the course, the Captain and his new Lieutenant were waiting for me.

I immediately saluted them while I was catching my breath. He started to berate me

because of my failure to salute the other officer but I told him I was looking the other way and had not seen him. The young Lieutenant wanted the Captain to punish me, but the Captain listened to my story and chuckled, telling the Lieutenant to lighten up.

We had to do the course again at night and having taken a lot of Darvons, I had a hard time not laughing as I crawled through the course, being knocked this way and that by the impact of the explosions and tripping on the glowing tracer bullets six feet overhead as I negotiated the barb wire, lifting the bottom up while cradling my rifle as I crawled underneath on my back.

Oh yes, we were allowed to watch the Apollo 11 Moon Landing on a TV in one of the barracks. I had almost totally forgotten that it had been my desire to be the first man on the Moon after being disillusioned as a cowboy. But I was in the Army now and “One giant leap for Mankind,” rang hollow. However, planting the American flag on the Moon was very special to me. I loved saying the Pledge of Allegiance every morning in my elementary school classes. And to tell the truth I always got a tear in my eye when they lowered the flag every evening at the Fort and the bugler played, “Colors.” I hated people who disrespected the flag, especially those who burned it, regardless of how I felt about Imperialistic wars.

My mother and sister attended my graduating ceremony from Basic Training. Afterwards she took me to Cannery Row in Monterey and bought me a copy of Steppenwolf at a bookstore on the famous strip. The place was really run down at the time, compared to today’s modernized tourist trap. Then she took me to the Presidio and showed me the old quarters where she believed a dead cavalry officer haunted the place. The next week I was in Advanced Infantry Training.

The training in AIT was a more subtle type of conditioning. For example, on one of the early days marching to the training stations, we took a slight deviation from the route by climbing up a very steep hill. It was quite a task – you had to make a running start to be successful and at the end you had to pull yourself up the last few yards by hanging on to vegetation, and we were all totally exhausted by the time we reached the top. But from then on whenever we went out into the field, the drill sergeant would always say, “Which way do you want to go? Shall we take the easy way, or shall we take the hill!” We always chose the hill. This was conditioning, I know, but it was fun conditioning.

I read Steppenwolf in my spare time and really enjoyed the part about the Magic Theater. The narrator was going through a midlife crises on his fiftieth birthday. I reread the book again on my fiftieth birthday and got new meaning from it.

Later that summer, almost at the completion of Advanced Infantry Training, I walked over to a building where they had equipment to listen to the new Doors album – I believe it was The Soft Parade – and afterwards when I walked outside there were scores of men clothed in khaki uniforms. This was strange because no one wore khaki uniforms at Fort Ord. They were off-limits. Fatigues were the only option at Fort Ord. I asked one of the soldiers how they were getting away with wearing khakis, and he informed me that he and the rest of them had just returned from flying over halfway to Vietnam.

It seems that according to the Army’s calculus, these men were part of President Nixon’s plan to send a lot of our boys home, and because they had gotten over halfway there, they were officially listed as being in Vietnam. The irony was not lost on me. Looking at a

nearby newstand, I read the headlines. They declared in large bold print above the fold that Nixon had just withdrawn 50,000 troops from Vietnam! What a scam the whole thing was!

Oh yes, the night raid. One day we policed the Laguna Seca race track after a race and then in the evening we dug in on a ridge overlooking the grandstands. The captain and the squad leaders gathered at the top of the ridge and we took one hour night watch shifts. The problem was that the man before me fell asleep and forgot to wake me up during the time the call came in for the night raid. The guy tried to blame it on me by saying that he had woken me up and that I must have fallen asleep afterwards. I gave him a look that let him know that that was a bad mistake.

Anyway we proceeded single file into the darkness – it was pitch black – and finally stopped above a dense wooded hilly area where there was a concealed lightly-lit Vietnamese Village. We took our positions then moved in for the attack. Almost immediately I ran into a booby trap – BAM! – set in the branches of a tree that knocked me to the ground, almost blinding me. Yes, the omens were pouring in.

I had told my father that I would not go to Vietnam and fight for a cheap military dictator. He resolved the dilemma by informing me that if I could get into Artillery Officers Candidate School, he knew a woman in Washington that was involved in cutting the orders, and he could arrange for her to send me to Germany, where most of the graduates were being assigned. I passed all of the tests and entered the Officer Candidates School at Fort Sill, Oklahoma, at the end of October 1969.

This put me in the Hot Seat. I had to spend a month between AIT and OCS at home

because the cutoff for the class in front of me stopped at me, so I had to wait a month before I could get in. That caused me to be in a special class that was all going to Vietnam as a “Relief Force,” whatever that was. Anyway, for some reason the local Fresno FM station was not playing the same music as the FM station in Monterey.

Thus, even though in Fresno Sly and the Family Stone were the big thing, my friends were quick to like the music that wasn’t being played, like It’s a Beautiful Day, and their big hit, “White Bird,” and Blind Faith, who did a knockout version of “In the Presence of the Lord.” At least I didn’t get too out of shape during that month and was in almost top shape by the time I got to Oklahoma.

Also in 1969 one of my favorite songs of all time was released: “Sugar, Sugar,” by the Archies. God I love that song. I never get tired of it. No wonder it was voted one of the best songs of 1969.

During the week of transition between Lower Class and Middle Class, we were allowed access to the Upper Class barracks. What a mess. No one made their beds and there was stuff everywhere. I learned that one of the Upper Class men was from Fresno and had gone to Fresno High. What a coincidence. But he was graduated and gone before he could give me any help.

I flew home for Christmas and took more LSD and, since I had an advanced copy of the new Rolling Stones’ cassette tape, I played it for Rocky at a Christmas night party at his apartment. He really liked the drumming on “You Can’t Always Get What You Want.” I believe it was the only song on the album where Charlie Watts was not the drummer.

I returned to OCS before New Year’s Eve, hoping that the rumor that had affected my

class from the beginning was just that, only a rumor. The rumor was a simple one: our whole class was being sent to Vietnam as a Relief Force. It is wise to not pay too much attention to Army rumors, but this one was confirmed a few weeks later by Army Ranger Officers in a counter-guerrilla insurgency class. They told us that the truth about Vietnam was not a glorious cause. They then told us a story that explained the whole Vietnam experience.

It seems that at the beginning of the war a whole regiment of North Vietnam Regulars had been trapped in a large rubber plantation. The Army was impeded from immediately taking them out because of negotiations the Army was having with the B.F. Goodrich corporation – the owners of the plantation. They were negotiating how much reparations would satisfy them for every tree destroyed by the action. It took three days until they agreed upon a price and by that time the regiment had bled into the night. “That’s what Vietnam is all about!” they forcefully stated.

Fuck that! I thought – it really was an Imperialistic war! I’m not going to die for the B.F. Goodrich Corporation! The military-industrial complex was using the draft to wage their wars, instead of paying for their own private mercenary armies. I spent the remaining weeks planning my escape. In my civilian days, one of my favorite TV shows was The F.B.I., and I learned about the million ways they could catch you in crime. So I knew I had to make my escape quick and unexpected.

From my reading of spy fiction, I also knew that I had to create a legend to throw the FBI off my scent. I joked for weeks about how I was going to desert and go to Miami to be a gigolo on the beach, eventually heading to Rio De Janeiro for the Carnival. I even composed a song

called “I’ll Meet You in Rio, Baby,” which I would lead in song as we sat on the bus taking us out into the killing fields.

Most days were cold as ice. The rule was that if the temperature ever reached 30 below zero, with the wind chill factored in, outdoor events would be cancelled. I could have sworn that some days when we were out in the field it reached below 30 below, but to the Army it was always 29 degrees below zero. Nothing was ever cancelled because of the weather. I learned to respect that.

For example, on the day of my first artillery shoot, we spent the morning manning the howitzers, which constituted loading, setting the bubbles for distance and direction, then firing them. They were extremely loud, and if you were out in the field and a shell went overhead, it sounded like a freight train. Well, that day was so cold we had multiple layers of clothing on – we waddled around like penguins – and the sky overhead was dull and gray and looked like a frozen popsicle. I could have sworn if I had a pole long enough I could have poked holes through the popsicle. All I could think of was getting inside the tent with the heater and getting warm, instead of constantly shivering.

I spent the last nights in my barracks at OCS jamming to Abbey Road and Let It Bleed with a pair of headphones. “Gimme Shelter” became my escape theme song. I had little or no contact with the outside world, so I would have to rely on whatever was available to me, which was nothing much. But that is what I had been trained for.

I had just read a Parade Magazine story about deserters going to Sweden using Montreal as a jumping off point. I looked at the big map of the United States on the barracks wall and

figured I would cross the border at Niagara Falls, for I always wanted to see it. I also had a fake name tag made since I would have to fly in uniform. I used the same name as I had used in one of my fake I.D.'s – "Huntington." In the days of long hair I would stand out like a sore thumb with my shaved head. Plus the FBI would be unable to trace my escape route.

Ghost Story

Shortly after the Rangers had confirmed the rumor, I had a very vivid dream. I was leading an infantry platoon in Vietnam through the jungle, which was weird enough, but even weirder: we were all wearing WWII uniforms. Suddenly, we were ambushed and rather doing what we had been taught – which was to rush, firing at full auto, the position from which we were receiving the most fire – we all hit the dirt and dug in.

I ended up hiding behind a large fallen tree and as the Viet Cong machinegun whittled down the wood I was using for cover, I remembered that Xenon had told me that I was to become a war hero, so I grabbed a grenade, pulled the pin, stood, and as I was about to hurtle it at the machinegun, received a bullet right between my eyes. I remembered the feeling of air rushing into the hole in my head before losing consciousness.

I awoke in an endless grassy golf-course-like plain. Since it was the same regardless of what direction I was looking, I started walking after picking a direction at random. It seemed that I was walking forever when finally I saw some wooden bleachers far off. I quickened my pace and discovered that they were baseball bleachers surrounding a baseball diamond. I could just make out a person sitting in the bleachers facing the diamond. This gave me an eerie feeling and slowly walking up to the pitcher's mound, I saw that the person was a man with his head down.

Slowly, he looked up and smiled. It was Tom Smiley! He said, “Hi, Woody, what took you so long to get here?”

This terrified me and I screamed, waking up instantly in my bunk in a cold sweat. Was it a sign from Xenon, confirming me in my instinct to get the hell out of there? I couldn't remember if we had discussed Vietnam back on the beach at Isla Vista, but ready or not, I was out of there.

Don't think for one minute that this was an easy decision for me. My whole background was against it. I would be called a coward, a traitor, doing what was beneficial to the enemy. Besides, the General of the OCS at Ft. Sill was from California and when he did a General Inspection of our barracks, he saw that I was from California also. As a result I got one of the top leadership jobs and in the week I left, after completing middle class, I was at the top of my class and was going to be in charge of the whole she-bang. I was giving up a promising career. I had scored a direct hit – destroying an old yellow VW bug – on my first artillery shoot, and scored the highest on setting up a battery.

I knew, however, that if I waited to go AWOL after graduating with orders for Vietnam, and being sworn in as an officer of the President, that I would never leave. This was a real temptation. But I was already committed, so it was Vaya Con Dios to the U.S. Army. Happy Valentine's Day, America!

I'm Leavin' On a Jet Plane

Thus, on February 14, 1970 – Valentine's Day – I set up a dummy body in my bed under the woolen blanket, using my helmet for a head, and, satisfied that it would take a while to

discover it was fake, walked out of the barracks at one in the morning while everyone was sleeping like the dead. I had called for a cab and was quickly picked up, taking it to the Greyhound Bus depot in Lawton. Under my false name, I took the bus to Will Rogers Airport in Oklahoma City, catching an early morning flight to JFK Airport in New York. I then took a puddle jumper to Buffalo, since it was the closest airport to Niagara Falls.

So far so good. If Xenon was looking out for me I had nothing to fear. A young good looking male college student struck up a conversation with me and I told him I was flying to Buffalo to see a friend attending the university there. I was playing it all by ear – I recall the theme from “Mission Impossible” playing like a loop inside my head – and when he wanted to use me as a wing man to hustle a couple of good looking college girls, I discovered that there were more than one university in Buffalo. My mind was like lightning. I had figured I would contact the SDS – Students for a Democratic Society – in order to get help crossing the border; so I told them my friend was always complaining about the SDS on campus because he thought they were all communists. They knew immediately what university I was talking about.

The guy was really happy because he was able to get the girls’ phone numbers with my help, happy enough to give me a ride in his car to a motel across the street from the university that had the SDS. Early the next morning I purchased a bottle of wine and put on my civilian clothes. I looked like a Californian hipster, with my bell bottom cords and fancy boots. Yes, I thought of myself as the Space Cowboy, after the name of a song off the Brave New World album by the Steve Miller Band.

I got mildly intoxicated and stomped through the deep snow to the university cafeteria,

where I swear everyone stopped and looked at me as if I were from another planet. Of course, California was another planet compared to the rest of the country. It wasn't hard getting directions to the SDS office on the second floor. I found the office and the girl at the desk put her finger over her mouth to silence me from divulging too much information because she believed the room was bugged by the FBI. Thus we finished our discussion outside on one of the snow covered lawns.

She set me up with a man who ran the local Anti-Draft movement and I spent a couple of days in his attic while he arranged for a High School history teacher's wife from Syracuse to drive me across the border in her family station wagon. It was there I found out that I didn't need to go to Montreal and then to Sweden, since the USA and Canada had no mutual law for extradition for AWOL American soldiers or draft dodgers. The article I had read in Parade was total fake news misinformation. There were actually over ten thousand Americans dodging the draft or AWOL from the armed services already in Canada.

I also read my first story by H.P. Lovecraft, The Case of Charles Dexter Ward – which I had lifted from an OCS Upper Classman – upstairs in the attic, and I must admit that it gave me the creepy crawlers. I became a huge fan. My favorite is At the Mountains of Madness.

On February 18, 1970, I entered Canada at Niagara Falls and experienced the awesome power of the Falls covered in ice. I had been given the name of the organization in Toronto that could help me transition into Canadian life, so I hopped on a bus and arrived in Downtown Toronto in the evening with three dollars and seventy-five cents in my pocket. The Deserter's Office was on Yonge Street at the end of the subway line, leading to the piers and lakeshore.

The office was pure Sixties, with a poster of Mao on the wall with the inscription, “Peace Comes From the Barrel of a Gun.” He explained to me how to get Landed Immigrant status and seemed a little depressed when he told me that almost everyone they helped disappeared into the woodwork once they got legal status, instead of hanging around and helping with the cause. I wasn’t sure what the cause was, but I knew the faster I got away from it the better.

Late that summer when hitchhiking across the country, I ended up in a campground in Banff National Park where I met an ex-Green Beret who had become a member of a motorcycle gang for protection. He told me he had been in Project Delta in Vietnam and had gone AWOL with another member a year earlier when back in the States, and only became a member of the motorcycle gang after a CIA team captured his friend and absconded him back to the good old U.S.A. because of the secrets they knew. He had barely escaped. I was glad that I wasn’t privy to those kind of secrets.

Because of my background, the Deserter’s office set me up with a young couple that lived in a block just off St. Clair Street, a major thoroughfare in a good area of town. Roy and Kay Richardson were both from Edmonton, Alberta, and had both managed to land jobs in the big city of two million people. I couldn’t believe how clean the city was. Roy was an accountant at a big firm downtown in one of the fifty-story buildings. Kay was an elementary school teacher. They had lots of books in their library and I read a lot of them while I waited for my papers to arrive in the mail.

I called my father after a couple of weeks to let him know that I was safe and doing fine. He told me the first thing he had done when discovering that I had gone AWOL was to notify the

FBI to capture me before I left the country. The Army had called him and my mother because the first thing AWOL's almost always did was to go home. I knew that this was the first place they always looked because a lot of the films they had shown us in training had to do with AWOLs. The Army never recognized any excuse for AWOL and they always ended up being court martialed and sentenced to time in the stockade or sent to Ft. Leavenworth.

He also told me that the FBI was looking for me in Miami, which caused glee in my heart that my legend had worked so well. Watching all of those episodes of The FBI had paid off. Years later, while my dad was on his fifth marriage and building a new house with a pool – his dream house – near Sanger, he called me to let me know that he had taken classes at the Salinas Junior College in American history, and learned what Vietnam had been all about. He told me that he was proud that I had resisted.

This was the Lt. Colonel who never recognized a valid defense for AWOL when he sat in judgment over soldiers who longed for home, and the man who had also testified on my behalf at my general court martial at Ft. Lewis – where my brother had been born – only because I was his son. That meant a lot to me but he died of a massive heart attack – just like his father – a few weeks later at the age of 62, and I never saw or talked with him again. I'm glad that he died knowing that I had not betrayed my country.

I remember enjoying the many ways Canada was like America, but the things that were different were often puzzling to me. All of the products you bought were in both English and French, and it was fun comparing the words and learning some French. Also, they said “ey” instead of “huh,” and pronounced the letter “Z” as “Zed.” Potato Chips were called crisps and

they put mayonaise instead of ketchup on their French fries. Napkins were baby diapers to them and paper napkins were called servietts.

Later, when living in Vancouver, I discovered one of my favorite Canadian pasttimes: the pub life. Canadians love the pubs, but the government controls all alcohol sales. My favorite was the Cecil Hotel at the North end of the Granville Bridge. The beer glasses all have a white line near the top that goes around the glass – the limit line. But even then, the Canadians don't have the puritan background like in the States, so their attitude toward drinking is very loose. At least it used to be. Now it has gotten very strict.

For example, because of a DUI I got in July 2001 – the last time I ever drank and drove – which is a misdemeanor in California, the Canadians see it as a felony and now would not allow me to enter their country, even though I used to be a Landed Immigrant. Ah, how times change.

Roy and Kay had never had tacos and they were delighted when we went to the store and miraculously found taco shells and all the ingredients we needed. Hardly anyone in Canada during the time I was there was familiar with Mexican food, so Roy and Kay were real pioneers for their time.

Two of the books I read there stand out in my memory. The first was a book about the history of sailing by Buckminster Fuller, the inventor of the geodesic dome. He convinced me that the history of civilized mankind was the history of sailing. The other book was Robert Heinlein's Stranger in a Strange Land, about a young man born on Mars who was gifted with paranormal powers. It reminded me of my own situation, being a secret agent of Xenon.

I needed to have certain papers so I could become a landed immigrant and live in Canada

legally. I want to make one thing clear. I was not officially a deserter, for I had every intention to return to America once I was in the mood to pay the consequences. I was absent without leave. I abandoned no fellow soldiers in a combat zone, and I never held any soldiers responsible for going to Vietnam. Most of them had no idea of what they were getting into. But I did.

Unfortunately there was a mail strike going on that lasted several weeks so it wasn't until the beginning of May that I got all of my paperwork together. It seems that the leaders of most unions in Canada were members of the Communist Party and even the mail was subject to their power of negotiations. But again, I get ahead of myself.

The record of synchronicity that I have submitted so far took place over a period of 22 years; but the heightened synchronicity I was now facing took place over a little more than four months. Roy and Kay had friends in Montreal and would go away for weekends leaving me in charge of their flat, which was on the first floor of a three story house. Two nurses who were religious members of the Seventh Day Adventist Church lived on the second floor, and a Christian editor of a Christian magazine lived on the top floor.

The Richardson's were really good to me. They fed me, let me stay at their house for free, and sometimes Roy would take me to his office downtown in one of the fifty story buildings, and once he took me to a Maple Leaf ice hockey game, which was really exciting.

I recall reading Ramparts magazine one day because of a cover article that dealt with the previous year's American Rolling Stones tour that ended at Altamont. It was called "A Play in the Apocalypse," forcing me to think that even the media seemed to be agreeing that we were living in the Last Days of the Bible.

One day when Roy and Kay were out of town I ran out of cigarettes and had a very bad case of the Jones. I couldn't think, watch TV, or read books because my mind was on a constant loop with the desire for nicotine. I've always identified with smokers who can't quit because the addiction is so severe. I tried three times and failed miserably every time.

It wasn't until I was attending a Jesus Peoples Army Bible study on Romans, chapter 8, at the Pender Auditorium in downtown Vancouver, that I had a severe coughing fit from smoking the strong Canadian rolling tobacco. I pled with God in the restroom to take away my cough and horrible nicotine addiction. This was the first miracle in my life that I was aware of, for I was relieved immediately of the coughing fit and only had to overcome all of the physical habits that went along with the addiction, like patting my upper left pocket constantly to make sure my cigarettes were still there.

But at least I learned my first real Bible lesson, for Romans 8:1 was the first real truth I grasped. It read: "There is therefore no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the Flesh, but after the Spirit." But that was much later in September 1970.

Anyway, back in April 1970, while still in Toronto – I believe it was Good Friday – I went upstairs to see if the nurses had any chores to be done that they didn't want to do themselves in order to raise enough money for a pack of cigarettes and a bottle of wine. The nurses were young pretty girls in their late twenties and were only too glad to help me. Their second story windows were really dirty but they didn't want to clean them because you had to hang precariously out of the window to get to the upper panes. They got some rope and I wrapped it around my waist, tying the other end to a radiator, and washed their windows.

They were really impressed, but after rappelling down a two hundred foot cliff overlooking Medicine Creek at Fort Sill, it was an easy task. There was a legend about Medicine Creek that told of a story about the famous Apache, Geronimo. It seems that the 7th Cavalry had hotly pursued him to the cliff overlooking the creek. With no where else to go, he leaped off the cliff on horseback, and only survived because the horse hit the water first – splitting open its stomach, softening the blow. He then escaped on foot. The cavalry did not follow him over the cliff. In fact Geronimo died an old man, still in custody, at Ft. Sill, and at one time it was believed that Prescott Bush and other member's of Yale's Skull and Bones secret society stole Geronimo's skull to use in certain rituals.

Anyway, after cleaning the windows, the nurses paid me more than the job was worth, and then fixed me lunch. Over sandwiches I asked them what the Bible said about the end of the world because it seemed to be a common theme at the time. They told me that several things had to happen first according to the Book of Daniel and they read the section to me that dealt with the Seventy Weeks. They said Europe had to be united before the Antichrist came to haunt mankind. It was a little over my head, but it allayed some of my fears, because it was so unlikely that Europe would ever unite. They also told me that the establishment of Israel in 1948 was the beginning of the countdown to Armageddon, meaning that many believers were under the impression that Jesus would return at the end of the world within a biblical generation, to wit, forty years. Well, 1988 was still a long way off.

That evening I drank a bottle of wine and felt like reading something inspiring. I had read The Prophet, by Kahlil Gibran, which Bob Roder had given my mother as a love offering. The

fad at the time was that you never bought the book for yourself, but only to give it to someone else. At least that's what he told her.

The Richardson's had a copy in their library and I settled down and started to reread it. But it was too familiar and I wanted more. Kay had her grandmother's old leather King James Bible under some other books on the bottom shelf and I retrieved it and discovered a section of glossy pages in the center that highlighted Christ's Sermon on the Mount. It amazed me to discover that so many everyday phrases in the English language originated in this sermon.

It triggered something that Xenon had told me on the beach. He said that Jesus and Lenin had been previous intergalactic agents that had been accidentally exposed by the evildoers, who had abruptly murdered them at the height of their power. This was the reason why my mission was so secret and why I had to be eternally vigilant or I, too, would be smoked out.

I didn't consult that Bible again until one evening when I was watching Elmer Gantry on TV. A line that Burt Lancaster quoted at the end rang true in my mind. It was a quote from First Corinthians, chapter 13, verse 11: "When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things."

I looked it up and tried to read it's context, but it was just a letter the Apostle Paul had written to believers in Corinth two thousand years earlier, and I couldn't understand any of it. Towards the end of April, the mail started coming and I received my IRS refund, which I swiftly spent on hashish and LSD. I dropped on my birthday and wanted to see the sun coming up outside so that I could record it with my 35mm camera. The day was overcast and stayed that way the whole day, but just after the alleged sun came up, Xenon was back inside my head telling

me, “You are the one! You are the one!” over and over and over like a broken record. I had been praying for some kind of sign to make sure I was on the right track for my mission, but that’s all that he would tell me. Big help.

Also, at the end of April I first discovered what the relief force entailed that I had been facing before I went AWOL. Nixon had decided to invade Cambodia as a short cut to ending the war. The week prior the whole world had been in suspense as the astronauts on Apollo 13 desperately flew back to Earth, and it had had a unifying effect among the races and tribes of mankind. Then Nixon threw a wrench into the machinery of peace by invading Cambodia and the whole world flipped out. The murdering of students at Kent State rapidly followed.

For What It’s Worth

A peaceful demonstration was set up at Nathan Phillips Square to protest the invasion of Cambodia, the seat of Toronto’s local government, and it soon turned into a full scale riot, mainly by the police who had just received new riot gear, not wanting to wait before trying it out. But before that it had been a peaceful demonstration. The protesters consisted mainly of middle-aged people – teachers and professionals, most of which were dressed conservatively – as well as older, retired people, and young people, both radicals and concerned citizens. It was a good mix of the people of Toronto.

It was a peaceful demonstration until they decided to march on the U.S. Consulate. The crowd stuck to the sidewalk as they approached, but soon the sidewalk overflowed and the police, attempting to stem the flow onto the street, injured an old lady with one of their horses

and the crowd went berserk.

I had taken acid and was tripping on the riot as if I were watching it on television, but it soon became apparent that if I wanted to avoid being arrested I had better get the hell out of Dodge quickly. I was near the front because I wanted to get in front of the Consulate and flip them the finger, so I was soon in the thick of things.

As a side note, as I was extricating myself from the crowd, I bumped into the leader of the Deserter's League, who had promised me that he would promote the small book of poetry I had written as a peace offering to the Canadian people. But he had other things on his mind, and was holding a big sign poster that he intended on using against the police.

"Hi," I said, halting him from his pursuit, "did you promote my book?" He looked at me with a crazed look in his eyes.

"Not enough blood!" he shouted, and bumped me out of the way and headed once again to the front lines. As he passed a couple of other peaceful demonstrators and I grabbed the sign out of his hand, but he went on, not even looking back.

I soon managed to extricate myself from the crowd, jumping to the top of a wall, where I could observe how the police managed to control the event. It was just like I had been trained in the two weeks we had spent at OCS learning civilian crowd control. The Christian editor who lived on the third floor above the two nurses passed me and looked up and saw me.

"Did you see the technique the police are using to control the crowd?" He asked pointing out to me the pincer movement the police were performing.

"Yes," I answered, and then was distracted by two very good looking women who were

attempting to get on top of the wall. I gladly gave them a hand and when I returned my attention to the editor he had disappeared in the crowd.

At the end the rioting mob was allowed only one way out and rushed through the funnel down to Yonge Street, where they broke a lot of store windows. As I climbed down from the wall I noticed a group of men standing around an American flag which they had set afire. I was sad and depressed. I saw it as the burning of my American Dream.

The Book of Revelation

I bought a six pack of ale, went home, and watched the spin that the TV reporters were giving it. It was from watching Canadian news on TV that I had learned how censored the news was that we got back in the good old USA. But their news was just as biased when it came to local matters. They painted the whole thing as the fault of the rioters, when in fact the whole thing started when an elderly lady had been forced off the sidewalk into the road and a mounted policeman used his horse to corral her back to the overcrowded sidewalk. The horse inadvertently stepped on the old lady, causing injury, which was like blood in the water. This had all happened right in front of me, so my experience was contrary to the story they were pitching.

Musing on the end of the world again, I smoked some hash when I got back to Roy and Kay's. I picked up the old Bible and turned to the Book of Revelation. Still coming down from the acid trip, I couldn't believe how psychedelic the book was. I felt that St. John the Divine must have smoked or dropped something in order to experience what he wrote. It seemed to me like he was describing an invasion from outer space with the Locust Army which would take

place after the unsealing of the Sixth Seal. I became a believer in the Apocalypse.

The Festival Express

To get ahead of myself, I must say that this was one of the hardest beliefs to give up once I knew better, for I know now that the end of the world comes to everyone, sooner or later – it’s called Death. Belief in the Apocalypse is a Great Lie of Satan for it’s just the Fear of Death in Disguise. After all, the Second Coming and the Kingdom of God on Earth already exist in the Here and Now, and if you want to predict the End of the World, you may just as well predict the day of your death.

But that is another story and it took me a long time before I learned it. I’m presently 73 years old – I’ve outlived my father by over ten years. I know my days are numbered and I’m ready to face the end of my world. Now all I have to worry about is the Coronavirus, which is more than enough.

My fear that the world was coming to end was reinforced by the Spring edition of Horizon magazine which Kay subscribed to. It contained a lengthy article and pictorial on Hieronymus Bosch’s triptych painting, The Garden of Earthly Delights. I was fascinated by the third panel that depicted scenes from Hell, and one of them stuck out more than the others. It depicted a man hanging on a large harp, the strings piercing his whole body. Supposedly he had been a lover of music, which disturbed me immensely because so was I.

And lest I forget, Roy subscribed to the Financial Times, and for weeks it documented Thor Eaton’s – an heir to the Eaton Department Store fortune – desire to milk the growing expectation of a free rock concert John Lennon and Yoko Ono had planned for the summer in a

farmer's field near Toronto. They had left Toronto just before I arrived back in February. I remember seeing one of their billboards in the city that declared that this was the "Year One of Peace." Every farm rejected Lennon's idea and eventually he gave up, but Eaton knew that the word had already gotten out that there was to be a concert in Toronto and he eventually managed to line up several big name bands for a train tour of Canada called the Festival Express, beginning in Montreal and ending in Calgary.

Whiling away the hours until my papers arrived, I would stay up late at night while Roy and Kay slept, smoke hashish and write stories on Kay's typewriter, listening to the far-out underground FM radio station, grooving to such songs as "Moondance," and "Into the Mystic," by Van Morrison, and the weird mind-blower, "Come in Number 51 Your Time is Up," by Pink Floyd, from the Michelangelo Antonioni psychedelic film, Zabriskie Point.

The title of the song reminded me that I was on an intergalactic mission and the plug could be pulled at any time if my cover was blown. I believe that the song appeared on a live Pink Floyd album, Ummagumma, under the name, "Careful with that Axe, Eugene."

The FM station also played over and over "Big Yellow Taxi" and "Woodstock," by Joni Mitchell. Her version of the song – after all she wrote it – was different from the rock version of Crosby, Stills, Nash and Young. Her's was slow, eerie and moody, an anthem for the Death of the Sixties.

There were two other songs that began with a similar opening piano prelude that I was unable to tell apart until the vocals: "Bridge Over Troubled Water," by Simon and Garfunkel, and "Let It Be," by the Beatles. The Christian editor on the third floor loved the album by Simon

and Garfunkel and played it for me one afternoon after he listened to my copy of It's a Beautiful Day, a strange acid head band that had an electric violinist. Anyway, I really liked the Simon and Garfunkel album, especially the song, "The Boxer." It was my favorite song by them until Paul Simon came out with "Graceland" near the end of my marriage.

The Richardson's also had a copy of African Genesis by Robert Ardrey and on the cover was a picture of an early ancestor of mankind with a club in his hand, and I remember thinking that there would be no way a modern man could communicate with such a hairy killer beast, but the book really intrigued me and cast the animal kingdom entirely in a new light. The Richardson's had a Siamese cat named Susie and I would often observe her making decisions before she jumped up on the couch. Wow, I remember thinking, animal's can think.

Among the books I read that winter was the classic, Great Expectations, by Charles Dickens. The end was very disappointing after such a long read. The protagonist's benefactor ended up being a pirate, dashing all his hopes, or, better, his Great Expectations.

I also experienced a very cold winter in Toronto. The second day in town, I took the subway from the Richardson's to the Greyhound Bus Station where I had stored my stuff. It was during a blizzard and by the time I got home I couldn't feel my fingers at all. I defrosted them in a sink. My civilian clothes were not made for Canada.

When spring was in the air, everyone seemed to have spring fever. A song that seemed to kick off the season was "Get Ready," by Rare Earth. Those were the times when new music was coming out hit by hit, taking no prisoners. Rock'n'roll was here to stay.

Roy and I had agreed that after I became a Landed Immigrant I would move out and try to

get room and board at a deserter's halfway house. So while I waited for the machinery that would take me to Windsor, Ontario, then across the river to Detroit, where I could recross the river and enter Canada as if I had come straight from America, where I would then submit my paperwork to the Canadian border officials who would hopefully recommend that I be granted Landed Immigrant status – I smoked the rest of my hash, typed, read books and watched TV.

One night, I watched a made for television movie called The Love War, starring Lloyd Bridges and Angie Dickenson. It was about two rival planetary systems waging a virtually invisible war on Earth with secret agents that would decide the fate of the entire planet. This sounded a lot like the scenario that Xenon had pitched to me on the beach in Santa Barbara. At the end the good guys, the aliens who were fighting for our survival, lost the war due to the fact that Bridges fell in love with another agent who was actually a member of the other side. Lloyd played the good guy agent and Angie played the femme fatal on the side of those that wanted to destroy our planet. After Lloyd fell in love with Angie and innocently betrayed his identity to her, she then killed him, supposedly dooming our planet to extinction. What a story! What a lesson to keep in mind.

The machinery now in place, I took a bus to Windsor where the people lived who were to help the Americans who were going to take me across the border. The Underground Railway system in place was very impressive in its organizational ability. For entertainment on the long bus ride, I brought along the May copy of Playboy magazine, which actually had an interesting interview with William F. Buckley Jr., that I was reading when a man across the aisle from me asked me why I was reading the magazine in front of everyone. At first I didn't understand his

question, and then he explained that he was a newly ordained Christian evangelist and the women on the bus might find the magazine offensive. I shrugged him off, viewing it as another example of Christian intolerance.

When we took a stop for lunch, the man offered to buy me lunch and I, being broke, accepted gratefully. He told me that he had just been anointed by his sect and that he was able to perform miracles. And then he tried to lead me to Jesus. He told me about his conversion experience and the supernatural things that had accompanied it. For example he had stopped a charging big dog by a word of power. Then he told me I had to get on my knees and repent of my sins before Jesus could accept me.

I told him about my experience with Xenon on the beach and about the psychic events that I had encountered. He pleaded with me that I still needed Jesus, but I stuck to my guns and when we arrived in Windsor we parted in peace. A Canadian couple who drew cartoons for some magazine put me up for the night until the people taking me across the border arrived the next afternoon. They believed that a night crossing was best to escape the scrutiny of the American border guards. So we waited until night.

The crossing, through a tunnel beneath the Detroit River, got me into Detroit without a hitch, even though I had to admit to the guards that I was an American citizen. Once again, “Mission Impossible,” was playing inside my head. The car was driven by American students; the sole female being a pretty law school student. They knew the penalty for aiding a fugitive and were extremely courageous. I had no idea or clue about their political ideology, and they never mentioned any. Since I wasn’t very political I recall discussing a mutual interest with the

law student: Mitch Ryder and the Detroit Wheels and the Motown Motor City music scene. I wish I could have taken her out on a date.

On our circular return, we passed Tiger Stadium where a lot of black people and riot police – their squad cars looked like something out of science fiction – were confronting each other while a baseball game was taking place. Then we recrossed the river by a bridge this time and I went inside the office of the Canadian border guards. After an hour of reviewing my papers, they accepted me, virtually granting me Landed Immigrancy. The students then took me back to the Canadian couple's house and that was that. Ah, I was finally in Canada legally.

Years later, in the Summer of '73, when I was serving my general court martial sentence at the Disciplinary Barracks at Ft. Leavenworth, Kansas – my sister had been born at the Fort hospital when my dad was stationed in Kansas City – an Army Major in Army Intelligence flew from the Pentagon in order to interrogate my knowledge of the people who had helped me cross the border. How in the hell do they know about that? I thought. But I had been well briefed by my Ivy League attorney in JAG who told me I still had the right to remain silent. I told this to the Major, who wore civilian clothes, and he angrily informed me: "Don't you know that they were communists?" I remained silent and that was that. I hate communism but one does not betray those that help him, especially pretty women law students.

By the way after I went back to Fresno State College to get my B.A. in Political Science – I made the Dean's List all three semesters – I received a full Presidential Pardon and Clemency Discharge from the Army after doing six months of alternate service with the Berkeley Christian Community, especially with the Spiritual Counterfeits Project, where I became an investigative

journalist in the late summer of 1976 – the Bicentennial year of our Republic – under President Ford’s amnesty program.

We researched and reported on religious cults – like Eckankar (we got the leader, Darwin Gross, fired for fraud), UFO’s, and the Walk of John Robert Stevens – from an evangelical point of view, which I no longer hold to, seeing that all organized religions are Cults and most Dogma, like the Doctrine of Inerrancy, is Delusional Speculation. Thus I was freed from the felony nature of my Bad Conduct Discharge and was eventually at liberty to attend law school and become an attorney. Ah, only in America are such things possible.

I even clerked for a Federal Judge, the Honorable Myron Crocker, Founder of the Eastern District Court for California, who had been appointed by Eisenhower after a successful career in the FBI. He used to tell me stories of how they used to break into Communist offices and rig them with recording devices during the War, World War II that is.

Ah, the Spiritual Counterfeits Project. One day, toward the end of my stay in Berkeley, I was assigned to do research on the Walk of John Robert Stevens. My first interview was with an ex-member of the Cult named Tony Cox, a well-known artist and ex-husband of Yoko Ono. He had literally escaped from the Cult, taking his daughter, Kyoko, with him (she was known as Molly to keep her identity a secret because John Lennon and Yoko had hired detectives to find Yoko’s daughter). Later, I went to Amsterdam and London with Tony and Kyoko to retrieve some of the video he had shot when John and Yoko first got married.

The second person I interviewed who had been in the Cult was my future wife, Patricia Egger. She had boxes of cassette tapes – John Robert Stevens was one of the first pastors to use

mass cassette tape marketing for his sermons – and Trish provided me with most of the information I gathered for my report.

John Robert Stevens had some very bizarre beliefs. He believed he was in spiritual warfare with some very powerful demons, who he said were the spirits of the Nephilim, the Giants in the Book of Genesis. While he was engaged in this battle for months, his Cult followers would engage in what they called Violent Intercession. They would gather on the stage before a sermon and pound the floor with their fists, and yell binding oaths on the Nephilim – I tape recorded one such session, and you would swear it sounded like a horde of lunatics in an insane asylum. The current Nephilim danger was named by Stevens as Talmai, the son of Anak, a Giant that Caleb had slain during the Conquest of Canaan. They also prayed for the death of popular people, like Robert Kennedy. Stevens took personal credit for his assassination.

Well, I guess John Robert Stevens lost his battle with Talmai, because he was slowly dying of cancer of the throat and prostate. He only lasted a couple of years later. They laid his body to rest on a kitchen table at his fortress like retreat he called Shiloh, in the Iowa farmlands. They kept him there for eight months expecting his body to resurrect in the way he had interpreted Romans 8:10-23, that is, our mortal bodies will put on immortality at the coming of the Lord, and the new bodies now transformed will constitute the Manifestation of the Sons of God. So much for his prophetic word, a word he called the Rhema, thus, the Church of the Living Word.

In Amsterdam we stayed in an apartment in a condemned building that had been taken over by the Crackers, an anarchist group that battled the police every time they were kicked out

of a condemned building. They had a point for there were not enough dwellings for the population. His apartment was on the third floor and the stairway stank of urine and boiled cabbage. Tony had installed a bathtub in the small bathroom and I immediately crashed on the floor – hoping the rats would leave me alone – because of jet lag.

When I awoke Kyoko showed me around downtown. I was intrigued with the outdoor urinals, but also grossed out from all the dogshit on the sidewalks. It was the dirtiest city I've ever been in. Kyoko was tempted by the anarchists but I told her to get a copy of Homage to Catalonia, by George Orwell, which taught the historical reality of anarchism, that it always leads to some kind of authoritarianism.

We stayed there for a few days and Tony gave us a tour of the Rijksmuseum where they had the huge painting, The Night Watch, by Rembrandt. He then pointed out all of the Dutch masters, commenting on their style and history. I'll say one thing, Tony really knew his art. Afterwards, he then drove to us to The Hague, where Tony talked the authorities into letting his VW Bus – his tags were out of date – onto the ferry to England. The ferry was huge and you couldn't get into the first class section through the front doors unless you had a ticket, so Tony led us around the ferry so that we entered from the rear, then sat down and had a first class dinner on a white cloth table top.

Tony had rented a room with beds below deck so that we could sleep, but the ferry was so loaded, including a train, that I got claustrophobia, and hung out topside with the other passengers. The North Sea was very choppy and the ferry would sink like a stone if anything happened to it and I wanted to be able to abandon ship.

Anyway, Tony had this decrepid VW Bus, with chairs for seats – it was amazing that it ran at all. He illegally parked it in Trafalgar Square, took out the keys, got out and crossed the street to a bank, for he had hid all of the tapes in various banks to keep them away from Yoko, who technically owned them. So, with Lord Nelson peering down from his perch over our heads, a pretty meter maid pulled up alongside, got out, and started writing a ticket for illegal parking.

I explained that the driver was inside the bank and I would have to get him because he had the keys. She tolerated this and when I entered the bank – a spectacular Cathedral to Mammon – and went down the marble stairs to where the vault was located, I was literally stunned by the size of it. It looked like a set out of a James Bond movie. The massive round vault door was at least three feet thick. The open space inside was mainly empty, except for over in a corner there was a black valise that Tony was rummaging through.

I explained the situation to him and he quickly assembled the tapes he was looking for, then we went outside where lovely Rita was waiting for us. She handed Tony the ticket and waited until Tony started the engine and pulled out of his illegal parking place before she left. As soon as the meter maid was out of sight, Tony tore up the ticket and pitched it out the window.

These video tapes were marvelous to behold. They documented every day things like John shaving and joking with Kyoko, but the one that was the most amazing was of John, Yoko, Kyoko, and Tony driving down a London highway in John's Bentley. They had just returned from Denmark where they had shaved their heads with the American black comedian, Dick Gregory. The radio was on, and as Kyoko demanded that John talk to the Queen about the

horrible pollution outside – you could hardly see anything out the windows – the radio was blasting “Hair,” by the Cowsills. It was another of those times where the music perfectly went with the scenery.

One day he took us to the Tate Gallery and he shared his knowledge of the English painter, Joseph Mallord William Turner, focusing our attention on one of his masterpieces, The Deluge. I also got to negotiate with Tony and the BBC for more seed money for the documentary he was shooting on the Walk of John Robert Stevens. They had already staked him for several thousand pounds and Tony thought we could get more money from them because a Christian from Hawaii had just assassinated John Lennon on orders from God. Since Stevens often prayed for the deaths of political leaders in his church services, and had one of his Cults in Hawaii, we convinced the head honchos at the BBC that it was worth researching. I really love making a deal. In fact, after negotiating with the BBC I decided I would go to law school.

But even though we raised another five thousand pounds, Tony gave up the video tape rights because as he joked afterward, “Video tape isn’t going anywhere.” He couldn’t have been more wrong. I also loved walking through the Masterpiece Theatre sets to get to the office where the negotiations took place.

Oh yes, we spent three days in a cottage in Oxfordshire to work on a script for the video he was making. It was at this time that Tony told me that he used to be a courier between New York City and Harvard where he would deliver LSD to Timothy Leary and Richard Alpert (Baba Ram Das says “Be Here Now!”). What a trip.

I remember getting up in the morning, passing the ancient, gnarled Oak tree out front,

then walking along the road that bordered the Thames River, and into the small village two miles down the road that mainly existed to produce goods for fox hunting. The weather was nice that morning, but most of the time it was cold and dreary with an icy wind the Brits call the “Wind from Norway.” About a mile down the road I passed the dog kennels and suddenly I was aware that C.S. Lewis and J.R.R. Tolkein used to take walks around this very same area.

The hills were loaded with fake ancient Classical ruins – called “follies” – and in the village I would have the best scrambled eggs and sausage in the world. Oxford itself was a real trip. It wasn’t hard to imagine that it was the headquarters for the Illuminati.

A lot of different investors in Tony’s video thought that they owned a large interest in it, and I don’t know who ended up owning it in the end, but a mild version was eventually released – you can google “Vain Glory,” and watch it yourself. People magazine did a story on it, with Tony on the front cover, but the Challenger disaster happened that week and they changed the cover to a picture of the Challenger exploding.

To flash-back to Toronto, I moved to a deserter’s halfway house on Dundas Street, across the street from a museum – with a life-size Auguste Rodin bronze sculpture named “Adam” out front – in Chinatown. I remember vividly tripping care-free through the streets of Chinatown listening to the sing-song nature of the Chinese language and the happy Chinese people who always smiled at me. I don’t believe that even one of them was a member of the May 4th Movement.

The half-way house contained some real characters, like Steve the Astrologer from Wisconsin, whose astrology charts were uncannily accurate, and Ken Munro from Portland,

Oregon, who believed he could get inside people's heads and was a huge fan of Johnny Rivers. Then there was Archie, a Green Beret medic who had gone through LSD therapy with an Army psychiatrist to help cure him of his pleasure in killing people. Steve the Astrologer, who was really into Edgar Cayce, the Sleeping Prophet, and his readings on Atlantis, told us of a prophecy of Jeane Dixon that said the reincarnation of Jesus Christ had been born in India. He was also a believer in Synchronicity. All of us desired to go to India to meet the new Jesus. Well, all of us except Archie, who hated Christianity more than me.

One night Archie and I dropped some local stuff from Rochdale College and we wandered the back streets of the city, ending at the docks where we would stare at the lake's horizon. You couldn't see the other side. I remember at the beginning, when the acid first starting coming on, that we were in this Yorkville hip hangout drinking beers where a Rolling Stones song was playing on the radio. I believe it was "Monkey Man," from the Let it Bleed album. I recall the next song really pissed Archie off. It was Norman Greenbaum's "Spirt in the Sky." I stayed silent on the matter not wanting to get into an argument with him.

An average day at the halfway house was spent walking miles from one Rescue Mission Soup Kitchen to another, listening to sermons before we could eat the otherwise free food. One sermon stood out for me, especially the Bible passage they read to us: "For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ." What does that mean? I asked myself. It was from First Corinthians, a letter I had tried to read before to no avail. Unfortunately, my hunger overruled my understanding, and I dug in grateful for the charity of the Canadian people.

Later, when I got home, I looked up the passage in my pocket Gideon's and again did not understand a single word. The Bible was really a weird book. Otherwise, our group would stay up late, smoke cigarettes, and tell stories about spooky things that happened in our lives. Since I could no longer afford to buy a regular pack of cigarettes – which were called Tailor Mades – I was subject to buying pouches of tobacco and rolling my own. These were called Rollies. They turned my right hand fingers and mustache orange from the heavy nicotine.

As the date for the Festival Express approached, the FM station DJ would take phone calls, one of them being from one of the Crowleyites at Rochdale College, who informed the audience that the Festival was being held on a very special night when the stars were just right for them to create a Cone of Power which would penetrate the dimensional veil and allow god-like beings to enter our plane. Far out – a Cosmic Event!

Ah, Rochdale College. Now that was an institution worth discussing. You can google it and see for yourself. It was a free college on Bloom Street with an all-night cafeteria that was on the bottom level just off the sidewalk. It had its own security force, whose job was mainly sniffing out narcs because of the high volume of drugs being sold there. Many of the students were experimenting with drugs and Aliester Crowley and Wicca. A few of them had jumped off balconies, either as suicides or because they were high and believed they could fly.

This isn't as crazy as it sounds. I too, one night while high on acid, stood on a balcony looking out at the city and almost believed that I could fly like I used to do in my childhood dreams. Then I remembered that I had forgotten how and decided that I wouldn't try it unless I was on the ground level.

They would show old black and white silent films on the roof – I saw Phantom of the Opera with Lon Chaney there, after running up 18 flights of stairs – and use it for sunbathing in the day. I would hang out some nights in the cafeteria and drink coffee and listen to the other customers. A Maoist group calling themselves the May Fourth Movement, after the Kent State Massacre, would also hang out there and I discovered that they were planning a big protest outside the Canadian National Exhibition (CNE) Stadium – where the festival was being held – demanding that the concert should be free because that was John Lennon’s vision and that was how it was being advertised below the border. Oh boy, first the Crowleyites and now the Maoists were looking forward to the big event.

Ten Years After, Janis Joplin, and the Grateful Dead were to be the headliners. One night, I visited one of the rooms on an upper floor at Rochdale to buy some acid – I can’t recall how many stories tall it was, but it was high enough to commit suicide by jumping. A young man occupied the room and he was tripping with a couple of good looking girls. It seems that they had been practicing one of the spells in Crowley’s Magick or Gerald Gardner’s Book of Shadows and allegedly put a spell on a little black kitten, who was howling while clinging to the window curtains by it’s claws. I calmly walked over to it and pulled it gently off the curtains and it stopped howling and began purring in my arms. I can’t tell you how much this pissed the young guy off and he demanded to know how I had broken his spell. Actually I had no idea how I had done it but I told him it was the Power of Love and finished my transaction.

One day a few us were walking home through the University of Toronto campus when we bumped into a pretty 16 year old runaway. I ignored her since she was jail bait, but the others

invited her home. I was taking a bath when she came inside the bathroom to tell me that a house was burning down in the next block. I hurriedly got dressed and followed her to the conflagration. A burning house is always a crowd event.

It was an old two story wood frame house and everything was on fire. The firemen tried to put it out but in the end, whatever was left of the frame collapsed all at once. I believe everyone had gotten out in time. I saw two more houses burning down when I lived in Vancouver. Everyone got out of the first one, but a little old grandma burned alive in the second. The ending was always the same, which was a rather spectacular collapse. No wonder they always drew a huge audience.

I saw a picture of the 16 year old runaway in Time magazine at some outdoor rock concert, and saw her again when I was in the Jesus People's Army in Vancouver. She was looking for help since she was six months pregnant and had no idea of who the father was.

Meanwhile, the head of the American Deserter's organization – who had totally forgotten our encounter during the riot – decided that we should become a Maoist cell for revolutionary activity. They appointed a Maoist deserter to be the head of our house. None of us were going for this. He would post Maoist propaganda next to the toilet, and I found it was quite useful as toilet paper. It was only a matter of time before we got the hell out of there. None of us wanted to be deported for revolutionary activity.

They actually made us attend a meeting at our house where the guest of honor was a French Canadian terrorist and a member of the FLQ, a far leftist group that sought the annexation of Quebec from the Canadian Union. The Frenchman made a pitch for our help in

order to train the members of his violent group in the handling of automatic weapons. It seemed that we had escaped one Army for another.

That Fall, the FLQ kidnapped and executed Pierre Laporte, Quebec's Provincial Deputy Premier, in Montreal. President Trudeau then invoked the War Measures Act, declaring martial law across the land. The Canadian people did not take the abridgment of their liberty standing down. They protested the Proclamation almost to the state of violence. I remember thousands of Canadian citizens protesting the curfew, marching in defiance in downtown Vancouver. I was very proud to walk with them. The Government eventually backed down.

All I have to say is that I am glad that a few of us rebelled against training the FLQ in small weapons firing. I'm glad that I don't have Pierre Laporte's blood on my hands.

The Cosmic Event

Saturday, June 27, 1970, the Big Day of the Cosmic Event finally came. An Army deserter who had done a tour in the Nam had a sister who was driving up from Pennsylvania to take him to the Festival. There was just enough room in the car for him only but he promised to come back for the rest of us. He never showed and after waiting two hours, I said, "Screw it, let's walk! It's only two miles. Little sweat."

It took us less than an hour and as we approached the Stadium through the Pearly Entrance Gate of the CNE – it was topped by an Angel – I noticed that there was a pitched battle taking place between the crowd and the police. Ambulances were taking wounded officers and protesters from the scene, as well as paddy wagons for those who were arrested. You can watch a documentary of the Festival Express by googling that name.

It didn't take long to guess the strategy of the May 4th Movement. They gathered a large crowd at each side of the entrance, which were closed by gates. They would concentrate their forces at one end and make a push, allowing many people to squeeze through without paying, and when the police massed their forces sufficiently to stop the flow, they would then hit the other end with a large force, getting some more people inside. Pure Sun Tzu, who wrote The Art of War: "Thunder in the east, Strike in the west." At least someone in the Maoist May 4th Movement knew some Chinese philosophy. Slowly but surely Thor Eaton and the police were losing.

Finally, after much bloodshed, Jerry Garcia made a deal with Metro Police Inspector Walter Magahay, promising that he could get many groups to play for free after they were done playing for money inside the stadium if the police could set up a stage outside in the park with a hands-off policy. The management didn't like it, but the Police Inspector made the deal anyway to put an end to the violence. Thor Eaton ended up losing a lot of money in Toronto.

Since it would take a couple of hours to set up the stage, we all walked back to the house for the turkey dinner the United Church had prepared for us. On the way we passed the area chosen for the free concert. It was in a wooded area known as Coronation Park, specifically in a baseball diamond, across the street from a Molson's brewery. For some reason the Tip Top Tailor billboard in the background seemed to stand out as we hiked the two miles home.

The Last Supper

There was truly a feast waiting for us back at the house. An old deserter with some really good Vietnamese marijuana also showed up at this time and after the feast he lit up a big joint

and we all got super stoned. I believe that the pot had been dipped in opium because it totally incapacitated us all as we sat around the table, barely able to talk or stay awake.

Then I got the Big Idea. What if we could get some acid and then watch the Grateful Dead for free? All of sudden I was wide awake with the fixed idea in my brain. I looked around at some of the items the Church had left for us, and immediately spied an AM/FM transistor radio and an electric clock. We already had both of them and didn't need them. Don't ask me how, but I knew I would be able to barter them for some hits of acid and maybe a couple of joints.

I was so hyped up I managed to convince most people around the table that it was a good idea, but after a mile of hiking all but three of us gave up and plodded back to the house. It wasn't as easy as I thought it was going to be, but we made it back right at dusk. I wasn't at all self-conscious holding the radio and clock in my hands as I made my way through the crowd of at least five thousand people gathered around the flatbed truck stage.

It didn't take me long to find out who was selling acid and I found his tent in the wooded area. He was stoned and thought the whole idea of trading acid for the radio was funny, and asked me if it worked. I turned on the radio and there was barely enough battery power to last more than a few minutes, but after he saw that it worked he turned it off and handed me two tabs of acid, and I managed to sell the clock to a guy who asked me what time it was when he saw that the clock was not plugged in, but I was holding the plug as if I were the power source. I had been keeping the time with the help of the watch of Steve the Astrologer, so when I told him what the time was on the clock, and it turned out to be the actual time, he enjoyed the trick so much he

gladly parted with two joints. I took a whole tab of acid and split the other in two and gave them to Steve and another friend whose name escapes me.

The crowd in the time that we had been gone for dinner had raided the brewery across the street and when some people got on the loudspeaker system to raise some money to bail out their friends who had been busted in the skirmish, they raised over two hundred dollars in empties that they cashed in.

Local bands were playing and there was a good vibe in the audience. We sat down close to the front where some people from Rochdale had built a small fire. The emcee told them to put the fire out before the police busted them, but they just laughed at him, reminding him that the police had a hands-off policy. Then they put more wood on the fire, making it even bigger. There were a few police on horseback, but they stayed well into the background and never once stopped the festive anarchy. A band called Luke and Apostles played a weird style of rock, preaching violent revolution.

I decided if I shared the two joints with the other people around us, they would do likewise with their own pot, and thus we promptly got into the spirit of the crowd waiting for the acid to hit us, having a good time with all the strangers.

The crowd complied with my strategy, sharing joints and beers with us. After a half hour we were totally into the groove. In between acts, a group of bikers would rev their engines and play the Santana album at full blast, especially "Soul Sacrifice." The song was really old to me, but the East Coasters had only just begun to hear it.

And then it was night.

A local band prepared to take the stage, but they were shoved off by a band from Ohio called January, who said it was their destiny to play an unscheduled set and they proceeded to tune their instruments. The bass player took the mike and explained that they were going to blow everyone's mind with their music. Everyone started yelling, "Heavy, man, heavyyyyyy!" to which the bass player responded, "You don't know what heavy really means but you soon will."

A lot of people started gathering around the fire and I recognized some of them from Rochdale, including a black haired beauty who was rumored to be the High Priestess of a coven. When January began their first song, they all started to do a snake dance around the fire, the witch waving her long hair back and forth as if directing the flow of energy. That's right, I thought, they were going to raise a cone of power and open a window in the sky for alien entities to enter our dimension. I know it sounds like something out of a Dr. Strange comic book, but after that I started rushing on the acid and lost all rational perspective.

What follows is the account of my perception of reality at the time. I understand most of it was hallucinatory, but it was all very real to me, so I will relate it as I experienced it and ask nothing of the reader but to keep an open mind.

All Them Witches

My first inclination that something was not quite right was a heavy force pulling me down into the ground, a force ten times stronger than normal gravity. O wow! what's going on? I thought. I looked again at the High Priestess of the Black Mass, for I assumed that's what was going on with the fire and snake dancing, and she was staring back at me. She's trying to take over my mind, I thought, resisting the force with all of my might. I always thought I had a strong

mind, but it was not equal to the force she was directing at me. It felt like she was summoning me, but for what? I immediately thought of soul sacrifice and I was having nothing to do with that.

It's just the acid, I kept telling myself. Don't worry, in a few hours you will be normal again, but it was no use. I was being overpowered. Perhaps she was directing all of the mental energy of her snake dancers against me. Gotta get away, gotta get away, I thought, hoping that her power was limited to distance.

It took me a few moments of epic struggle to stand up on my feet and start walking away from the fire. The music, which seemed to ravish my mind, kept changing rhythm, changing this way and that, and the bass player was right, it was really heavy. It appeared to be designed to be an expressway to consciousness alteration.

Meanwhile the force was stronger than ever, crushing me under what seemed comparable to the gravity on Jupiter. I had to get out of there quick before I became the sacrifice in this psychedelic witches' sabbath. I was realizing slowly but surely that the witches were hypnotizing me with the help of the band, whom they seemed to be in league with. In fact, they were casting a spell on the entire audience, a lot of whom were howling like wolves.

I started to walk away and that caused me to take notice of several other things. There were people in the audience burning bad smelling candles, chanting, "We can do anything, we can do anything," over and over. They seemed to be in telepathic rapport with the head witch still writhing with her snake dancers. There was a strong smell of brimstone in the air.

Then I became aware of more of them stretching strings around and through the audience,

making a magic circle and pentagram. They smiled at me, but they were sinister smiles. I've got to get the fuck out of here, was all I could think about. As I approached the north end of the newly created magic circle that led to the road and the brewery and sure escape, the first song ended and there was a brief pause in the assault on my mind. But it was far from being silent, for it seemed to be a cue for the bikers to rev their engines again, this time louder than ever.

Now's the time to make a break for it, I thought, and as I reached the end, I noticed a Ryder van which the band on stage had rented from Ohio, and the driver was staring at me, also with one of those sinister smiles. I tried to cross the circle but I ran into an invisible force field. I reached out my hands and touched it, pressed against it, but it wouldn't budge. Then I remembered that it was death to leave the protection of a magic circle during a ceremony. I was so close to escape, yet so far away.

Then a voice that sounded like Xenon said, "If you leave the protection of the circle you will die!" That's when I heard the sirens in the sky and, looking up, I saw searchlights from above scanning the audience back and forth as if they were looking for someone. Then I thought, Oh my God! they're looking for me.

Had I blown my cover? Had the evil forces in the cosmos smoked me out? Was I to be sacrificed like Jesus and Lenin? Lots of similar ideas raced through my fearful mind.

Then the thought came to me that we were being invaded from outer space like in the War of the Worlds by H.G. Wells, and we were the weaker species, just prey for superior predators. Then I remembered the Book of Revelation and the invasion of the Locust Army from Hell after the Sixth Seal was opened. Just what in the fuck is going on?

And then I saw that the witches' cone of power had punched a window into the sky and beings were descending upon the audience. They were humanoid, male and female, wearing skin tight black body suits from head to toe, with only their faces visible. Each one of them had a fiery red letter "S" embossed over their left breast, and as they landed on the audience they disappeared inside the people they landed on, like cosmic incubi and succubi.

This can't be really happening, I thought, but the witches making the magic circle started to come toward me as if they meant to do me harm. People in the audience started screaming and howling and running like hell in all directions. I read the next day in the newspapers that over 650 people were treated at the first aid station, most for bad acid trips that night. Anyway, I stood my ground and put up my dukes, thinking that I would take a few of them with me and then everything started to spin and I fell on the ground and lost control of my body. A voice that sounded like Xenon then said, "Give in, this is what you were prepared for, this is your destiny! Give in, give in, stop resisting! This is the Time!"

My God, was Xenon leading the Locust Army? I didn't obey and kept resisting, but he was gradually overpowering my mind. I floated out of my body like I had done when I dropped the Owsley White Lightning in Fresno, and saw my body on the ground as I rose above the audience. Am I dead? I thought. Did I just overdose? Was this the end of the Space Cowboy? a name I had started calling myself after the song by the Steve Miller Band.

I know that you have probably heard this a dozen times, but my whole life flashed before me in an instant. O my God! I thought, I really am dead. And then I blacked out.

Limbo

When I regained consciousness I found myself on the ground of a poorly paved parking lot with a group of bikers kicking the shit out of me to the sound of motorcycle engines being revved in the background. I was face down and when they stopped kicking, Xenon made another plea for me to give in, promising me the pain would stop when I complied. I screamed, “You can kill my body, but can’t have my soul.”

Xenon didn’t like that and one of the bikers lifted his right boot over my head and stomped on my face, smashing it into the pavement, which broke in front of my face like glass, after which I lost consciousness again.

When I came to the next time I found myself inside a coffin with black hooded people chanting around it, burning black sulfurous candles. Xenon pled with me again to give in and the pain would cease, and again I refused. The witches set fire to my feet and the pain was extreme; I could even smell the acrid scent of my hair burning, and then my whole body was on fire and once again, mercifully, I blacked out.

This time when I awoke I found myself on the stage, the strings to January’s bass player’s guitar strung through my body so every time he struck a chord it vibrated through my nervous system like a million volts of electricity. My God, I thought, this is like the scene in Bosch’s Garden of Earthly Delights! And then, realizing how absurd it was, I knew it wasn’t really happening, but my mind was being controlled by Xenon. Again he made his plea, and again I resisted.

I remember thinking, Is this Hell? Am I going to be here forever? That idea was hard to

accept and was still burning in my mind when I began to rise into the air, higher and higher, until I left the surly bonds of Earth behind. Then I was racing through the solar system, faster and faster, and then I was speeding past galaxies, and the faster I went the more the background slowed down. I saw that I was heading for a bright point of light at close to the speed of light and the rest of the Universe was spiralling into that point like rifling inside a gun.

And then I was entering the point and I started to be turned inside out, my whole being was being shattered. I could no longer take it, believing that I was ceasing to be. In blind desperation, I cried out: “O God, please help me!”

And just like that I was back at the concert, people screaming and howling in the background. I sat up, surprising the people that had witnessed my catatonia. Did I just come back from the dead? I thought, standing to my feet. Gotta get some Thorazine, I thought, and made my way through the witches and the crowd toward the first aid tent.

Telepathic Incarnation

But on the way a curious thing happened. A young hippie, seated against the driver’s side rear wheel of a VW bus, told me to stop for a minute and he would play me all of my favorite songs. He was strumming a twelve string guitar, which were very popular at the time. I sat down and asked him where he was from. He told me he was from San Jose, California, and he didn’t like what January was doing to the audience.

Thinking to challenge his arrogancy of knowing what my favorite songs were, I sat down and he started playing and singing, “Hey, Joe,” my favorite Jimi Hendrix song. Maybe he does know? I thought. But instead of it giving me a good feeling, the verse “Where you going with

that gun in your hand,” brought to my memory several times when I had wanted to kill people with a gun in my possession, and suddenly I was filled with guilt. O my God, I thought, this man from San Jose must be the reincarnation of Jesus Christ that we were looking forward to meeting! And then he played Joni Mitchell’s version of “Woodstock,” ending with the verse:

We are Stardust, We are Golden,
We are caught in the Devil’s Bargain
And we’ve got to get ourselves back to the Garden.

“What’s the Devil’s Bargain?” I asked. He waved his hand toward the audience and the chaos of people howling and screaming and running helter skelter to the discordant music of January, and all of a sudden it hit me that I was part of an Evil Generation.

“How do we get back to the Garden?” I queried. He smiled and opened his shirt and showed me a large wooden crucifix around his neck with Jesus hanging on the cross. A voice different than Xenon then said inside my head, “Christ died for your sins!” Of course, I thought, remembering what the newly ordained evangelist had told me on the bus to Windsor. He had told me what I needed to do. So I got down on my hands and knees and held on to the man from San Jose’s cowboy boots, begging for mercy. “O God forgive me!” I cried, like the evangelist had advised me, but nothing happened to alleviate my fear. I begged harder when the new voice said, “Stop struggling, let go, stop holding on!”

I had a vision where I was being torn between Heaven and Earth, being stretched as the force of Xenon wouldn’t let me go, pulling on my legs, and the force of Good wasn’t lifting me up, and I was losing ground quickly. “Okay,” I said, letting go, ending the struggle. I was then seized by Xenon, who wasn’t leaving without a fight, and inch by inch he was being torn from

my body, finally forced out through my mouth. I was screaming in pain the whole time and then he was gone and it felt like a cool clean breeze as the Holy Spirit took Xenon's place.

So that was what it was! Xenon had possessed me telepathically.

My Vision of Heaven on Earth

When things cleared I stood to my feet only to find that all the people were gone. The subjective experience of Reality was incredible. Normal life seemed fake in comparison. There was only me and a group of young men playing Frisbee by the Angel Gate. When they saw me they gave a cheer and ran over and patted me on the back, congratulating me on my salvation.

“Is this Heaven?” I asked, believing the leader of the group was Jesus. They all nodded their heads.

I looked around. The Tip Top Tailors billboard was still flashing in the background. “But it's exactly like Toronto,” I said.

The leader said, “Yes, of course it is. But you made it.”

And then I asked, “Where is everybody else?”

Jesus said, “They didn't make it.”

“Where did they go?” I asked, feeling a twinge of fear.

March Into Darkness

Jesus waved his hand and the audience reappeared, being marched in single file by the black-clothed Locust Army, and as they passed me on their March into Darkness, the Fallen Angel demons all cursed me, calling me traitor, and every foul name in the book, as if they knew me and I was supposed to know them.

What? I thought. Had I been one of them at one time? A Rebel Angel? It sure seemed that that was what they were suggesting. Well, even Xenon had told me I pre-existed on another planet in this Galaxy. But all I could think of was that it was unfair that my generation was being marched into Darkness and that if I were given the chance to warn them, I might be able to save some of them.

Born Again

I made my pitch to Jesus, who said, “Don’t you know what it means to go back?”

“Yes,” I lamely answered, believing he meant that I would have to go through the fear of death all over again. But I have learned since what he really meant. That meaning is clearly revealed in the Book of Job, under the heading: “Why Do the Righteous Suffer?”

Jesus then conjured a wishing well out of thin air in front of me, pointing at the blackness inside. “That’s the way back,” he said. “Go and warn them.”

Without thinking twice I jumped inside.

My Coronation in Coronation Park

And then I was rain falling from the sky, splashing down on the Earth. And then I became the fertile Earth, then an orange tree, and then an orange, and then a man ate me and then I became a baby about to be born. I had a similar experience of heading to the point where all points end as I was being moved through the birth canal, and then I was a new baby, screaming for breath. The whole time I was being born I was fearful that I was coming back as a baby and not my adult self, and thus would forget everything I had learned, but as I looked around I saw that I was still in my adult form, in fact, my whole body was glowing! I stood to my feet and

declared, "I've been born....again!"

Aftermath

As I made my way back to the audience, I was still glowing and the witches avoided me like the plague, and I was no longer afraid. I stayed high for two more days. The next morning I returned at 5 a.m. and found that most of the people had spent the night in sleeping bags. The witches from Rochdale were still circling the audience chanting as the sun came up, "We can do anything."

A Diggers kind of group fed the whole audience for free a little later. I'd like to say that the audience acted like civilized people, but they hoarded the food as "Gimme, Gimme, Gimme," played on someone's radio. January was scheduled to play first but they never did because someone stole all of their guitar strings and thus they were benched. There were a lot of people who knew what had been going on.

The Grateful Dead eventually played for a couple of hours and two good looking women hopped on the back of the flatbed truck – the stage – and one of them of Asian descent took off her shirt and danced topless for the whole act. And let me tell you, she had a perfect set.

I ended up with a young couple who shared their sake with me. As we sat there one of the male witches from Rochdale approached and tried to recruit the couple into their trip, telling them such things as, "Join us and become a god." And I could hear his thoughts telepathically, so I, in the same manner, told him to fuck off. And he did.

On Monday, Steve and I went to Yorkville to see if we could hustle some money selling Natal Charts. A lot of hip people were cruising the street, but no one was interested. Finally, I

noticed a tea room across the street with a sign in the window that said a card reader was available. I thought we could make some kind of deal to work on the premises, so we crossed the street and went inside.

Except for a couple at a table in the corner, no one was in the main room. I asked the couple where the owner was, and they indicated a side room. As I approached the entrance, there was a loud scream from inside, and as I looked inside I saw an old woman screaming at a table where she was reading cards for a middle-aged woman.

I started to say something, but she screamed even louder, stood to her feet and pointed to the exit. “Get out of here!” she yelled. The look of horror on her face was startling and her voice sounded as if she were performing an exorcism.

“I just thought –” I started, but was unable to finish because she stomped her foot and screamed, “I said, Get out!” and that was that. I looked at myself to make sure I wasn’t still glowing, but I got the hell out there. She must be a witch I thought, for like the witches at the concert, who had been afraid in my presence, the card reader was scared shitless, likely because they all sensed the Holy Spirit in me.

“What was that all about?” Steve asked as we recrossed the street.

“It appears that she’s one of them.” I had told Steve all about what happened to me.

The sidewalk on the other side was in front of an old white Victorian mansion being used as an insane asylum and waiting on the other side was someone I recognized from the concert, someone from Rochdale.

“Hey,” he said, “that was a really crazy night, wasn’t it?” I wasn’t sure if he had been one

of the witches, but we were rudely interrupted by a scream in front of the old mansion. A short middle aged woman with dissheveled hair, wearing a white hospital gown, had escaped and was running right to us, with two guys in white chasing her. She grabbed the bars of the steel spike fence that lined the sidewalk and said, looking into my eyes, “Help me! You’ve got to help me! I can tell you know what is going on. Please help me!”

And then she noticed the dude from Rochdale and went ballistic. “He’s one of them!” she shouted in stark terror, pointing her finger at him. “He’s one of them!” The two men then dragged her back to the building with her yelling at me, “Help me!” over and over. Wow, what a strange place Yorkville was. But it was a good first taste of the spiritual warfare a Believer has to go through.

That’s my confession. I was never the same after that. The Holy Spirit told me at that time – the last time I heard him audibly inside my head – that I hadn’t been in Hell, but had been in Limbo. I had never heard the word Limbo used in that context before. To me it just meant being between two states, unable to make up your mind, or the “Limbo Rock,” a song and dance by Chubby Checker, where you bent down and shimmied under the limbo bar – “How low can you go?” Also, he said, everything I needed to know about what had just happened to me was in the Bible. That was it. He never told me that the Bible was inerrant or that I had to believe every word as Gospel Truth; that idea came later when I joined the Jesus People Army in Vancouver.

Since then I receive inspiration like every other Divine Son or Daughter of God, through synchronous events, dreams, reading the Bible, prayer and meditation, and so on. For example, in the summer of 1972 I came to a realization that not being able to travel where I wanted to was

a real hindrance to ministry, and the only solution to curing that was to turn myself in to the Army and suffer the consequences in Faith that God would be with me. As a result I started to plan my surrender for the fall, before the presidential elections that November.

The Man in Black

However, that soon changed because of a prophetic dream I had one night. In the dream, for some unknown reason I was living in one of the round high rise apartments downtown on the west side of the Burrard Bridge and was having a party. Then, out of nowhere, a tall skinny, very-pale, white man, wearing a black suit – he reminded me of Lurch in the Addam’s Family – suddenly appeared on my balcony outside. It was strange because in my dream my apartment was at least ten stories high.

Everyone in the room froze, including me, as he walked through the sliding glass door and came to a halt directly in front of me. He said in a powerful voice, “Do not turn yourself in until after the elections!” I have no idea what happened after that because I woke up with the knowledge that he had been a messenger from God.

Of course, I obeyed the Man in Black and didn’t turn myself in till April 1973, one week after the Vietnamese released the prisoners of war. When I surrendered myself to the MP’s at Fort Lewis in Tacoma, I really believed that I would be sent to the stockade where the guards would beat the shit out of me. But the reception I actually got was unbelievable. The Sergeant at the desk put his hands up in the air and said, “Hell, Nichols, if I knew the war was going to end like this I would have joined you in Canada!”

Well, I haven’t had a dream like that since, but I think you get the idea. As for my view

about Xenon, I hold two of them. My daughter, Hannah, suggested that Xenon's motive in contacting me was to gain control over my soul by working on my pride, that I was special because Xenon had chosen me, and I had to agree that this was likely true. But I saw it more in the way of what I call the "Roy Neary Effect."

Roy Neary, if you recall, was the Indiana lineman that was contacted by aliens in Close Encounters of the Third Kind. For a while Roy appeared to be unique in the contact, but at the end we learned that he was just one out of many the aliens had contacted. Meaning that the aliens went for a herd effect in order to weed out the undesirables. But surely Xenon's motives could have covered both of these views.

I sincerely have come to the conclusion that Antinomian Universalism is the Truth of the Gospel and have devoted my life to teaching it to everyone, especially my generation. I oppose any definition of Antinomianism that states that the Believers have rejected the moral law. That's bullshit! The moral law is written in our hearts. The Holy Spirit more than replaced the Ten Commandments in my life.

Don't get me wrong! I try not to use my liberty to do wrong things, but I am human, saved by Grace. I strive to do good things and try to be led by the Holy Spirit. And there is no substitute for the life I have chosen to live. I Know God created Good and Evil, and I Love and have a healthy Fear of him. He Created all things Good and Evil, including Human Beings and Human Nature. I don't believe in the Fall of Man or Original Sin, but accept the Wisdom Tales of them as metaphors. And I am proud to be one of his Divine Sons.

But if we are made in his Image, both male and female, then God must be male and

female too, and not as an hermaphrodite. So, I Believe in YHWH and his Asherah (I AM and his Happiness), and that their Beloved Son, Jesus, Died for my Sins. I believe that God works with Human Nature to affect his Will on Earth. After all, God Created Evil so that Grace would Abound. If God can live with it, so can I. Until then, I'm looking forward to my new reincarnated life adventure.

Living in a Ghost Town

As I write this in the last days of the Covid-19 quarantine, I was inspired by the new song by the Rolling Stones released on YouTube recently. It is called "Living in a Ghost Town," and superbly describes the current condition of the World. It took a world crisis to get them back to their rock'n'roll supremacy, but even then, if this quarantine doesn't end soon, the world will go to hell. I don't want to see that because living in a ghost town is for the birds.

III HOW I READ THE HOLY BIBLE AND WHAT I BELIEVE

The Simple Believeth Every Word.
– Proverbs 14:15

First of all, I nearly always read the King James Version because that's where the Magic is. As a Divine Son of God this is my prerogative. The King James Version is the only one, in my opinion, with the Magic in it, for, after all, King James was a Freemason and a Bible scholar. He ordered the translators to highlight the Royal Ideology since he believed in the Divine Right of Kings, and convinced the Puritans to go along with it since they saw the same ideology as Bible proof of their Divine Sonship.

Plus, I have learned that there is Real Magic in God's Creation of Good and Evil, and the King James Version is full of witches, wizards, blessings, curses, necromancy, sympathetic magic, healings, astrology, seers, prophets, and such, which the reader is expected to accept as Gospel Truth. I know for a fact that the world of the mind is just as real as the world of atoms, which can be measured and weighed, whereas ideas and thoughts cannot: the difference between the rational and irrational, which cannot be rationally explained.

So I read the Bible in the same way as I read Game of Thrones, for the Bible has dragons, giants, miracles and supernatural beings, scattered throughout its pages. I suspend my disbelief when I read it, and I read it like a real novel, meaning that everything that takes place in the New Testament occurs in a period between 30 A.D. and 70 A.D, regardless of what the scholars say when any part was written and by whom it was written. That doesn't mean that I don't subscribe to many of the hypotheses put forth by the scholars, which I find to be most helpful in

understanding the mindset of the Ancient Near East and the First Century A.D. I find the following analysis by Harold Bloom to be correct:

But Yahweh, in the Book of J, is a literary character, just as Hamlet is. If the history of religion is the process of choosing forms of worship from poetic tales, in the West that history is even more extravagant: it is the worship, in greatly modified and revised forms, of an extraordinary wayward and uncanny literary character, J's Yahweh....

J tells stories, portrays theomorphic men and women, links myth to history, and implicitly utters the greatest moral prophecies to post-Solomonic Judah and Israel....

Literary originality achieved one of its crucial breakthroughs in what was to become Western tradition when it occurred to J to so fuse what we call myth and history....

Like the authors of 1 Samuel, the Court Historian begins with a grand asset, the figure of David, who far more than Moses, is the hero of the Hebrew Bible, if so starring a role or position can be granted. As with Moses, David's crucial relation is with Yahweh, but Yahweh is in love with David and not with Moses. That the greatest of the kings should be preferred to the greatest of the prophets tells us much that is crucial about J's Yahweh, and about J....

David is therefore a literary character, as is J's Yahweh, and like Yahweh, David has become a religious force, if only because of Yahweh's peculiar favor.

– Harold Bloom, The Book of J (NY: Grove Weidenfield, 1990, pp. 12, 13, 32-33, 41-42.)

Another helpful way of approaching the Bible is called “Magico-Mythical,” that is, adopting the world view of the original readers. Peet Van Dyk writes authoritatively on this subject, and states that a “magico-mythical” reading is used to emphasize “the fact that magic and myth are closely linked within the pre-scientific worldview of the Old Testament.”

(“Creation, temple and magic. A magico-mythical reading of Genesis 1.” [OTE 20/2 (2009), pp. 422-436, fn. 3). He states this idea as the following:

Rather than trying to read the mind of the original author one should transpose oneself (Gadamer 1989:292), “into the perspective within which he [the author] has formed his views” (author’s emphasis).

The term “magico-mythical” horizon refers to a framework or worldview, closely linked to mythical texts. Myths presuppose magical links that exist between heaven and earth and between “mythically linked” phenomena on earth (Van Dyk 2005:868). What distinguishes myths from other traditional texts (e.g. folk sagas and legends) is the fact that they often deal with the origin of magico-mythical links and regard them as embedded with the “order” of creation.

However, if the link between Yahweh and the tabernacle was understood in terms of sympathetic magic (“Law of Contagion”), a real historical connection between Yahweh and the tabernacle would be considered as absolutely essential by the believer. If the contact between Yahweh and tabernacle did not happen, contagion could not have occurred and a magical link would not have been established. The logic of magic therefore works similar to that of science: a real physical effect cannot occur if the cause was imaginary.

The importance attributed to the similarities between heavenly temple and earthly temple can be explained in terms of the “Law of Similarity”. In terms of the logic of magical thinking, only a real similarity between two objects could produce a magical link. This would explain why Moses was shown in Exodus 25:9 and 26:30 a model of the heavenly temple so that he could build the tabernacle to mimic it.

The amount of attention given to the exact measurements and structure of the tabernacle and temple (I Kings 6) also suggests that they were of extraordinary importance. This can again be explained in terms of magic. By meticulously ensuring that the earthly tabernacle or temple looked like the heavenly example, magical links were established between the earthly temple and the heavens or cosmos through a process of sympathetic magic.

The link between creation and temple building is further illustrated by the fact that the Jerusalem temple showed many similarities with the cosmos, which was again linked to the heavenly temple (Albright 1946:144-154). For example, the careful East-West orientation aligned the temple with the earth, the two columns (Boaz and Jakin) in front of the temple were probably seen as the equivalent of the two cosmic pillars on the eastern horizon: “the molten sea” or metal basin outside the temple was seen as analogous to the deep or primeval sea.

If it is further accepted that the heavenly bodies (sun and moon) were not perceived as deities (personal powers) in Genesis 1 (Von Rad 1966:53; Westermann 1976), then the usage of the word “rule” to describe the function of the sun and moon (Genesis 1:16), is rather a strong term. Westermann (1976:176) explains it as follows? “[D]ies ist nicht mehr Herrschaft in vollem Sinn, sondern eine begrenzte bloße Funktion.” But can it be interpreted as describing a mere physical function? Or is this bias determined by our modern scientific worldview? The word “rule” would make much more sense if the heavenly bodies were perceived within a magical framework as exerting impersonal powers (i.e. magical forces) over day and night and the seasons. This is entirely plausible when one considers the fact that these magical forces were regarded as just as real within the ancient “science” than physical forces in modern physical science of cause and effect.

In Genesis 1:26 it is stated by the P-source that humans were created in the “image” of God. Although the interpretation of this verse has caused much controversy amongst Old Testament exegetes (Westermann 1976:202-214) the verse makes sense if interpreted from a magico-mythical perspective. The physical similarity, which is the most literal meaning of the word (Von Rad 1966:56), between humans and God can be explained in terms of sympathetic magic (i.e. the law of similarity). The fact that humans are physically similar to God establishes a magical link between God and humans, which would explain why humans have special access to God and could be regarded as God’s representatives on earth (Von Rad 1966:58).

This magical interpretation of the Imago Dei has the further advantage of closely linking up with the fact that humans are described earlier in the verse as the representatives of God. According to the logic of magic the argument of Genesis 1:26 therefore runs as follows: Humans are magically linked to God, because they are similar looking (Law of Similarity). Due to this special link, humans can be described as God’s representatives on earth and He can act through them in the same way than through any other magical link. This magical interpretation of the Imago Dei also fits the description in Genesis 1:28 that humans were to rule over the animals as God’s representatives. (Id, pp. 422-423, 424, 428-429-430, 431-432, 433-434.)

I hope that was helpful. Like I said, I read the Holy Bible like I read The Game of Thrones. After all, the science of the Bible is Astrology and Sympathetic Magic.

I believe the Truth can be found by recognizing the many pieces of the Puzzle and

assembling them in an order so that a coherent Picture is formed. This means a reading process that eliminates the Lies, Errors, and Contradictions that are there to foil your progress. Knowing the Truth is not an easy affair.

In the story that I imagine, all of the names and places in the Letters of Paul are synchronous with books and letters of other authors of the New Testament, like the Letter from James and the Book of Revelation. In fact, you can spot a dialog between Paul and John over the churches in Asia, and with Peter over Antioch, and with James over the core of the Gospel Message.

I don't believe in the Fall of Man or Original Sin, which were invented to explain such things as why people die and get sick. I believe that YHWH and his Asherah created all things both Good and Evil, including Humans with the present Human Nature they possess. After all, God uses Human Nature to fulfill his Will. Normal humans always have some kind of guilt or regret and it is good to know that God's Grace is the remedy for it.

I believe the Garden of Eden and Temptation of Eve narratives were created by the J author as a Wisdom Fables for the Jerusalem Aristocracy, which is the literary genre whenever the story includes talking animals.

As for the Great Flood and Noah's Ark, I believe there was some kind of massive deluge in the Ancient Near East, confirmed by similar myths from Sumer and Babylon. I believe farmer's like Noah could have built boats big enough to accommodate most of their farm animals and family, but as for the Noah story told in the Bible, it is purely impossible to build a boat big enough for every animal existing on earth, and can be dismissed as such. Besides, we are told in

later stories that the sons of Cain, the Kenites, and the Nephilim or Rephaim, like the sons of Anak of Hebron and Goliath of Gath, survived the Flood, even though the story of Noah contradicts that. Another surprise is that God can change his mind:

“And YHWH saw that the Wickedness of Humans was Great in the Earth, and that every Imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only Evil continually. And it Repenteth YHWH that he had Made Humans on the Earth, and it grieved him at his heart....And YHWH said in his heart, I Will not again Curse the Ground any more for Humanity’s sake; for the Imagination of Humanity’s heart is Evil from his youth.” (Genesis 6:6.)

I also believe in Deep Time and find Creation Science to be absurd. You can’t tell me that Coral Reefs, Limestone, and Marble were all created in six thousand years and as the result of the Great Flood. Limestone is formed under water in coral reefs over millions of years and makes up a good part of the outer crust of the Earth. It is further hardened in the tectonic plate process into marble. There were not enough shell exo-skeletons in the sea over a six thousand years timetable to produce even the first stage of coral, let alone all the limestone in the Earth’s crust. Same goes for the chalk cliffs of Dover. No, you need Deep Time – billions of years – for that. After all, Nature is not a Trick of God to Deceive us, for God is Known by the Things he Created.

I also have a soft spot for Ancient Alien theories, but you should already know that by now. That doesn’t mean that I don’t believe God is the Grand Architect of the Universe and that he designed the natural laws that work themselves out in space and time.

I also believe the Greatest Lie in modern Evangelical and Fundamentalist churches is the Doctrine of Inerrancy, a doctrine of Devils and Fools. I should know. I was under its spell for over the first ten years of my Divine Sonship. Finally, because of my love of Truth, it was

Revealed to me that it was not true, and that I had spent all that time believing it in vain. In fact, a true appraisal reveals that the Bible is riddled with Lies, Errors, and Contradictions, and that is Good, because analyzing these gives one True Knowledge of the Holy Scriptures, which are not limited to the Protestant Bible.

I also believe that the New Testament is an accurate record of the great Cult Wars that were waged in the beginning years of Christianity, and that there was a duel to the death between Paul the Apostle, and James the Just, and that this is clearly displayed for any reader with an open mind. This also explains why Luke (I am calling the author of the Gospel of Luke and the Book of Acts “Luke,” for the sake of convenience even though I do not believe that Luke the Physician is the author) omits any mention of Titus, which is almost unforgiveable since Titus was Paul’s test case at the Jerusalem Summit over circumcision.

Titus was also instrumental in Paul’s ministry to Crete, of which Luke also omits. Titus was Paul’s main man in Corinth for ensuring the Collection for the Poor in Jerusalem, and would have been Luke’s main rival, next to Timothy, for the leadership over the Macedonian churches. I and II Timothy and Titus, the so-called pastorals, whom most scholars do not believe were written by Paul, I accept as genuine because they further the story that I believe the entire New Testament teaches.

As we shall see when we discuss the Documentary Hypothesis, I believe a similar process of editing and redacting took place in the documents of the New Testament, so identifying the “real” from the “false” letters of Paul is a fool’s game because it ignores the obvious. There is more than one writer, often identified in the greeting sections, of even the “authentic” letters of

Paul, which is plain to see. For example, in the Letter to the Romans, Paul often contradicts himself in the middle of important topics, sometimes in the same paragraph. I don't believe that Paul was subject to such obvious tinkering in his arguments. These contradictions often occur in the so-called Sin Lists, the roles of women, and such things as allowing the weakest member of a congregation to dictate its morals. That creates a losing hand every time.

The Documentary Hypothesis

It is hard to argue with the basics of this hypothesis because there is a hell of a lot of evidence to support its main concepts. It posits several editors and redactors of the Old Testament, who are identified by the language and topics interweaved throughout the Scriptures. For example there is one writer-editor who almost exclusively uses the Name "YHWH" for God and as a result he is referred to as the Yahwist, or "J" (YHWH is spelled JHWH in German, since the German scholars pioneered this hypothesis).

This also holds true for the hypothetical Q source in the Synoptic Gospels. Q is from the German "quelle," meaning source, for the Germans were also first to develop this theory, which goes like this:

"The idea that there must have been a text like Q was first thought of over 150 years ago, but its recognition as a document with its own distinctive history had to wait for the present generation of scholars. One reason it took so long is that New Testament scholars have been haunted by the desire to reconstruct the "life" of Jesus. They were therefore preoccupied with the eventful aspects of the gospels, worried about their miraculous features, not about the teachings which they took for granted. Another reason is that, since Q referred to a written source that was used in slightly different ways by two independent authors (Matthew and Luke), reconstructing a single, unified text for study and discussion was at first thought to be impossible. And a third reason is that many New Testament scholars resisted the idea of Q because they thought there was no other example of the genre in early Christian literature and thus could not imagine why early

Christians would have written such a text.

However, as the comparative study of the gospels unfolded, the nature of Jesus' teaching eventually became a critical question. Ways to reconstruct the text of Q were developed." (The Lost Gospel: the Book of Q, by Burton L. Mack [NY: HarperSanFrancisco, 1993, p. 16.]

Sorry about that. Now let's get back to the Documentary Hypothesis. Another editor is called the Elohist ("E"), since he usually only uses the Name "Elohim" for God, which is plural, and contains both male and female tenses. This editor (or perhaps it was the P author) added Genesis, Chapter One, to the previous beginning which started at Chapter Two, Verse 4. Chapter One deals with the creation of the Kosmos in six days ending with the cocreation of male and female humans, who are created equally and simultaneously, whereas the creation story in Chapter 2 has God creating Adam first and Eve from one of his ribs after he rejects the animal kingdom for being his helpmate. The contradictions between these two creation accounts are ignored under the Doctrine of Inerrancy, with a barrel full of lame excuses as to why they do not really contradict, which is just a game of Liar's Dice.

There is also the Court Historian, who wrote most of the narratives about the rise of David and his Magic Kingdom, to at least the time of Solomon. There is also "P," which represents the priestly additions, like the Book of Leviticus. Then there is a redactor in the time of Isaiah, who was probably Isaiah, and then another one in the time of Jeremiah, called the Deuteronomist, and lastly the final Redactor, after the Exile in Babylon, who was likely Ezra.

The Deuteronomist got his name from II Kings 22:8, where the High Priest, Hilkiyah, the father of Jeremiah, finds and likely wrote the Book of the Law that he allegedly found in the Temple while making repairs. Most scholars believe this was the original version of

Deuteronomy since what is called the Deuteronomist History, an edit from Joshua to II Kings, and was likely done by Jeremiah, the son of Hilkiyah. It is easy to see Jeremiah in the role of the Deuteronomist, for the curses and blessings from Deuteronomy are the template from which Jeremiah judges the reigns of the Kings of Judah and Israel.

As for Ezra and his Chronicles, I take them with a grain of salt. I mean the Deuteronomist was judgmental enough and I believe thorough, so when Chronicles presents a story totally different version than the ones in Kings, I dismiss it as priestly invention. I mean Kings tells us that Solomon provided most of the stones and metal used in the House of YHWH, but Ezra attributes it to David, including the order of the priests for singing and playing musical instruments in the Temple Worship. Yes, pure fiction.

You can google “Documentary Hypothesis” and learn for yourself its many strengths and weaknesses. Don’t just take my word for it.

Harold Bloom wrote a very intriguing book called The Book of J, where he posits a female author, possibly Bathsheba, in the time of Solomon from the aristocracy. He convinced me.

The Kenite-Midianite Hypothesis

This one is quite convincing to me for it explains the Exodus and Israel’s Confederacy with Midian through Jethro, the High Priest of Midian, who was not a Midianite, but a Kennite, a descendant of Cain.

It is my belief that Jethro saw the plight of Moses and Israel as an opportunity to make a League between Midian and Israel to recapture property lost to the Amalekites. As soon as

Moses draws near the Mountain of God in Petra, the Amalekites attack, and as the result of the efforts of Joshua the Israelite and Hur the Midianite King, they keep the arms of Moses level in order that his magic prevails over the Amalekites.

There is also great strife between Aaron and his sons and Moses. This is made apparent in the bizarre deaths of Aaron (Numbers 20:23-20) and Moses (Deuteronomy 34:1-8). It appears that Moses murders Aaron and in revenge, Phinehas, grandson of Aaron, murders the Prince of Simeon (Zimri, the son of Salu) and the Princess of Midian (Cozbi, daughter of Zur, one of the Kings of Midian: hence a royal marriage, made Holy by the Hieros Gamos inside the Tabernacle), and then he and Joshua get rid of Moses and go to war against the Midianites. (Numbers 25:1-15.)

So, with some modification, I believe that Moses led an Exodus from Egypt to Petra. I imagine some kind of tidal phenomena the children of Israelite characterized as the crossing of the Sea of Reeds. The Israelites spent most of their 40 years exile near Petra, not in the Sinai Peninsula.

Ironically, the Amalekites and Midianites form a League against Israel (Judges 6:33) following the Conquest under Joshua, showing how fluid the Ancient Near East Confederacies could be.

The Jebusite Hypothesis

I really like this one because it explains who David's mother was and why Jerusalem was so important to the establishment of his small empire. Frank Cross gave this hypothesis its name, although it came in a paper arguing against it. It states that the Jebusite aristocracy was mainly

left intact by David after his cousin, Joab, captured the city through the Karstic caves and water shafts and took the city in a largely bloodless coup. David took over the Priest-Kingship after the Order of Melchizedek, allowing the prior king to keep his threshingfloor on Mount Moriah.

Thus, the Canaanites in David's Mighty Men were largely from this aristocracy: e.g., Arauna, the ex-king; Ahithophel of Giloh, David's counselor; Eliam, the son of Ahithophel, and father of Bathsheba; her husband, Uriah the Hittite. Thus Bathsheba was Ahithophel's granddaughter. Then there is Nathan the Prophet, who silently replaces Gad the Seer, and Zadok, a second priest after Abiathar. Cross argued against Zadok being a Caananite, believing him to be a Mushite priest after Moses' progeny, whereas Abiathar was after Aaron's.

However, H.H. Rowley ("Zadok and Nehushtan," *Journal of Biblical Literature*, vol. 58, no. 2 [June 1939]) notes:

"I believe that instead of these proposals we should recognize in Zadok the pre-Davidic priest of the Jebusite shrine [the Millo] in Jerusalem....

"And if David did not destroy the shrine, he probably did not dispose its priest....

"I therefore find in Ps 110:4 [Order of Melchizedek], whatever the age from which it comes, confirmation of the view that the pre-Israelite priesthood of Jerusalem was validated for Israel, and hence find in Gen 14 [Abram and Melchizedek] the story in which that validation is enshrined...

"On the other hand, the desire to conciliate his Jebusite subjects, who must still have formed the bulk of the citizens of his new capital, would disincline him to remove Zadok from his post." (Pp. 123-126.)

As for the Brazen Serpent that Moses allegedly made in the Wilderness when they were attacked by the Seraphim (Numbers 22:1-9), which was eventually destroyed by King Hezekiah (II Kings 18:4), Rowley has this to say on the subject:

"Much more probable is the view that the Brazen Serpent was of Canaanite origin, and that it represented a Canaanite god older than the Israelite

occupation of Jerusalem. That serpent worship was ancient and widespread in Palestine is attested by ample evidence, and it is not seldom pointed out that there is some evidence of it having been practiced in Jerusalem. We read of a Serpent Stone beside the spring of En-rogel (I Kings 1:9), where Adonijah was holding his feast at the time of Solomon's accession, while in Neh. 2:17 we read of a Dragon's Well. With this serpent worship, antedating the Hebrew settlement in Palestine, Nehushtan would probably be connected, and in this case it was probably already in Jerusalem, worshipped by the Jebusites, when David captured the city." (P. 137.)

Moreover, concerning the Order of Melchizedek Rowley proposes (p. 141) that Nehushtan was part of a Melchizekian shrine, "...so that we are justified in regarding Zadok as the Jebusite priest of Jerusalem before the capture of the city of David and Nehushtan as the divine symbol in the sanctuary he guarded." In another article, "Was Zadok a Jebusite?" by Dr. Claude Mariottini, posted on his website, he opines:

"Another issue, one that has a direct relation to the question,...is the reason David appointed two priests and how Zadok attained a position of influence in the reign of David.

When David subjugated the Canaanite population that had not been conquered in the days of Joshua and during the period of the Judges, he put them to forced labor (2 Samuel 20:24). Later on, the writer of Kings declared that the remnant of the Canaanite population was still under forced labor in the days of Solomon.

All the people who were left of the Amorites, the Hittites, the Perizzites, the Hivites, and the Jebusites, who were not of the people of Israel – their descendants who were left after them in the land, whom the people of Israel were unable to destroy utterly – these Solomon made a forced levy of slaves, and so they are to this day (I Kings 9:20-21).

The remnant of the Canaanite population did not become Israelites, worshipping the God of Israel. They kept their religion and maintained the worship of their God. When David conquered Jerusalem from the Jebusites, the population of the city was not eliminated. To the contrary, the Jebusite population constituted the majority of those living in the new capital, the city of David.

According to the book of Genesis, Melchizedek king of Jerusalem, was also a priest of El Elyon, 'God Most High' (Genesis 14:18). The meaning of the name Melchizedek is 'My King is [the god] Zedek.' In the book of Hebrews, the name Melchizedek is interpreted to mean 'King of Righteousness' (Hebrews 7:2).

Another king of Jerusalem is called Adonizedek (Joshua 10:1). The meaning of the name Adonizedek is ‘My Lord is [the god] Zedek.’ Thus, the names Zedek and Zadok are associated with the Canaanite god Zedek.

When David conquered Jerusalem and made it the capital of the United Monarchy, he named the city after himself, ‘the city of David’ (2 Samuel 5:7, 9). He became the king of Jerusalem and also assumed the duties of the priest of the cult there. This is the meaning of the expression in Psalm 110:4: ‘You are a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek.’

David and his descendants offered sacrifice in Jerusalem because they were priests. They were priests not because they were Levites, but because they were priests after the tradition established by Melchizedek, king of Jerusalem.

Thus, David appointed Abiathar to serve as the priest for the Israelite population and Zadok to be priest for the Canaanite population who lived in Jerusalem. Zadok also served in the Tabernacle that was at Gibeon (I Chronicles 16:39). The Gibeonites were the Canaanites who deceived Israel in the days of Joshua (Joshua 10:1).

After Abiathar was banished to Anathoth, Zadok became the sole priest for the nation. Eventually, Zadok is classified as a Levite since the Levites were people consecrated to religious duty. Samuel was an Ephraimite and also a Levite.

Several scholars have rejected the view that Zadok was a Jebusite on the grounds that David would not appoint a pagan priest to the service of Yahweh. However, it is possible that eventually Zadok became a Yahwist.

The fact is that, in early Israel, many people identified Yahweh with Baal. Saul’s son was named Eshbaal, ‘Man of Baal’ (I Chronicles 8:33) and one of David’s sons born in Jerusalem was called Beeliada, ‘Baal Knows’ (I Chronicles 14:7). In addition, the name of one of the soldiers who served in David’s army was Bealiah, ‘Baal is Yahweh.’

These are some of the reasons that point to the fact that Zadok was a Jebusite who later became a follower of Yahweh.” (*Id.*, pp 1-2.)

Thus, according to the hypothesis, Zadok took care of the Millo, the old shrine to El Elyon. Most scholars associate the Millo to the stepped rock feature in the City of David, but that it was a tower-fortress shrine of El Elyon is made clear by the following verses dealing with the shrine of El Berith (God of the Covenant) at Shechem:

“And they gave him threescore and ten pieces of silver out of the House of Baal-Berith, wherewith Abimelech hired vain and light persons, which followed him.”...

“And all the men of Shechem gathered together, and all the House of Millo, and went, and made Abimelech king, by the Plain of the Pillar that was in Shechem.”

“But if not, let fire come out from Abimelech, and devour the men of Shechem, and the House of Millo; and let fire come out from the men of Shechem, and from the House of Millo, and devour Abimelech.”

“And when all the men of the Tower of Shechem heard that, they entered into a Hold of the House of the God Berith. And it was told Abimelech, that all the men of the Tower of Shechem were gathered together.”

“And all the people likewise cut down every man his bough, and followed Abimelech, and put them to the Hold, and set the Hold on fire upon them; so that all the men of the Tower of Shechem died also, about a thousand men and women.” (Judges 9:4, 6, 20, 46-47, 49.)

The shrine is described as a House/Temple, a Tower, and a Hold, to the God Berith. The same is true for the Millo in the City of David, as demonstrated by the following verses:

“Nevertheless David took the Strong Hold of Zion; the same is the City of David.”

“...So David dwelt in the Fort, and called it the City of David. And David built round about from Millo and inward.” (II Samuel 5:7, 9.)

“And David and all Israel went to Jerusalem, which is Jebus; where the Jebusites were, the inhabitants of the land. And the inhabitants of Jebus said to David, Thou shalt not come hither. Nevertheless David took the Castle of Zion, which is the City of David.”

“...And David dwelt in the Castle, therefore they called it the City of David. And he built the City round about, even from Millo round about: and Joab repaired the rest of the City.” (I Chronicles 11:5, 7-8.)

“And this is the reason of the levy which King Solomon raised; for to build the House of YHWH, and his own house, and Millo, and the Wall of Jerusalem, and Hazor, and Megiddo, and Gezer....But Pharoah’s daughter came up out of the City of David unto her house which Solomon had built for her; then did he build Millo.”

“...And this was the cause that he lifted up his hand against the King: Solomon built Millo, and repaired the breaches of the City of David his father.” (I Kings 9:15, 24; 11:27.)

“And his servants arose, and made a conspiracy, and slew Joash in the House of Millo, which goeth down to Silla.” (II Kings 12:20; cf. Isaiah 8:6.)

“And he [Hezekiah] strengthened himself, and built up all the Wall that was broken, and raised it up to the Towers, and another Wall without, and repaired Millo in the City of David, and made darts and shields in abundance.” (II Chronicles 32:5.)

This is the shrine that David took the head of Goliath to display, likely because his mother, and the mother of his sisters, Zeruriah and Abigail, was the High Priestess of Asherah, Consort to El Elyon. It is my belief that Asherah was commonly worshipped as YHWH’s consort, Israel only slowly becoming “YHWH Only” beginning in the reign of Hezekiah. To quote from Susan Ackerman’s brilliant Under Every Green Tree (Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1992, p. 66):

“The implication of this thesis is that in some circles of Yahwism Yahweh and Asherah were paired, Asherah was the consort of Yahweh. Certainly this was not the case among Yahwists such as the Deuteronomists, who insisted that Israel worship Yahweh alone. Similarly the prophetic class showed little sympathy for the worship of other gods. But the evidence from Kuntillet ‘Arjud and Khirbet el-Qom would suggest that the definition of what constituted Yahwistic worship among the populace in ancient Israel was somewhat broader than prophetic and Deuteronomistic writings would lead us to believe....

“This is the key to Ezekiel 8:3, 5. Ezekiel was a priest and prophet who surely was profoundly influenced by the religious reform sponsored by the Deuteronomist protege, Josiah. As a priest/prophet and a Deuteronomistic sympathizer, he had no place within his definition of Yahwism for the worship of Asherah. To him it was apostasy and abomination, and he condemned it as such. But the worship of Asherah was common in Israel and Judah, and it was for many people a legitimate part of Yahwistic religion.”

For another take, here is Benjamin R. Siegel’s Asherah Alienated: A Gender-Discursive Analysis of the Goddess and her Cults in Ancient Israel (A Thesis from Claremont School of Theology):

“Although Judaism is commonly understood as the first great monotheistic and aniconic religious expression, the existence of a consort to El suggests that this identification belongs to a later stage of evolution and revolution in the

history of Israelite religion....

“Deuteronomy 12:29-31 forbids the worship of all ‘other gods’ while Deuteronomy 32:17 claims that the foreign deities are in fact ‘no-gods.’ This gloss exhibits a late version of the Israelite theology, moving beyond monolatry into true monotheism and with it, the intolerance of all other means of religious expression in favor of exclusive Yahwism....

“Worship of the goddess Asherah and her cultic symbol [the Tree of Life] may have been acceptable religious tradition and practice up to the period of the United Monarchy and the succeeding religious reforms of Kings Hezekiah and Josiah....

“If Solomon’s Temple functioned as a wedding chapel for the hierogamy between Yahweh and Asherah, the Deuteronomist’s demanded nothing short of a divorce....

“Qedeshim were also allowed by the law to marry, have children, and bequeath their status to their heirs....

“Deut. 23:18 forbids the daughters of Israel from becoming a qedeshah, as well as any sons from becoming a qedesh. JPS translates qedeshah as ‘harlot’ and qedesh as a ‘sodomite,’ while NIB offers ‘shrine prostitute’ for both gender-specific terms....

“Asa removed these qedeshim in I Ki. 15:12. His next step was to ‘remove’ – from the verb...(turn aside), a biblical euphemism for apostasy or improper worship – his mother, Maacah [Absalom’s daughter] from the position of gebira because she made a statue of Asherah. Susan Ackerman has made a convincing argument [“The Queen Mother and the Cult in Ancient Israel,” in JBL 112:3, 1993, 400] that ‘we should see the cultic function undertaken by the Judean queen mothers on behalf of the goddess Asherah as standing in close relationship to the political responsibilities assigned to the gebirot within their sons’ courts.’ If the qedeshim/zonot form covenants and establish ceremonial kinship bonds through sacrifice, there is a possibility that the gebira served as kingmaker, legitimating the royal line of succession.” (Id., pp. 5, 6-7, 16, 17, 23-24, 25-27.)

The worship of Asherah naturally involved cult prostitutes, as did most of the fertility religions in the Ancient Near East. For example, J. L. Mackenzie states in his Dictionary of the Bible (NY: MacMillan, 1965), page 700:

“A peculiar feature of the Mesopotamian and Canaanite culture was ritual prostitution. To the temples of the goddesses of fertility (Inanna, Ishtar, Astarte) were attached bordellos served by consecrated women who represented the goddess, the female principle of fertility. Intercourse with these women was communion with the divine as the principles of fertility.”

Not to mention the Law of Sympathetic Magic, where that act below influences those on high. In Babylon during the New Years Festival, both the King and the High Priestess of Ishtar would have a procession leading to the Ziggurat, then ascending the stairs to the chamber on the top where a bed was ready for them. The King and High Priestess would then have intercourse after which the High Priestess would give the Fortune for the nation for the whole year. If the King couldn't get it up, that meant a bad harvest or defeat in war. Thus, the King was no longer functioning as King and needed to be replaced. We see this very thing at work in the beginning of Solomon's reign, when David could no longer get it up – even with Abishag, the sixteen year old virgin.

More on the Queen Mother or Great Lady, gebirah, is found in “Rulers of Judah and Their Queen Mothers (Gebirah),” by Michal Hunt (Agape Bible Study, 1991):

“The Gebirah, the Queen Mother of the Kingdom of Judah, was an official position held by the mother of Davidic kings. She was the most important and influential woman in the royal court and the king's chief counselor. The Hebrew word, gebirah is found 15 times in the Old Testament and can be translated as “Queen Mother,” or “Great Lady” (Genesis 16:4, 8, 9, 1 Kings 11:19 (used by the Egyptian Queen Mother); 15:13; 2 Kings 5:3; 10:13; 2 Chronicles 15:16; Psalm 123:2; Proverbs 30:23; Isaiah 24:2; 47:5, 7; Jeremiah 13:18; 29:21)....Scripture indicates that the Gebirah assumed a throne alongside her son (see 1 Kings 2:19) and exercised her role as counselor (2 Chronicles 22:3) and intercessor to the king (1 Kings 2:13-21). In times of conquest, both the king and his mother represented royal power (2 Kings 24:12). The Gebirah was clearly the most important woman in the Kingdom of Judah; a king had many wives, but only one mother.”

Christopher A. Rolston has best summarized, in my opinion, the progression of Israel from polytheism to strict monotheism, in his article, “The Rise of Monotheism in Ancient Israel: Biblical and Epigraphic Evidence” (SCP 6 (Spring 2003, pp. 95-115):

“For example, the goddess ‘Asherah was a dominant goddess in the Levantine religion for centuries, and it is quite conceivable that this component of Levantine religion was considered to be acceptable in early Israelite religion (as a consort, or cultically available presence). Moreover, the biblical text may contain subtle indications that veneration or worship of ‘Asherah was actually acceptable in an early period. For example, note that Jehu’s zealous purge included Baal worshipers but not those worshipping ‘Asherah (2 Kgs. 9, 10)....

Nevertheless, the essential typology of the chronological development of monotheism in ancient Israel is established with substantial certainty: (1) In the earliest stage of Israelite religion, Yahweh is considered the national deity of Israel, but not the head of the pantheon. (2) Subsequently, Yahweh becomes the head of the Israelite pantheon, but without a denial of the existence of other deities. (3) Ultimately, Israelite religion affirms the veracity of monotheism, with Yahweh as the sole deity, and with explicit denials of the existence of other deities. This reconstruction makes the best sense of all of the material available.” (Id., p. 109, 114.)

Not to say that Frank Moore Cross is wrong about everything. His brilliant book, Canaanite Myth and Hebrew Epic (Cambridge: Harvard U. Press, 1973), shows clearly how the ideas behind the Canaanite Myths, especially the Baal Cycle, are instrumental in understanding the nature of the Kingship of David. David is Baal Made Flesh and is worshipped alongside of YHWH, at YHWH’s Right Hand (I Chronicles 29:20-25). The House of YHWH and the House of David-Solomon are similarly aligned, the House of David-Solomon being on the Right Side of the House of YHWH, as they both face the East. I highly recommend it to any serious reader of the Bible.

Based on the evidence, Asherah worship was not forbidden until the reign of Josiah. It is there in the Scriptures, but you have to look for it. For example, R. Patai states:

[T]he worship of Asherah as the consort of Yahweh (‘his Asherah’), was an integral element of religious life in ancient Israel prior to the reforms introduced by King Josiah in 621 B.C.E.” (The Hebrew Goddess (Wayne State U. Press, Detroit, 1990, p. 53.)

More on the reforms of Josiah:

“What Josiah purged from his kingdom was not a forbidden Canaanite cult, it was the religion of the patriarchs as described in Genesis. Abraham, Isaac and Jacob had worshipped where the LORD appeared to them. Abraham saw the LORD by the oak of Moreh and set up an altar there (Genesis 12:10-18.) There are many examples. The religion of the patriarchs was the religion practiced in Judah until the time of Josiah. Abraham had met Melchizedek the priest-king of Jerusalem who offered him bread and wine (Genesis 14:17-20), and we know that the Davidic kings in Jerusalem had been Melchizedek priests (Psalm 110:4). In other words, the Melchizedek priest-kings serving in Jerusalem were the kings whom later historians condemned for failing to observe the law of Moses. This, then, was the contrast: the older ways of Melchizedek and Abraham which were those of Solomon’s Temple, purged by Josiah; and the newer ways of Moses and his brother Aaron the high priest, which were the ways of the Second Temple.” (“Restoring Solomon’s Temple,” by Margaret Barker, posted on her website, margaretbarker.com/Papers, p. 2-3.)

David’s Mother

Now we will tackle the puzzle pieces that strongly suggest that David’s mother was not the wife of Jesse, but the High Priestess of Asherah, consort of El Elyon. Note during the reign of David no Queen Mother is mentioned, leading me to assume his mother was High Priestess of Asherah and because of that the True Queen Mother of David was an embarrassment to the writers of Kings and Chronicles. The first key to the puzzle is to realize that David had two sisters who were not the daughters of Jesse and his wife. Thus I will start with the verse that establishes the fact of the two sisters, then I will list every verse that speaks of these sisters.

And Jesse begat his firstborn Eliab, and Abinadab the second, and Shimma the third, Nethaneel the fourth, Raddai the fifth, Ozem the sixth, **David the seventh: whose sisters were Zeruah, and Abigail.** And the sons of Zeruah: Abishai, and Joab, and Asahel, three. And Abigail bare Amasa: and the father of Amasa was Jether the Ishmeelite.

– I Chronicles 2:15-17 [The list in I Samuel 16:10 names seven brothers of David, not just the six listed in Chronicles. Also, II Samuel 17:25 lists the father of Amasa as Ithra the Israelite, instead of Jether the Ishmeelite. But as we will see, that verse

also lists the father of Abigail as Nahash, King of Ammon. We never learn who the father of Zeruiah was, but he also could have been Nahash, or otherwise some unknown man of royal birth who the writers never name. Alright, now let's list the verses.]

Zeruiah

Then answered David and said to Abimelech the Hittite, and to Abishai the son of Zeruiah, brother to Joab, saying, Who will go down with me to Saul to the camp? And Abishai said, I will go down with thee.

– I Samuel 26:6

And Joab the son of Zeruiah, and the servants of David, went out, and met together by the Pool of Gibeon: and they sat down, the one on the one side of the Pool, and the other on the other side of the Pool....

And there were three sons of Zeruiah's there, Joab, and Abishai, and Asahel: and Asahel was as light of foot as a wild roe....

And they took Asahel, and buried him in the sepulchre of his father, which was in Bethlehem.

– II Samuel 2:13, 18, 33a [If Asahel's father's sepulchre was in Bethlehem, then perhaps he was the same father for Joab and Abishai as well. However, to call a man by his mother's name was regarded as an insult because it casts doubt on the identity of your father and thus of your birth.]

And I am this day weak, though Anointed King; and these men the sons of Zeruiah be too hard for me: YHWH shall reward the Doer of Evil according to his Wickedness.

– II Samuel 3:39

And Joab the son of Zeruiah was over the Host.

– II Samuel 8:16a

Now Joab the son of Zeruiah perceived that the King's heart was toward Absalom.

– II Samuel 14:1

Then said Abishai the son of Zeruiah unto the King, Why should this dead dog curse my Lord the King? let me go over, I pray thee, and take off his head.

And the King said, What have I to do with you, ye sons of Zeruiah?

– II Samuel 16:9-10a

And Absalom made Amasa Captain of the Host instead of Joab:
which Amasa was a man's son, whose name was Ithra an Israelite,
that went in to Abigail the daughter of Nahash, sister to Zeruiah,
Joab's mother.

– II Samuel 17:25

And David set forth a third part of the people under the hand of Joab,
and a third part under Abishai the son of Zeruiah, Joab's brother...

– II Samuel 18:2a

But Abishai the son of Zeruiah answered and said, Shall not Shimei
be put to death for this, because he cursed YHWH's Anointed?

And David said, What have I to do with you, you sons of Zeruiah?
that ye should this day be adversaries unto me?

– II Samuel 19:21-22a

But Abishai the son of Zeruiah succoured him, and smote the
Philistine, and killed him.

– II Samuel 21:17

And Abishai, the brother of Joab, the son of Zeruiah, was
Chief among Three. And he lifted up his spear against
three hundred, and slew them, and had the Name among
Three....Zelek the Ammonite, Nahari the Beerothite,
armourbearer to Joab the son of Zeruiah.

– II Samuel 23:18, 37

And he conferred with Joab the son of Zeruiah, and with
Abiathar the Priest: and they following Adonijah helped him.

– I Kings 1:7

Moreover thou knowest also what Joab the son of Zeruiah
did to me, and what he did to the two Captains of the Hosts
of Israel, unto Abner the son of Ner, and Amasa the son of
Jether, whom he slew, and shed the Blood of War in Peace,
and put the Blood of War upon his girdle that was about
his loins, and in his shoes that were on his feet...

And King Solomon answered and said unto his mother, And why
dost thou ask Abishag the Shunammite be given to Adonijah?
ask for him the Kingdom also; for he is mine older brother; even
for him, and for Abiathar the Priest, and for Joab the son of Zeruiah.

– I Kings 2:5, 22

And David said, Whosoever smiteth the Jebusite first shall be Chief and Captain. So Joab the son of Zeruiah went first up, and was Chief... Zelek that Ammonite, Naharai the Berorthite, the armourbearer of Joab the son of Zeruiah.

I Chronicles 1:6, 39 [As expected the Chronicler didn't like Joab going up the waterspout/gutter/shaft as in the parallel verse in II Samuel 5:8, 39, so he conveniently omits it.]

Moreover Abishai the son of Zeruriah slew of the Edomites in the Valley of Salt eighteen thousand....And Joab the son of Zeruiah was over the Host...
– I Chronicles 18:12, 15

And all that Samuel the Seer, and Saul the son of Kish, and Abner the son of Ner, and Joab the son of Zeruiah, had dedicated...
– I Chronicles 26:28

Joab the son of Zeruriah began to number, but he finished not, because there fell Wrath for it against Israel...
– I Chronicles 27:24 [One is not sure if these brothers are referred as sons of their mother instead of the usual son of their father, because of their kinship to David, or because there is some kind of shadow over their birth.]

Abigail

And Absalom made Amasa Captain of the Host instead of Joab: which Amasa was a man's son, whose name was Ithra an Israelite, that went in to Abigail the daughter of Nahash [King of Ammon], sister to Zeruiah Joab's mother.

– II Samuel 17:25 [Amasa's father is mentioned, although the sources disagree over his ethnicity. II Samuel has his name and nationality as Jether an Israelite, whereas the Chronicler calls him Ithra the Ishmeelite (I Chronicles 2:17). The sons of Zeruiah have only an unnamed man from Bethlehem as the father of Asahel for sure (II Samuel 2:33a), and by association also of Joab and Abishai, but not for sure. Since he remains unnamed, we therefore see the kinship with David as the main reference. We are assuming Nahash the father of Amasa was King of Ammon because of the references in I Samuel 11:1-2; 12:12; II Samuel 10:1-2a. That this is the same man as the father of Amasa is strongly suggested in the last verse: "Then

David said, I will show kindness to Hanun the son of Nahash,
as his father showed kindness unto me.” Nahash means
“serpent,” or “snake,” a popular name symbolizing Serpent
Worship in the Ancient Near East.]

I believe we have established the fact that the sisters of David are not Jesse’s daughters and that therefore the mother of David’s either six or seven brothers is not the mother of David. Since his mother has two daughters by two other men suggests a role of Sacred Prostitution in their bearing. The sons of such unions would be legitimated in royal lineage, so that their status as Holy Children would be suggested. Thus the son of Nahash King of Ammon, to wit, Amasa, would have enhanced prestige regardless of who raised him, thus his role as Captain of the Host of Israel. Ditto with the sons of Zeruah, who had high status in the Host of David.

As stated earlier, there is no mention of the Queen Mother under the reign of David. Based on the information available to us, to wit, the continual mention of the mothers of the Kings of Judah, beginning with Bathsheba, we cannot help but deduce that David’s mother, and also the mother of Abigail and Zeruah, was the High Priestess of El Elyon and his Asherah in the Jebusite aristocracy.

We know from the evidence found at Ugarit, a Phoenician city state, Asherah was the Queen of Heaven and the Mother of the 70 Gentile Gods. Thus the role of the Queen Mother was barely eclipsed by the role of the King himself.

We also see Samuel’s choice in Anointing David King of Israel as part of this legacy. Thus his mother was the Queen Mother of Zion under King David. We will get confirmation for this hypothesis in the last section detailing the 22 Kings of Zion.

The History of the Kings of Judah display a constant conflict between the House of David

and the House of Aaron, leading to the eventual banning of the King from burning incense in his own private chapel under the Reign of Uzziah (Azariah) as demonstrated by the “Evolution of a Lie” in Section IV (see below).

Thus we see David becoming the Canaanite King of Zion in Jerusalem, a Jebusite capital city, in the Order of Melchizedek, after reigning for seven years and six months in Hebron as the King of Judah (I Samuel 2:11). After defeating the son of Saul, David then defeats the Philistines at the Valley of Rephaim, and then takes Jerusalem and renames the Castle-Fort-Tower-Hold of Zion, to wit, the Millo, the City of David. He then brings in the Ark of the Covenant and places it in a private Tabernacle chapel after a struggle and compromise with the Priests of Aaron.

David dances before the Ark as it comes into the City of David in a Canaanite fertility ritual. His wife, Michal, the daughter of Saul, watches him enter from a window, a familiar sight in Asherah worship (known as the Woman in the Window), and insults David when he comes in for the annual Hieros Gamos ritual, and thus is rejected.

To insert himself more deeply into the Jebusite aristocracy, he has Uriah the Hittite slain in war and then marries his wife, who is pregnant by David. Thus Bathsheba the Hittite, daughter of the Mighty Man Eliam, and granddaughter of Ahithophel of Giloh, David’s counselor, and ex-wife of Uriah the Hittite, another of David’s Mighty Men, becomes the mother of two of the most important lines for prophecy, the Royal Line of Solomon, and the Line of Nathan, the non-Royal Line, but a Son of David by Bathsheba nonetheless. It is important that the future Kings of Zion descend from Bathsheba because she and David had sinned greatly in

the death of Uriah and in their adulterous relationship.

In fact, this Great Sin is the reason and motivation behind the revolts of Absalom, aided by Ahithophel (he must have been pissed when David had his son-in-law, Uriah, killed in battle), and Adonijah, aided by Joab and Abiathar the Priest. I call this the Trail of Sin (beginning with Cain) because God forgives David and Bathsheba, changing the Trail of Sin to a Trail of Grace.

Then after Israel is struck with a great plague because God ordered David to number the people in order to punish Israel (later amended by the Chronicler who replaces YHWH with Satan), Gad the Seer tells David to buy the threshingfloor, located on Mt. Moriah, of the ex-King Arauna, and after he does so, he erects an altar to YHWH, averting the hanging sword from the Angel of YHWH that was set to destroy Jerusalem, later to become the site of Solomon's House of YHWH.

Jumping ahead, Solomon constructs the Oracle in the rear of the House with its huge Cherubim and places the Ark there, then constructs two Upper Chambers above the Oracle for initiation rituals and dream divination, and perhaps to store treasure. In the Uppermost Chamber, known as Third Heaven, Solomon constructs his Seat for the Sabbath and Bridal Chamber for Hieros Gamos with his thousand wives.

The entrance to these Upper Chambers is a Door on the inside Right Shoulder of the House (I imagine it being next to the outer wall of the Oracle), leading to a Spiral Staircase inside the Walls of the Temple. This is the Ascent that made the Queen of Sheba breathless. Solomon also builds a golden altar for his incense offering to YHWH. By the end of the dynasty, it is no longer the private chapel of the Kings of Zion, who no longer offer incense on the altar; it has

been completely taken over by the Aaronic Priesthood.

Before King Ahaz orders the High Priest to construct a huge stepped-pyramid altar, the Aaronic Priesthood kept the original Bronze Altar built by Moses for animal sacrifices. The two Priesthoods – that of Melchizedek and that of Aaron – are in constant conflict for control of the House, which often becomes a House of Baal and Asherah under rebellious Kings.

After the Babylonian Captivity, high ranking Jews return to Jerusalem and rebuild the Temple. Zerubbabel, of the Royal Line of Solomon, almost becomes a King of Zion, but is defeated as a result of the surrounding nations accusing him of wanting to become King again, as well as the Curse of Jeremiah over this Line, thus allowing the Aaronic Priesthood sway over the Second Temple until the Triumphant Entrance of Jesus Christ on Palm Sunday.

This last event is predicted in a 70 Week astrological timeline by the Prophet Daniel and I imagine some kind of secret society that kept this dream alive, a secret society that I call the Order of the Branch. The secret society that Daniel creates in Babylon to keep track of the 70 Week timeline, I call the Order of the Magicians.

Disciples of Daniel, the Magi, visit the child Jesus and give him precious presents, while the Order of the Branch keeps the wheels greased in the Holy City. This Order consists of men like the two Josephs (of the Lines of Solomon and Nathan – the latter whom I imagine is Joseph of Arimathea), Nicodemus, the people in Bethel who got King David's mule ready for Jesus to ride on Palm Sunday, and Clopas, brother of Joseph of the Royal Line, whose several sons are either Apostles or Beloved of Jesus, and in whose Upper Room Jesus ate his Last Supper, and the later Early Jerusalem Church met.

This will all be made clear in great detail in Section V.

The New Testament

First of all I read the New Testament as a narrative that tells a clear story when you compare the texts with each other. Thus I don't let the scholars spoil the story that is clear to me. I regard the entire corpus to take place between 30 A.D. and 70 A.D. because the texts allege this timeline, so that events make coherent sense.

First of all, I do not believe that Jesus is God – and thus also deny the pagan Platonic Trinity. I believe that his birth was totally natural, between a son of David and Bathsheba, to wit, Joseph of Arimathea, and a Daughter of Aaron, Mary the mother of Jesus. I believe his adopted father, Joseph of Bethlehem of the Royal Line of Solomon, was involved and died in the rebellion led by Judas the Galilean when Jesus was twelve years old.

I believe Jesus was the promised one and that an elite group of believers in Daniel and Enoch organized his birth according to the astrological predictions of Daniel in the 70 Weeks. Thus Jesus was not only the Underground King of Israel after his father died, but he was the Promised Messiah.

I believe that Jesus was an Apocalyptic Messiah, that is, Jesus believed that the End of the World was near and that he led a Rebel Band of men with Sicarii bodyguards, who took over the church after Jesus was gone. Thus, Jesus proclaimed himself King when he rode into Jerusalem on David's Donkey on Palm Sunday to the equivalent of Gihon Spring in the Temple. Jesus, as King of Zion, then provoked an Insurrection led by Barabbas that failed and he barely escaped. I believe that Jesus then changed his mind and adopted the Isaiah 53 Suffering Servant

ideology and accepted his Crucifixion, ordering his best friend, Judas the Sicarri, to betray him to the Jewish Council.

I believe that Jesus Christ died for my sins as well as for the Sins of the Kosmos. I believe he rose from the dead on the third day in a Spiritual Body that was able to materialize in the physical world when he wanted to. I believe he has given Believers his Holy Spirit with which we wage war against the Children of Darkness.

I have no doubt that Jesus also practiced Sympathetic Magic, but I hardly believe that he walked on water or raised a person four days dead. Think of what it must have been like being around Lazarus when his body was in a state of decay, like a zombie in Night of the Living Dead.

I also believe I talked with Jesus in Heaven on Earth and that he allowed me to return to this world to warn my Generation against the Evil in the World, and to teach them about the Love of God, Grace and Forgiveness. I believe that Believers are Justified from Sin by the Faith of Jesus Christ, not by our own. I also believe that everyone is saved, whether they repent or not, but I also believe that we will be judged by what we've done in this life and our next life after being reincarnated will reflect what we did in the last one, thus Karma. I believe Jesus did perform some miracles because I myself have experienced them first hand.

I don't believe the 12 stayed in Jerusalem after the Crucifixion like Luke's two volume history – the Gospel of Luke and the Book of Acts – asserts, but returned to Galilee until the heat died down and it was safe for them to return.

I believe others in Jerusalem witnessed the Second Coming of Jesus on the Third day in Jerusalem and at that time received the Holy Spirit. I believe that this small community of

believers were anathema to the Twelve Apostles, and after they returned to Jerusalem for the Feast of Pentecost, and witnessed the success of the Believers who remained, they arranged for the coming of the Spirit, which was really the Spirit of the Law, for Pentecost also celebrated the giving of the Law to Moses on Mount Horeb.

A group of Believers led by Mary Magdalene were persecuted by the Apostles as well as the Greek-speaking Jews. Peter and John then made a deal with the Sanhedrin, mainly with Gamaliel, whose disciple, Saul of Tarsus led the persecution of the Hellenists while Peter took care of other Jewish Believers who were not going with the socialist agenda established by the Twelve.

Later the Jerusalem Soviet was ruled by just three men: Peter, James and John Zebedee, later changed to Peter, John Zebedee, and James the Just (the Three Pillars), after James Zebedee was beheaded by Herod Agrippa I. But at the beginning, the first three Christian martyrs were Judas, murdered by the Twelve, Ananias and Sapphira, murdered by Peter and a group of young thugs, and Stephen, a leader of the Hellenists, whom Paul was instrumental in his stoning. This branch of the early church was thus scattered and began the Ministry to the Gentiles.

Thus after the murders of Judas, Ananias and Sapphira, and Stephen, the Greek-speaking Jewish Believers, the Hellenists, are persecuted by both the Priesthood and also by the Hebrew-speaking Jewish Believers. The Hellenists waste no time going to the Gentiles with the Gospel while the Jerusalem Church rides shotgun in trying to contain these churches from being independent of Jerusalem. Peter then follows Philip, keeping the churches he establishes in Samaria and Caesarea under the sway of Jerusalem. John goes to Asia and has some luck there

establishing churches.

After a Circumcision Summit in Jerusalem, Paul makes a deal with the Three Pillars – Peter, John, and James the Just – and is told at that time of the Revelation of John in Patmos and the conflict with the Hellenist Nicolas in that province. Paul leaves on his next journey with Silas to keep him in check, to wit, keep him out of John’s domain. Paul then begins his Gentile Mission in Philippi after being asked for help by Epaphroditus, a Macedonian important city official, who later writes the Gospel of Luke and the Acts of the Apostles.

Paul, allied with Ananias and Priscilla/Prisca, takes his Gospel to Asia, thus breaking the deal with the Three Pillars. This ends haunting Paul until his last days. To complete his end of the deal, Paul raises a collection in Galatia, Philippi, Thessalonica, and Corinth, and has leaders from those churches escort him to Jerusalem in hopes it will be accepted by James the Just. He must have hoped his disobedience for entering Asia would not enter into the acceptance, but it does, for James sets him up for arrest by the authorities after tricking him into the Temple, where he is arrested by the Roman police after a riot started by his mission to the Gentiles.

He is later tried in Caesarea, where he resides in the Praetorium (Philippians 1:13; 4:22), then appeals to Caesar in Rome because of his Roman citizenship. During his captivity in Rome he rents a private house with a Roman guard (Acts 28:16, 30), and from there we assume that Paul lost his head after the Christians took the torch to Rome, trying to fulfill the Book of Revelation (Rev. 18:1-24).

This all comes to a violent end not only for Paul in Rome, but also for James the Just in Jerusalem, who is murdered by the High Priest, after which the Jews revolt in 66 A.D. in

Palestine, leading to the last stand at Masada in 72-73 A.D.

This all leads to the destruction of Jerusalem and their Temple, just as Jesus predicted, for he rightly understood the 70 Weeks of Daniel, whereas John Zebedee, when he wrote the Revelation based on the 70 Weeks and the Lie of Satan Appearing as an Angel of Light, didn't.

Then the Great Cult Wars begin. They haven't ended yet.

Reincarnation

I know that modern Christians hate this doctrine, but it is the only one that makes sense to me. I mean, that the resurrection would somehow bring your original body back to life is way too magical and grotesque an idea for me. It sounds more like Night of the Living Dead. The only physical bodily resurrection that makes sense to me is metempsychosis, to wit, reincarnation of the soul, your true identity.

Like Deep Time, Universal Salvation, the Will of God (II Peter 3:9b), takes more than one lifetime to complete. So instead of reading the verse negatively in Hebrews 9:27 that states, "And it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this, the Judgment," forcing it to mean a Biblical teaching against the idea of reincarnation, I read it positively, in that it is appointed for everyone to die in the body he or she currently occupies, and then the Judgment, and then getting a new body in the process of reincarnation. The Judgment is clearly based on what you did in your life, so there is Justice in the end, just no Eternal Punishment, which is unjust if it is for deeds done in Time.

In fact, I started this website so that all of the knowledge I've accumulated on the Bible and Divine Sonship over the ages would be available to my future self if I'm reincarnated. There

is no good reason to reinvent the wheel. I also believe there is a good chance that in a past life I was a Fallen Angel or at least from another planet. I believe that part of the Salvation of the Fallen Angels involves them incarnating as human beings, which is not like them taking over someone's mind, but actually becoming a human being with no other passenger in the body.

I also believe the Sons of God, to wit, Angels, can also reincarnate as humans to perform services for God. This is not the same as Telepathic Incarnation, commonly known as demonic possession. I have chosen the Angel of YHWH named "Wonderful" as the example, for King Hezekiah is also known by this name. Thus, the Angel of YHWH who announced the birth of Samson to his parents, was also reincarnated as King Hezekiah.

Confession is Good for the Soul

Another thing I have experienced in this life is the need of other people to confide in me. Many people have been attracted to me because I believe they sense that I am slow to judge people. The most excellent case of this came quite unexpectedly to me while I was a janitor at the University of British Columbia during the time I was helping Will Wilding, a famous Canadian architect, establish a house church in Vancouver from February 1975 – after I graduated from college – till December of that same year, because I had to return to America to serve my alternate service to earn a Presidential Pardon and Clemency Discharge from the Army (the equivalent of a General Discharge.)

At the time I was serving graveyard shift in the Art department. This covered the Art building, the cafeteria, and the Theater. The head of this division was a German immigrant I will call Schultz for the sake of convenience. He was retiring the next year and often told me stories

in the break room. Many times he would forget our job and tell me about his life, knowing somehow that I wouldn't snitch him out.

One night he took me aside and told me he had to get something off his chest. It seems he had been a pharmacist in Berlin when Hitler came to power. He was attracted to the One Germany, One Party, and One Leader bullshit at the time. In fact, after he joined the Wehrmacht, he fought all four years on the Russian Front. I deduced from certain facts in the story that he had been an officer, mainly because he carried a pistol and was given charge of all the surviving young officers at the bitter end when they knew they were losing.

Anyway, they were on the Moscow River, the city within their grasp, but were being held down by a bunker. Schultz said they made the Russians in the bunker an offer to surrender but the political officer inside the bunker said "Nyet." There was a pistol shot, and then the soldiers filed out single file with their hands raised. These men obviously wanted to survive the war.

Schultz was in charge of the leader of the mutiny, the one who had shot the political officer, and the Russian could speak some German. He pled for Schultz to give him a ten second head start, begging because he was being held for the SS or Gestapo and knew he would not survive an interrogation. Schultz felt humanitarian for some reason towards the Russian but pled with him not to try to escape for he would have no choice but to shoot him.

"Just ten seconds," the Russian pleaded over and over. "Just look the other way for just ten seconds!" Schultz tried to reason with him but the Russian saw it as all or nothing and started to escape. Schultz said he pulled out his pistol, aimed.....and totally choked up and started bawling like a baby. He had obviously killed the Russian who was haunting him until the

day he died. Later, when he recovered, he thanked me for listening to his story. But that was just the beginning.

Like I said, he was put in charge of all of the surviving officers and was told to surrender them to the Americans after they were all disguised as enlisted men. They were on a ship near the northern-most tip of Denmark prepared to surrender to the American navy, an ending that was almost challenged when an American pilot crashed his plane in the brink near them. They thought they were going to get blamed, but the truth was known and they escaped being sunk.

Schultz surrendered as an enlisted corporal after getting the young officers home and was released in West Germany as a regular German. Later, he snuck into East Germany to rescue his wife and children and then escaped with them to Canada. This was a very brave thing to tell me, because the people running the janitorial department were ex-military men in the Canadian army, many from the Second World War.

Schultz said he had given up on the Nazi lie and was heavily into the works of Ayn Rand and her philosophy of the self. Maybe it was the fact that I had told him earlier that was I leaving the job to work for a pardon for having been AWOL for three years. Well, I don't believe that old Schultz was a member of the SS, but who knows? I hope he retired in peace. He told me that some times on the Russian front they would get so thirsty they would drink out of the puddles by the side of the road full of rotting dead men. That was hell enough for anyone.

I've led a wild life and there is little I would change if I could. I have experienced both the Good and the Evil in this cosmos, and I choose the Good, if indeed, I have a Free Will.

So far, God has always rescued me when things looked really bad for the home team, but

there is no guarantee that this will always be the case. I pray that this article will help lead you to a knowledge of the Truth, if you are not already there, in the name of Jesus Christ. Amen.

IV
THE OLD TESTAMENT TEACHING ON DIVINE SONSHIP

The Divine Council in Heaven

Where wast thou when I laid the Foundations of the Earth?
declare, if thou hast Understanding.

Who hath laid the measure thereof, if thou Knowest?
or who has stretched the line upon it?

Whereupon are the Foundations thereof fastened?
or who laid the Corner Stone thereof?

**When the Morning Stars sang, and all the
Sons of God shouted for joy?**

– Job 38:4-7

The Creation of Humankind

**And God said, Let us Make [Humans] in our Image,
after our likeness: and let them have dominion
over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air,
and over the cattle, and over all the Earth,
and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the Earth.**

**So God Created [Humans] in his own Image,
in the Image of God Created he [them];
Male and Female Created he them.**

And God Blessed them, and God said unto them,
Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the Earth,
and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish
of the sea, and over the fowl of the air,
and over every living thing that moveth upon the Earth.

And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb
bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the Earth,
and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding
seed; to you it shall be for food. And to every beast of the Earth,
and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth
upon the Earth, wherein there is life. I have given every
green herb for food: and it was so.

– Genesis 1:26-30 [Note that in this Creation version,
there is no Forbidden Tree. Every one of them is
for food. There is also no Fall, no Original Sin,
and, of course, no Serpent in a Forbidden Tree.]

The Temptation of Eve at the Asherah Tree:
An Aesop's Fable for the Aristocracy

Now the Serpent was more Subtil than any
beast of the field which YHWH God had Made.
And he said unto the Woman, Yea, hath God said,
Ye shall not eat of every tree of the Garden?
And the Woman said unto the Serpent,
We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the Garden,
but of the Fruit of the Tree which is in the Midst
of the Garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it,
neither shall ye touch it, lest ye Die.
And the Serpent said unto the Woman,
Ye shall not surely Die:
for God doth Know that in the day ye eat thereof,
then your Eyes shall be Opened, and ye shall
be as gods, Knowing Good and Evil.

The Choice of Eve:
Wisdom or Obedience

And when the Woman Saw that the Tree
was Good for food, and that it was
pleasant to the eyes, and a Tree to be desired
to Make one Wise,
she took of the Fruit thereof, and did eat,
and she gave also to her Husband with her,
and he did eat.
And the Eyes of them both were Opened,
and they Knew that they were Naked,
and they sewed fig leaves together,
and made for themselves aprons.
And they Heard the Voice of YHWH God
walking in the Garden: and Adam and his Wife
hid themselves from the Presence of YHWH God
amongst the trees of the Garden.
And YHWH God Called unto Adam,
and said unto him, Where art thou?
And he said, I Heard thy Voice in the Garden,
and I was afraid, because I was Naked,
and I hid myself.

And he said, Who told thee that thou wast Naked?
Hast thou eaten of the Tree, whereof I commanded
thee that thou shouldest not eat?

And the Man said, The Woman whom thou gavest
to be with me, she gave me of the Tree,
and I did eat.

And YHWH God said unto the Woman,
What is this that thou hast done?

And the Woman said, The Serpent Beguiled me,
and I did eat.

And YHWH God said to the Serpent,
Because thou hast done this, thou art Cursed
above all cattle, and above every beast of the field;
upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat
all the days of thy life: and I will put enmity between
thee and the Woman, and between thy Seed and her Seed;
it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.
Unto the Woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow
and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children;
and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall
rule over thee.

The Ground Cursed for Adam's Sake

And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened
unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the Tree,
of which I Commanded thee, saying,

Thou shalt not eat of it:

Cursed is the Ground for thy sake;
in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life:
thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee;
and thou shalt eat the herb of the field;
in the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread,
till thou return unto the Ground;
for out of it wast thou taken:
for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.

And Adam called his Wife's name Eve;
because she was the mother of all living.

Unto Adam also and to his wife did YHWH God
make coats of skins, and clothed them.

– Genesis 2:1-20 [Asherah worship is implied here.
Asherah was the mother of the Canaanite gods,

and so Eve was the mother of all living humans.
 When Asherah was being portrayed the Tree of Life
 was her Symbol, usually in a Grove. Thus El and
 Asherah are portrayed in the Garden of Eden as
 their human counterparts, Adam and Eve.]

The Curse Lifted for Noah's Sake

And Adam builded an altar unto YHWH;
 and took of every clean beast, and of every clean fowl,
 and offered burnt-offerings on the altar.
 And YHWH smelled a sweet savour; and YHWH said
 in his heart, **I will not again Curse the Ground any more
 for man's sake**; for the imagination of man's heart
 is Evil from his youth; neither will I again smite any more
 every thing living, as I have done.
 While the Earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest,
 and cold and heat, and summer and winter,
 and day and night shall not cease.
 – Genesis 6:20-22

YHWH in Council Deals with the Sin of Adam

**And YHWH God said, Behold, the Humans are become
 as one of us, to Know Good and Evil;**
 and now, lest they put forth their hand, and take
 also of the Tree of Life, and eat,
 and live for ever:
 Therefore YHWH God sent them forth from
 the Garden of Eden,
 to till the ground from whence they were taken.
 So he drove out the Humans; and he placed at the East
 of the Garden Cherubim [Sphinxes, with the head of a man,
 and the body of a lion – they were Heavenly Creatures
 Guarding Temples and other Holy Sites], and a Flaming Sword
 which turned every way, to Keep the Way of
 the Tree of Life.
 – Genesis 3:1-24

YHWH in Council Deals with the Tower of Babel

...And YHWH said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do; and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do,

Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech.

So YHWH scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the Earth.

...By these were the Isles of the Gentiles divided in their lands; every one after his tongue, after their families, in their Nations.

...And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg; for in his days was the Earth divided.

– Genesis 6:1-2, 4; 10:5, 25

Remember the days of old,
consider the years of many generations:
ask thy father, and he will show thee:
thy elders, and they will tell thee.

When the Most High [Elyon] divided to the Nations,
when he separated the sons of Adam,
he set the bounds of the people according
to the number of the Sons of God.

...And lest thou lift up thine eyes unto Heaven,
and when thou seest the Sun, and the Moon,
and the Stars, even all the Host of Heaven,
shouldest be driven to worship them,
and serve them, which YHWH thy God
hath divided unto all Nations under
the whole Heaven.

...Rejoice ye Heavens, with him, and let all the
Angels of God worship him; rejoice ye Gentiles
with his people, and let all of the
Sons of God strengthen themselves in him.

– Deuteronomy 32:7-8 [LXX]; 4:19; 32:43 [LXX]

**YHWH Presideth in the Divine Council,
he Judgeth among the gods.**

How long will ye Judge unjustly, and accept
the persons of the Wicked? Selah

Defend the poor and fatherless:
do Justice to the afflicted and needy.

Deliver the poor and needy: rid them
out of the hand of the Wicked.

They Know not, neither will they Understand:
they walk on in Darkness: all the Foundations
of the Earth are out of course.

**I have said, Ye are gods:
and all of you Sons of the Most High.**

**But ye shall die like men, and
fall like one of the princes.**

Arise, O God, judge the Earth:
for thou shalt inherit the Nations.

– Psalm 82, A Song or Psalm of Asaph

**Now there was a day when the Sons of God came
to present themselves before YHWH, and Satan came
also among them.** And YHWH said unto Satan,

Whence cometh thou? Then Satan answered YHWH,
and said, From going to and fro in the Earth, and from
walking up and down in it. And YHWH said unto Satan,

Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none
like him in the Earth, a perfect and an upright man, one

that feareth God, and escheweth Evil? Then Satan answered
YHWH, and said, Doth Job fear God for naught? Hast not thou
made an hedge about him, and about his house, and about all

that he hath on every side? thou hast Blessed the work of his hands,
and his substance is increased in the land. But put forth thine hand
now, and touch all that he hath, and he will Curse you to thy face.

And YHWH said unto Satan, Behold, all that he hath is in thy Power;
only upon himself put not forth thine hand. So Satan went forth from

the Presence of YHWH.....**Again there was a day when the Sons of God
came to present themselves before YHWH, and Satan came also among
them to present himself before YHWH.** And YHWH said unto Satan,

From whence comest thou? And Satan answered YHWH, and said,
From going to and fro in the Earth, and from walking up and down in it.

And YHWH said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that
there is none like him in the Earth, a perfect and an upright man, one

that feareth God and escheweth Evil? and still he holdeth fast his integrity, although thou movedst me against him, to destroy him without cause.

And Satan answered YHWH, and said, Skin for skin, yea, all that a man hath will he give for his life. But put forth thine hand now, and touch his bone and flesh, and he will Curse thee to thy face. And YHWH said unto Satan, Behold, he is in thine hand; but save his life.

– Job 1:6-12; 2:1-6 [This sure is an interesting Divine Council, isn't it? I mean who could have imagined God making a wager with Satan that involves such cruelty? Well, it is sure is a good reason to Fear him and be a member of his Divine Family.]

And the messenger that was gone to call Micaiah spake unto him, saying, Behold now, the words of the prophets declare Good unto the king with one mouth; let thy word, I pray thee, be like the word of one of them, and speak that which is Good. And Micaiah said, As YHWH liveth, what YHWH saith unto me, that will I speak. So he came to the king. And the king said unto him, Micaiah, shall we go ahead to Ramoth-gilead to battle, or shall we forbear? And he answered him, Go, and prosper; for YHWH shall deliver it into the hand of the king. And the king said unto him, How many times shall I adjure thee that thou tell me nothing but that which is True in the name of YHWH? And he said, I saw all Israel scattered upon the hills, as sheep that have not a shepherd: and YHWH said, These have no master: let them return every man to his house in peace. And the king of Israel said unto Jehoshaphat, Did I not tell that he would prophesy no Good concerning me, but Evil?

And he said, Hear now therefore the Word of YHWH: **I saw YHWH sitting on his Throne, and all the Host of Heaven standing by him on his right hand and on his left.** And YHWH said, Who shall persuade Ahab, that he may go up and not fall at Ramoth-gilead? And one said on this manner, and another said on that manner. And there came forth a Spirit, and stood before YHWH, and said, I will persuade him.

And YHWH said unto him, Wherewith? And he said, I will go forth, and I will be a Lying Spirit in the mouth of all his prophets. And he said, Thou shalt persuade him, and prevail also; go forth, and do so.

Now therefore, behold, **YHWH hath put a Lying Spirit in the mouth of all these thy prophets, and YHWH hath spoken Evil concerning thee.**

– I Kings 22:13-23 [YHWH is not the God of Plato, who is so Good, he can have nothing to do with Evil, whereas YHWH not only Created Good and Evil, he is Beyond them. (Isa. 45:7).]

I Saw in the Night Visions, and, behold, one like the Son of Man came with the Clouds of Heaven, and came to the Ancient of Days, and they brought him near before him. And there was given him Dominion, and Glory, and a Kingdom, that all people, Nations, and languages, should serve him: his Dominion is an Everlasting Dominion, which shall not pass away, and his Kingdom shall not be destroyed....I beheld, and the same Horn made war with the Holy Ones, and prevailed against them; until the Ancient of Days came, and judgment was given to the Holy Ones of the Most High; and the time came that the Holy Ones possessed the Kingdom....And the Kingdom and Dominion, and the Greatness of the Kingdom under the whole Heaven, shall be given to the People of the Holy Ones of the Most High, whose Kingdom is an Everlasting Kingdom, and all Dominions shall serve and obey him.

The 70 Weeks

...And it came to pass, when I, even I Daniel, had Seen the Vision, and sought for the meaning, then, behold, there stood before me as the Appearance of a man. And I Heard a man's voice between the banks of of Ulai, which called, and said, Gabriel, make this man to Understand the Vision. So he came near where I stood: and when he came, I was afraid, and fell upon my face: but he said unto me, Understand, O Son of Man: for at the Time of the End shall be the Vision. Now as he was Speaking to me, I was in a deep sleep on my face toward the ground: but he touched me, and set me upright. And he said, Behold, I will make thee Know what shall be in the Last End of the Indignation: for at the Time Appointed the End shall be.

...Yea, whiles I was speaking in prayer, even the man Gabriel, whom I had Seen in the Vision at the beginning, being caused to fly swiftly, touched me about the time of the evening oblation. And he informed me, and talked with me, and said, O Daniel, I am now come forth to give thee Skill and Understanding. At the beginning of thy supplications the commandment came forth, and I am come to show thee; for thou art greatly beloved: therefore Understand the matter, and consider the Vision.

**Seventy Weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy Holy City,
to Finish the Transgression,
and to make an End to Sins,
and to make Reconciliation for Iniquity,
and to bring in Everlasting Righteousness,
and to Seal up the Vision and Prophecy,
and to make Christ the Most Holy.**

Know therefore and Understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto Christ the Prince shall be Seven Weeks, and Threescore and Two Weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall,

even in troublous times. **And after Threescore and Two Weeks shall Christ be Cut Off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall Destroy the City and the Sanctuary; and the End thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the End of the War Desolations are Determined.** And he shall confirm the Covenant with many for One Week: and in the Midst of the Week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, **and for the overspreading of Abominations he shall make it Desolate, even unto the Consumation, and that Determined shall be poured upon the Desolate.**

...And Behold, a hand touched me, which set me upon my knees and upon the palms of my hands, and he said unto me, O Daniel, a man greatly beloved, Understand the Words that I Speak unto thee, and stand upright: for unto thee am I now sent. And when he had Spoken this Word unto me, I stood trembling. Then said he unto me, Fear not, Daniel, for from the first day that thou didst set thine heart to Understand, and to chasten thyself before God, thy words were Heard, and I am come for thy words. **But the Prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me one and twenty days: but, lo, Michael, one of the Chief Princes, came to help me; and I remained there with the kings of Persia.** Now I am come to make thee Understand what shall befall thy people in the Latter Days; for yet the Vision is many days. And when he had Spoken such Words unto me, I set my face toward the ground, and I became dumb. And, behold, one like the similitude of the sons of men touched my lips: then I opened my mouth, and spake, and said unto him that stood before me, O, my Lord, by the Vision my sorrows are turned upon me, and I have retained no strength. For how can the servant of this my Lord talk with this my Lord? for as for me, straightway there remained no strength in me, neither is there breath left in me. Then there came again and touched me one like the appearance of a man, and he strengthened me. And said, O man greatly beloved, fear not: peace be unto thee, be strong, yea, be strong. And when he had Spoken unto me, I was strengthened, and said, Let my Lord Speak; for thou hast strengthened me. Then, said he, Knowest thou wherefore I come unto thee? **and now will I return to fight with the Prince of Persia: and when I am gone forth, lo, the Prince of Greece shall come. But I will show thee that which is noted in the Scripture of Truth: and there is none that holdeth with me in these things, but Michael your Prince.**

...And at that Time shall Michael stand up, the Great Prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a Time of Trouble, such as never was since there was a Nation even to that Time: and at that Time the people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the Book.

– Daniel 7:13-14, 21-22, 27; 8:13-19;
9:20-27; 10:10-21; 12:1

The Sons of God Who Sinned with the Daughters of Men

And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the Earth, and daughters were born unto them, that the Sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose.....

There were Nephilim in the Earth in those days; and also after that, when the Sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became Mighty Men, which were of old, Men of Renoun.

– Genesis 6:1-2, 4 [The Mighty Men of Renoun were Giants, sons of Angels and human women. They became the gods of the Nations.]

Enoch Preaches Doom to the Fallen Angels at Mount Hermon

And it came to pass when the children of men had multiplied that in those days there was born unto them beautiful and comely daughters. And the Angels, the Children of the Heaven, saw and lusted after them, and said to one another: “Come, let us choose wives from among the children of men and beget us children.” And Semjaza, who was their leader, said unto them: “I fear ye will not indeed agree to do this deed, and I alone shall have to pay the penalty of a great sin.”

And they all answered him and said: “Let us all swear an oath, and all bind ourselves by mutual imprecations not to abandon this plan but to do this thing. Then swear they all together and bound themselves by mutual imprecations upon it.

And they were in all two hundred; who descended in the days of Jared on the summit of Mount Hermon, and they called it Mount Hermon, because they had sworn and bound themselves by mutual imprecations upon it.

...And the Lord said unto Michael: “Go, bind Semjaza and his associates who have united themselves with women so as to have defiled themselves with them in all their uncleanness. And when their sons have slain one another, and they have seen the destruction of their beloved ones, bind them fast for seventy generations in the Valleys of the Earth, till the Day of their Judgment and of their consummation, till the Judgment that is for ever and ever is consummated. In those days they shall be led off to the Abyss of Fire: and to the torment and the Prison, in which they shall be confined for ever.”

....Enoch, thou Scribe of Righteousness, go, declare to the Watchers of the Heaven who have left the High Heaven, the Holy Eternal Place, and have defiled themselves with women, and have done as the children of Earth do, and have taken unto themselves wives: “Ye have wrought great destruction on Earth: and ye shall have no Peace nor Forgiveness of Sins: inasmuch as they delight themselves in their children. The murder of their beloved ones shall they see, and over the destruction of their children shall they lament, and shall make supplications

unto Eternity, but Mercy and Peace shall ye not attain.”

– The Book of Enoch [trns. by R.H. Charles]

VI:1-6; X:11-13; XII:4-6

And they shall not lie with the Nephilim of the uncircumcised, which are gone down to Sheol with their weapons of war; and they have laid their swords under their heads, but their iniquities shall be upon their bones, though they were the Terror of the Mighty in the land of the living.

– Ezekiel 32:27

For Christ also hath once suffered for Sins, the Just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the Flesh, but Quickened by the Spirit: by which also he went and preached unto the Spirits in Prison; which sometime were disobedient, when once the Longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah....For for this cause was the Gospel preached also to them that are Dead, that they might be judged according to men in the Flesh, but live according to God in the Spirit.

– I Peter 3:18-19 [quoting Enoch]; 4:6

And behold! He cometh with the thousands of his Holy Ones

To execute judgment upon all,

And to destroy all the ungodly:

And to convict all flesh

Of all the works of their ungodliness which they

have ungodly committed,

And of all the hard things which ungodly

sinner have spoken against him.

– The Book of Enoch I:9 [quoted by Jude 14-15]

For if God spared not the Angels that sinned but cast them down to Tartarus, and delivered them into Chains of Darkness, to be reserved unto judgment.

– II Peter 2:4 [quoting the Book of Enoch]

And the Angels which kept not their First Estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in Everlasting Chains under Darkness unto the judgment of the Great Day.

– Jude 6 [quoting the Book of Enoch]

Sheol from beneath is moved for thee to meet thee at thy coming; it stirreth up the Rephaim for thee, even all the Chief Ones of the Earth; it hath raised up from their thrones all the Kings of the Natiions.

All they shall speak and say unto you, Art thou also become weak as we? art thou also become like unto us?
 Thy pomp is brought down to Sheol, and the noise of thy viols: the worm is spread under thee, and the worms cover thee.
How art thou fallen, Lucifer, Son of the Morning Star?
how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the Nations! For thou has said in thine heart,
I will Ascend into Heaven. I will exalt my throne above the Stars of God: I will sit also upon the Mount of the Council, in the Sides of the North:
I will Ascend above the heights of the clouds,
I will be like the Most High.
Yet thou shalt be brought down to Sheol,
to the Sides of the Pit.

...And it shall come to pass in that Day, that YHWH shall punish the Host of the High Ones that are on High, and the kings of the Earth upon the Earth. And they shall be gathered together, as prisoners are gathered in the Pit, and shall be Shut Up in the Prison, and after many days shall they be visited.

...Thy dead men shall live, together with my dead body shall they arise. Awake and sing, ye that dwell in the dust: for thy dew is as the dew of herbs, and the Earth shall cast out the Rephaim.

– Isaiah 14:9-15; 24:20-21; 26:19

Jesus Preaches the Harrowing of Hell in the Same Place as Enoch Pronounced Their Doom, at the Foot of Mount Hermon

When Jesus came into the coasts of Casaerea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I the Son of Man am?...And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the Living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jonah: for flesh and blood hath not Revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in Heaven. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this Rock I will build my Church;
and the Gates of Hades
shall not prevail against it.

– Matthew 16:13, 16-18 [There exists a cave at the foot of the mountain, a source of the Jordan River, believed

by many at the time to be a portal to the Underworld.]

Thou hast ascended on High, thou hast led Captivity Captive:
thou hast received Gifts for men: yea, for the Rebellious also,
that YHWH God might Dwell among them.

– Psalm 68:18

As for thee also, by the Blood of thy Covenant I have sent forth
thy Prisoners out of the Pit wherein is not water.

– Zechariah 9:11

But the Righteousness which is of Faith speaketh on this wise,
Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into Heaven? (that is,
to bring Christ down from Above:.) or, Who shall descend into
the Deep? (that is, to bring Up Christ again from the Dead.)

– Romans 10:6-7

But unto every one of us is given Grace according to the Measure
of the Gift of Christ. Wherefore he saith, When he ascended Up
on High; he led Captivity Captive, and gave Gifts unto men.
(Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first
into the Lower Parts of the Earth? He that descended is the same
also that ascended Up far Above All Heavens,
that he might fill All Things.)

– Ephesians 4:7-19

Evidence that the Science of the Bible is Astrology

And God said, Let there be Lights in the Firmament of the Heaven,
to Divide the Day from the Night; **and let them be for Signs**
and for seasons, and for days, and years; and let them be
for Lights in the firmament of the Heaven to give Light
upon the Earth; and it was so.

And God Made two Great Lights; the Greater Light
to rule the Day, and the Lesser Light to rule the Night:
he Made the Stars also.

And God set them in the Firmament of the Heaven
to give Light upon the Earth, and to Rule over the Day
and over the Night, and to Divide the Light
from the Darkness: and God Saw that it was Good.

– Genesis 1:14-18[This Creation account assumes belief
in Astrology, for the Sun and the Moon have Power.]

Which Commandeth the Sun, and it riseth not;
and Sealeth up the Stars.

Which alone spreadeth out the Heavens,
and treadeth upon the waves of the Sea.

Which makes Arcturus [Ursa Major],
Orion, and Pleiades [7 Stars],
and the Chambers of the South.

...Canst thou bind the Sweet Influences of Pleiades,
or loose the bonds of Orion?

Canst thou bring forth Mazzaroth [the 12 Signs
of the Wheel of the Zodiac] in his season?
or canst thou guide Arcturus with her sons?

Knowest thou the Ordinances of Heaven?
canst thou set the Dominion thereof in the Earth?

– Job 9:7-9; 38:31-33

And he [Joseph] dreamed yet another dream,
and told it his brothers, and said, Behold,
I have dreamed a dream more; and, behold,
the Sun and the Moon and the 11 Stars
made obeisance to me.

– Genesis 37:9 [Alluding to the Zodiac,
where Jacob's 12 sons are equated with
the 12 Signs or Stars: Joseph is the 12th.]

Seek him that Maketh the 7 Stars and Orion,
and turneth the Shadow of Death into the Morning,
and Maketh the Day Dark with Night:
that Calleth for the waters of the Sea,
and poureth them out upon the face of the Earth:

YHWH is his Name.

– Amos 5:8

When I consider thy Heavens, the Work of thy Fingers,
the Moon and the Stars, which thou hast Ordained;

What is man, that thou art mindful of him?
and the Son of Man, that thou visiteth him?

For thou has Made him a little lower than the Angels,
and hast Crowned him with Glory and Honor.

Thou Madest him to have Dominion over the Works of thy Hands;
thou has Put All Things under his feet:

all sheep and oxen, yea, and the beasts of the field;
 the fowl of the air, and the fish of the sea,
 and whatsoever passeth through the paths of the seas.
 O YHWH our Lord, how excellent is thy Name
 in all the Earth.
 – Psalm 8:3-9

The Heavens Declare the Glory of God; and the Firmament
 Showeth his Handiwork.
 Day unto Day Uttereth Speech, and Night
 unto Night Showeth Knowledge.
 There is no Speech or Language, where their Voice is not Heard.
 Their Line is gone out through all the Earth,
 and their Words to the end of the World.
 In them hath he set a Tabernacle for the Sun.
 – Psalm 19:1-4

The Lines are fallen unto me in Pleasant Places;
 yea, I have a Goodly Heritage.
 – Psalm 16:6

Lift up your eyes on high, and behold who hath
 Created these things, that bringeth out their Host
 by Number: he Calleth them all by Names
 by the greatness of his Might, for that he is Strong
 in Power; not one faileth.
 – Isaiah 40:26

To him that Made Great Lights: for his Mercy
 endureth for ever.
 The Sun to Rule by Day: for his Mercy
 endureth for ever.
 The Moon and the Stars to Rule the Night:
 for his Mercy endureth for ever.
 – Psalm 136:7-9

He Telleth the Number of the Stars;
 he Calleth them all by their Names.
 Great is our Lord and of Great Power:
 his Understanding is Infinite.
 – Psalm 147:4-5

They fought them from Heaven; the Stars
in their Courses fought against Sisera.
– Judges 5:20

The Condemnation of the Use of Astrology by The Nations and Evil Doers

And lest thou lift up thine eyes unto Heaven, and when thou
seest the Sun, and the Moon, and the Stars, even All the Host
of Heaven, shouldest be driven to worship them, and serve them,
which YHWH thy God hath Divided unto All Nations under the
Whole Heaven. But YHWH hath taken you, and brought you forth
out of the iron furnace, even out of Egypt, to be unto him a people
of Inheritance, as ye are this day.
– Deuteronomy 4:19-20

The Chaldeans answered before the king, and said, There is not
a man upon the Earth that can Show the king's matter: therefore
there is no king, lord, nor ruler that asked such things of any
Magician, or Astrologer, or Chaldean. And it is a rare thing
that the king requireth, and there is none other that can Show it
before the king, except the gods, whose dwelling is not with Flesh.

...And now the Wise Men, the Astrologers, have been brought
before me, that they should read this writing, and make Known
to me the Interpretation thereof; but they could not Show the
Interpretation of the thing: and I have heard of thee, that thou
canst make Interpretations, and dissolve doubts: now if thou canst
read the writing, and make Known to me the Interpretation thereof,
thou shalt be clothed with scarlet, and have a chain of gold about thy
neck, and shalt be the Third Ruler in the Kingdom.
– Daniel 2:10-11; 5:15-16

Thou art wearied in the multitude of thy counsels. Let now the
Astrologers, the Stargazers, the Monthly Prognosticators stand up,
and save thee from these things that shall come upon thee.
– Isaiah 47:13

Manasseh was twelve years old when he began to reign, and reigned
fifty and five years [the longest reign among the 22 Christ Kings]
in Jerusalem. And his mother's name was Hephzibah. And he did
that which was Evil in the Sight of YHWH, after the abominations
of the Gentiles, whom YHWH cast out before the children of Israel.

For he built up again the High Places which Hezekiah his father had destroyed; and he reared up altars to Baal, and made an Asherah, as did Ahab king of Israel; and worshipped All the Host of Heaven, and served them. And he built altars in the House of YHWH, of which YHWH said, In Jerusalem will I put my Name.

And he built altars for All the Host of Heaven in the two courts of the House of YHWH. And he made his son pass through the fire, and Observed Times, and used Enchantments, and dealt with Familiar Spirits and Wizards [female and male witches]: he wrought much Wickedness in the Sight of YHWH, to provoke him to anger.

– II Kings 21:1-6

And the King [Josiah] commanded Hilkiah the High Priest, and the Priests of the Second Order, and the Keepers of the Door, to bring forth out of the Temple of YHWH all the vessels that were made for Baal, and for Asherah, and for All the Host of Heaven: and he burned them without Jerusalem in the fields of Kidron, and carried the ashes of them unto Beth-El. And he put down the idolatrous priests, whom the Kings of Judah had ordained to burn incense in the High Places in the cities of Judah, and in the places round about Jerusalem; them also that burned incense to Baal, to the Sun, and to the Moon, and to the Planets, and to All the Host of Heaven.

And he brought out the Asherah from the House of YHWH, without Jerusalem, unto the Brook Kidron, and burned it at the Brook Kidron, stamped it small to powder, and cast the powder thereof upon the graves of the children of the people.

And he brake down the houses of the Sacred Male Prostitutes, that were by the House of YHWH, where the women [Sacred Prostitutes] wove hangings for the Asherah. [Other versions of the Bible translate “houses” as “quarters,” “ritual booths,” “buildings,” and “living quarters,” and instead of them being “by” the House of YHWH, they have “in,” or next to,” the House of YHWH. Since I believe they were in the House of the Forest of Lebanon, I’m more comfortable with “by.” Also, some translators prefer “houses” instead of “hangings,” suggesting that the “hangings” were tents or booths, and the women were Sacred Prostitutes of Asherah and Priestess worshippers of her Image. Asherah was the mother of 70 Sons, who were the gods of the Nations, as well as being the Goddess of Sexual Love and War, and, of course, the wife of YHWH.]

...And he took away the Horses that the Kings of Judah had given to the Sun, at the entering in of the House of YHWH, by the chamber of Nathan-Melech the Chamberlain, which was in the suburbs, and burned the Chariots of the Sun with fire. **And the altars that were on top of the Upper Chamber of Ahaz, which the Kings of Judah had made,** and the altars which Manasseh had made in the two courts of the House of YHWH, did the King beat down from thence, and cast the dust of them unto the Brook Kidron.

– II Kings 23:4-7, 11-12

Evidence of Witchcraft and an Afterlife in Sheol/Hades

And when Saul saw the host of the Philistines,
he was afraid, and his heart greatly trembled.
And when Saul enquired of YHWH, YHWH answered him not,
neither by dreams, nor Urim, nor by prophets.
Then said Saul unto his servants, Seek me a woman that hath
a Familiar Spirit, that I may go to her, and enquire of her.
And his servants said to him, Behold, there is a woman that
hath a Familiar Spirit at Endor. And Saul disguised himself,
and put on other raiment, and he went, and two men with him,
and they came to the woman by night: and he said, I pray thee,
divine unto thee by the Familiar Spirit, and bring me him up,
whom I shall name unto thee.
And the woman said unto him, Behold, thou knowest what Saul
hath done, how he hath cut off those that have Familiar Spirits,
and the Wizards, out of the land: wherefore then layest thou a snare
for my life, to cause me to die?
And Saul sware to her by YHWH, saying, As YHWH liveth,
there shall no punishment happen to thee for this thing.
Then said the woman, Whom shall I bring up unto thee?
And he said, Bring me up Samuel.
And when the woman Saw Samuel, she cried with a loud voice:
and the woman spake to Saul, saying, Why hast thou
deceived me? for thou art Saul.
And the king said unto her, Be not afraid: for what
Sawest thou?
And the woman said unto Saul, I Saw gods ascending out
of the Earth.
And he said unto her, What form is he of?
And she said, An old man cometh up; and he is covered
with a mantle.

And Saul Perceived that it was Samuel, and he stooped with
his face to the ground, and bowed himself.

And Samuel said to Saul, Why hast thou disquieted me.
to bring me up?

And Saul answered, I am sore distressed; for the Philistines
make war against me, and God is departed from me, and
answereth me no more, neither by prophets, nor by dreams:
therefore I have called thee, that thou mayest make Known
unto me what I shall do.

Then said Samuel, Wherefore then dost thou ask of me,
seeing YHWH is departed from thee, and has become
thy enemy? And YHWH hath done to him, as he spake by me:
for YHWH hath rent the kingdom out of thine hand, and given
it to thy neighbor, even to David: because thou obeyest not
the Voice of YHWH, nor executedst his fierce wrath upon
Amelek, therefore hath YHWH done this thing unto thee this day.
Moreover YHWH will also deliver Israel with thee into the hands
of the Philistines: and to morrow shalt thou and thy sons be with me.
YHWH will also deliver the host of Israel into the hands
of the Philistines.

– I Samuel 28:5-19

Therefore Sheol hath enlarged herself, and opened her mouth
without measure: and their glory, and their multitude, and their
pomp, and he that rejoiceth, shall descend into it.

...Sheol from beneath is moved for thee [the King of Babylon]
to meet thee at thy coming [Death]: it stirreth up the Rephaim for thee,
even all the Chief Ones of the Earth; it hath raised up from their
Thrones all the Kings of the Nations.

All they shall speak and say unto thee, Art thou also become weak
as we? art thou also become like unto us?

Thy pomp is brought down to Sheol, and the noise of thy viols:
the worm is spread under thee, and the worms cover thee.

...And they shall be gathered together, as prisoners are gathered
in the Pit, and shall be shut up in the prison, and after many days
shall they be visited.

...I said in the cutting off of my days,
I shall go the Gates of Sheol:
I am deprived of the residue of my years.

...Thy dead men shall Live, together with my dead body shall they Arise. Awake and sing, ye that dwell in the dust: for thy dew is as the dew of herbs, and the Earth shall cast out the Rephaim.

...For Sheol cannot praise thee, Death cannot celebrate thee, they that go down into the Pit cannot hope for thy Truth.
– Isaiah 5:14; 14:9-11; 24:22; 26:19; 38:10,18

When I shall bring thee [Tyre] down with them that descend into the Pit, with the People of Old Time, and shall set thee in the Low Parts of the Earth, in places desolate of Old, with them that go down to the Pit, that them be not inhabited, and I shall set Glory in the Land of the Living.

...To the end that none of all the trees by the waters exalt themselves for their height, neither shoot up their tops among the thick boughs, neither their trees stand up in their height, all that drink water: for they all are delivered unto Death, to the Nether Parts of the Earth, in the midst of the children of men, with them that go down to the Pit.

Thus saith the Lord YHWH, In the day when he [Pharaoh] went down to Sheol I caused a mourning: I covered the Deep for him, and I restrained the Floods thereof, and the Great Waters were stayed: and I caused Lebanon to mourn for him, and all the trees of the field fainted for him. I made the Nations to shake at the sound of his fall, when I cast down him to Sheol with them that descend into the Pit: and all the trees of Eden, the choice and best of Lebanon, all that drink water, shall be comforted in the Nether Parts of the Earth. They also went down into Sheol with him unto them that be slain with the sword; and they that were his arm, that dwelt under his shadow in the midst of the Gentiles. To whom art thou thus like in Glory and in Greatness among the trees of Eden? yet shalt thou be brought down with the trees of Eden unto the Nether Parts of the Earth: thou shalt be in the midst of the uncircumcised with them that be slain by the sword. This is Pharaoh and all his multitude, saith the Lord YHWH.

...There is Meshech, Tubal, and all her multitude, her graves are round about him; all of them uncircumcised, slain by the sword, though they caused their terror in the Land of the Living. And they shall not lie with the Mighty that are fallen of the uncircumcised, which are gone down to Sheol with their

weapons of war: and they have laid their swords under their heads, but their iniquities shall be upon their bones, though they were the terror of the Mighty in the Land of the Living. Yea, thou shalt be broken in the midst of the uncircumcised, and shalt lie with them that are slain with the sword.
 – Ezekiel 26:20; 31:14-18; 32:26-28

If I wait, Sheol is mine house: I have made my bed in the Darkness. I have said to Corruption, Thou art my father: to the worm, Thou art my mother, and my sister.
 And where is now my hope? as for my hope, who shall see it?
 They shall go down to the Bars of the Pit,
 when our rest together is in the dust.
 – Job 17:13-16

Dead things are formed from under the waters, and the inhabitants thereof.
 Sheol is naked before him, and Destruction hath no covering.
 He Stretcheth out the North over the Empty Place,
 and Hangeth the Earth upon Nothing.
 – Job 26:5-7

For Great is thy Mercy toward me; and thou hast Delivered my Soul from Sheol.
 – Isaiah 86:13

For my Soul is full of troubles, and my life draweth nigh unto Sheol. I am counted with them that go down into the Pit: I am as a man that hath no strength; free among the Dead, like the slain that lie in Sheol, whom thou rememberest no more: and they are cut off from thy hand....
 Wilt thou Show Wonders to the Dead? shall the Dead Arise and praise thee? Selah.
 Shall thy Lovingkindness be declared in Sheol?
 Or thy Faithfulness in Destruction?
 Shall thy Wonders be Known in the Dark?
 And thy Righteousness in the Land of Forgetfulness?
 – Psalm 88:3-6, 10-12

If I Ascend Up into Heaven, thou art there:
 If I make my bed in Sheol, behold, thou art there.
 – Psalm 139:8

Let us Swallow them up Alive as Sheol; and whole,
 as those that go down into the Pit.
 – Proverbs 1:12

Sheol and Destruction are before YHWH:
 how much more than the hearts of the children of men?
 – Proverbs 15:11

The Throne of YHWH and His Divine Son on Earth

And they shall make an Ark of shittim wood: two cubits and a half shall be the length thereof, and a cubit and a half the breadth thereof, and a cubit and a half the height thereof. And thou shalt overlay it with pure gold, within and without shalt thou overlay it, and shalt make upon it a crown of gold round about. And thou shalt cast four rings of gold for it, and put them in the four corners thereof; and two rings shall be in the one side of it, and two rings in the other side of it. And thou shalt make staves of shittim wood, and overlay them with gold. And thou shalt put the staves into the rings by the sides of the Ark, that the Ark may be borne with them. The staves shall be in the rings of the Ark; they shall not be taken from it. And thou shalt put into the Ark the Testimony which I shall give thee. And thou shalt make a Mercy Seat of pure gold: two cubits and a half shall be the length thereof, and a cubit and a half the breadth thereof. And thou shalt make two Cherubim of gold, of beaten work shalt thou make them, in the two ends of the Mercy Seat. And make one Cherub on the one end, and the other Cherub on the other end: even of the Mercy Seat shall ye make the Cherubim on the two ends thereof. And the Cherubim shall stretch forth their Wings on high, covering with their Wings, and their faces shall look one to another; toward the Mercy Seat shall the faces of the Cherubim be. And thou shalt put the Mercy Seat above upon the Ark; and in the Ark thou shalt put the Testimony that I shall give thee. And there I will meet with thee, and I will commune with thee from above the Mercy Seat, from between the two Cherubim which are upon the Ark of the Testimony, of all things which I will give thee in Commandment unto the children of Israel.
 – Exodus 25:10-22

O, clap your hands, all ye people; shout unto God
 with the voice of triumph. For YHWH Most High is terrible;
 he is a Great King over all the earth.

...God is gone up with a shout, YHWH with the sound of a trumpet.
 Sing praises to God, sing praises: sing praises unto our King,
 sing praises. For God is the King of all the Earth: sing praises
 with Understanding. God Reigneth over the Gentiles: God sitteth
 upon the Throne of his Holiness. The princes of the people are
 gathered together, even the people of the God of Abraham:
 for the shields of the Earth belong unto God:
 he is Greatly Exalted.
 – Psalm 47:1-2, 5-9

And the king of Sodom went out to meet him [Abram] after his return from
 the Slaughter of Chedorlaomer, and of the kings that were with him,
 at the Valley of Shaveh, which is the King's Dale.
 And Melchizedek King of Salem brought forth bread and wine:
 and he was the Priest of the Most High God [El Elyon].
 And he blessed him, and said, Blessed be Abram of El Elyon,
 Possessor of Heaven and Earth. And Blessed be El Elyon,
 which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand.
 And he gave him tithes of all.
 And the King of Sodom said unto Abram, Give me the persons,
 and take the goods to thyself. **And Abram said to the king of Sodom,**
I have lift up mine hand unto YHWH, El Elyon, the
Possessor of Heaven and Earth, That I will not take from a thread even
 to a shoelatchet, and that I will not take any thing that is thine,
 lest thou shouldest say, I have made Abram rich: save only that which
 the young men have eaten, and the portion of the men, which went with
 me, Abner, Eschol, and Mamre; let them take their portion.
 – Genesis 14:17-24

And the King and his men went to Jerusalem unto the Jebusites,
 ...Nevertheless David took the Strong Hold of Zion.
So David dwelt in the Fort, and called it the City of David.
 And David built round about from Millo and inward.

...And it was told King David, saying, YHWH hath Blessed the
 house of Obed-edom, and all that pertaineth unto him, because of
 the Ark of God. So David went and brought up the Ark of God
 from the house of Obed-edom into the City of David with gladness.
 And it was so, that when they that bare the Ark of YHWH
 had gone six paces, he sacrificed oxen and fatlings.

**And David danced before YHWH with all his might:
and David was girded with a Linen Ephod.**

[A Priest Forever after the Order of Melchizedek.]

So David and all the house of Israel brought up the Ark of YHWH
with shouting, and with the sound of the trumpet.

...And as the Ark of YHWH came into the City of David,
Michal Saul's daughter looked through a window,
and saw King David leaping and dancing before YHWH;
and she despised him in her heart.

And they brought in the Ark of YHWH, and set it in it's Place,
in the midst of the Tabernacle that David had pitched for it:
and David offered burnt-offerings and peace-offerings before YHWH.

...Then David returned to bless his household. And Michal the daughter
of Saul came out to meet David and said, How glorious was the
King of Israel to day, who uncovered himself to day in the eyes of
the handmaids of his servants, as one of the vain fellows shamelessly
uncovereth himself. And David said to Michal, It was before YHWH,
which Chose me before thy father, and before all his house, to appoint
me Ruler of the people of YHWH, over Israel: therefore will I play before YHWH.

...And when the wife of Uriah heard that Uriah her husband was dead, she
mourned for her husband. And when the mourning was past, David sent
and fetched her to his house, and she became his wife, and bare him a son.

But the thing that David had done displeased YHWH.

And YHWH sent Nathan unto David....

And David said unto Nathan, I have sinned against YHWH.

And Nathan said unto David, YHWH also hath put away thy
sin; thou shalt not die. Howbeit, because of this deed thou hast
given great occasion, to the enemies of YHWH to blaspheme,
the child also that is born unto thee shall surely die. And Nathan
departed unto his house. And YHWH struck the child that

Uriah's wife bare unto David, and it was very sick.

David therefore besought God for the child;

and David fasted, and went in,
and lay all night upon the Earth.

– II Samuel 5:6-7, 9; 6:12-18, 20;

11:26 – 12:1a, 13-16

In Judah is God Known; his name is Great in Israel.
In Salem also is his Tabernacle, and his Dwelling Place in Zion.

– Psalm 76:1-2

We will go into his Tabernacles; we will worship at his Footstool.
 Arise, O YHWH, into thy rest; thou, and the Ark of thy strength.
 Let thy Priests be clothed with Righteousness, and let thy Holy Ones
 shout for joy. For thy Servant David's sake turn not away the face
 of thy Christ. YHWH hath sworn in Truth unto David; he will not
 turn from it: of the Fruit of thy body will I set upon thy Throne.
 If thy children will keep my Covenant and my Testimony that I
 shall teach them, their children shall also sit upon thy Throne for
 evermore. For YHWH hath Chosen Zion; he hath desired it for
 his habitation. This is my rest for ever; here will I dwell; for I
 have desired it. I will abundantly Bless her provision: I will satisfy
 her poor with bread. I will also clothe her Priests with Salvation:
 and her Holy Ones shall shout for joy. There I will make the Horn
 of David to Bud: I have Ordained a Lamp for my Christ. His
 enemies will I clothe with shame: but upon himself shall his
 Crown flourish.
 – Psalm 132:7-18

The Earth is YHWH's, and the fulness thereof; the World, and they that
 dwell therein. For he hath founded it upon the Seas, and established it
 upon the Floods. Who shall ascend into the Hill of YHWH?
 or who shall stand in his Holy Place?
 ...Lift up your heads, O ye gates: and be lift up, ye everlasting doors;
 and the King of Glory shall come in. Who is this King of Glory?
 YHWH strong and mighty, YHWH mighty in battle.
 Lift up your heads, O ye gates; even lift them up, ye everlasting doors:
 and the King of Glory shall come in.
 Who is this King of Glory? YHWH of Hosts,
 he is the King of Glory. Selah.
 – Psalm 24:1-3, 7-10

Why do the Gentiles rage, and the people imagine a vain thing?
 The kings of the Earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel
 together, against YHWH, and against his Christ, saying.
 Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us.
 He that sitteth in the Heavens shall laugh: YHWH shall have them in
 derision. Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them
 in his sore displeasure. **Yet have I set my King upon my Holy Hill
 of Zion. I will declare the decree: YHWH hath said unto me,
 Thou art my Son; this day have I Begotten thee.** Ask of me, and I shall
 give thee the Gentiles for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of
 the Earth for thy Possession. Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron;

thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel. Be Wise now therefore, O, ye kings; be instructed ye judges of the Earth. Serve YHWH with Fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little.

Blessed are all they that put their trust in him.

– Psalm 2

YHWH Reigneth, he is clothed in majesty; YHWH is clothed with strength, wherewith he hath girded himself: the World also is established, that it cannot be moved. Thy Throne is established of old; thou art from everlasting.

– Psalm 93:1-2

YHWH said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my Right Hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool. YHWH shall send the rod of thy strength out of Zion: rule thou in the midst of thine enemies...**YHWH hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a Priest for ever after the Order of Melchizedek.** The Lord at thy Right Hand shall strike through kings in the day of his wrath. He shall judge among the Gentiles, he shall fill the places with the dead bodies; he shall wound the heads over many countries.

– Psalm 110:1-2, 4-6

And David Reigned over all Israel; and David excuted Judgment and Justice unto all his people....and David's sons were Priests [in the Order of Melchizedek].

– II Samuel 8:15, 18b

The Davidic Covenant

Also YHWH telleth thee that he will make thee an House. And when thy days be fulfilled, and thou shalt sleep with thy fathers, I will set up thy Seed after thee, which shall proceed out of thy bowels, and I will establish his Kingdom. **He shall build an House for my Name, and I will stablish the Throne of his Kingdom for ever. I will be his Father, and he shall be my Son.** If he commit iniquity, I will chastise him with the rod of men, and with the stripes of the children of men. But my Mercy shall not depart away from him, as I took it from Saul, whom I put away before thee. And thine House and thine Kingdom shall be established for ever before thee: thy Throne shall be establish for ever.

According to all these Words, and according to all this Vision, so did Nathan speak unto David. Then went King David in, and sat before YHWH, and he said, Who am I, O Lord YHWH? and what is my house, that thou has brought me hitherto?

– II Samuel 7:11b-18

King David's New Covenant Is One of Grace

**Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven,
whose sin is covered.
Blessed is the man unto whom YHWH imputeth not iniquity,
and in whose spirit there is no guile.**
– Psalm 31:1-2 [Quoted by Paul
at Romans 4:7-8.]

To Know Good and Evil is Angelic Knowledge

And when the woman of Tekoah spake to the King, she fell on her face to the ground, and did obeisance, and said, Help, O King. And the King said unto her, What aileth thee? And she answered, I am indeed a widow woman, and mine husband is dead. And thy handmaid had two sons, and they two strove together in the field, and there was none to part them, but the one smote the other, and slew him. And behold, the whole family is risen against thine handmaid, and they said, Deliver him that smote his brother, that we may kill him, for the life of his brother whom he slew; and we will destroy the heir also: and so they shall quench my coal which is left, and shall not leave to my husband neither name nor remainder upon the Earth. ...For the King will hear, to deliver his handmaid out of the hand of the man that would destroy me and my son together of the inheritance of God. Then thine handmaid said, The word of my Lord the King shall now be comfortable, **for as an Angel of God, so is my Lord the King to discern Good and Evil; therefore YHWH thy God will be with thee....**To fetch about this form of speech hath thy servant Joab done this thing; and my Lord is Wise, **according to the Wisdom of an Angel of God, to Know all things that are in the Earth.**
– II Samuel 14:4-7, 16-17, 20

Give the King thy Judgments, O God, and thy Righteousness unto the King's Son. He shall judge thy people with Righteousness, and thy poor with Judgment. ...The kings of Tarshish and of the Isles shall bring presents: the kings of Sheba shall offer gifts. Yea, all kings shall fall down before him. ...His Name shall endure for ever: his Name shall be continued as long as the Sun: and men shall be Blessed in him: all Nations shall call him Blessed. Blessed be YHWH God, the God of Israel, who only doeth wondrous things. And Blessed be his Glorious Name for ever: and let the whole Earth be filled with his Glory;
Amen, and Amen.
– Psalm 72:1-3, 10-11, 7-19

Thou Spakest in Vision to thy Holy One, and saidst, I have laid help upon one that is Mighty; I have exalted one Chosen out of the people. I have found David my Servant: with my Holy Oil have I made him Christ; with whom my hand shall be established: mine arm also shall strengthen him. Then the enemy shall not exact upon him; nor the son of wickedness afflict him. And I will beat down his foes before his face, and plague them that hate him. But my Faithfulness and my Mercy shall be with him; and in my Name shall his Horn be exalted. I will set his hand also in the Sea, and his right hand in the Rivers. He shall cry unto me, Thou art my Father, my God, and the Rock of my Salvation. Also I will make him my Firstborn, higher than the kings of the Earth. My Mercy will I keep for him for evermore, and my Covenant shall stand fast with him. His Seed also will I make to endure for ever, and his Throne as the Days of Heaven. If his children shall forsake my Law, and walk not in my judgments: if they break my statutes, and keep not my Commandments; then will I visit their transgression with the rod, and their iniquity with stripes. Nevertheless my Lovingkindness will I not utterly take from him, nor suffer my Faithfulness to fail. My Covenant I will not break, nor alter the thing that has gone out of my lips. Once I have Sworn by my Holiness that I will not Lie unto David. His Seed shall endure for ever, and his Throne as the Sun before me. It shall be established for ever as the Moon, and as a Faithful Witness in Heaven. Selah.

– Psalm 89:19-37 [YHWH can lie. His Oath to David that he will not lie is absolute evidence of the fact.]

O come, let us sing unto YHWH: let us make a joyful noise to the Rock of our Salvation. Let us come before his Presence with Thanksgiving, and make a joyful noise unto him with psalms. For YHWH is a Great God, and a Great King above all gods.

– Psalm 95:1-3

O sing unto YHWH a new song: sing unto YHWH, all the Earth. Sing unto YHWH, Bless his Name; show forth his Salvation from day to day. Declare his Glory among the Gentiles, his Wonders among the people. For YHWH is Great, and greatly to be praised: he is to be Feared above all gods. For all the gods of the Nations are idols: but YHWH made the Heavens.

Honor and majesty are before him; strength and beauty are in his Sanctuary.

– Psalm 96:1-6

YHWH Reigneth; let the people tremble: he sitteth between the Cherubim; let the Earth be moved. YHWH is Great in Zion; and he is High above all the people. Let them praise thy Great and Terrible Name: for it is Holy.

The King's strength also loveth Judgment; thou dost establish equity, thou executeth Judgment and Righteousness in Jacob. Exalt ye YHWH our God, and worship at his Footstool; for he is Holy
Exalt YHWH our God, and
 worship at his Holy Hill; for YHWH our God is Holy.
 – Psalm 99:1-5, 9

David's Song of Deliverance

And David spake unto YHWH the words of this song
 in the Day that YHWH had delivered him out of the hand
 of all his enemies, and out of the hand of Saul:
 and he said, YHWH is my Rock,
 and my Fortress, and my deliverer;
 The God of my Rock; in him will I trust;
 he is my Shield, and the Horn of my Salvation,
 my High Tower, and my Refuge; my Savior;
 thou savest me from violence.
 I will call on YHWH,
 who is worthy to be praised;
 so shall I be saved from my enemies.
 When the Waves of Death compassed me,
 the floods of ungodly men made me afraid;
 The Sorrows of Sheol compassed me about:
 the Snares of Death prevented me;
 In my distress I called upon YHWH,
 and cried to my God;
 and he did Hear my voice out of his Temple,
 and my cry did enter into his Ears.
 Then the Earth shook and trembled:
 the Foundations of Heaven moved and shook,
 because he was Wroth.
 There went up a smoke out of his nostrils,
 and fire out of his Mouth devoured:
 coals were kindled by it.
 He bowed the Heavens also, and came down:
 and Darkness was under his Feet
 And he rode upon a Cherubim, and did Fly:
 and he was Seen upon the Wings of the Wind.
 And he Made Darkness Pavilions round about him,
 Dark Waters, and Thick Clouds of the Skies.

Through the Brightness before him,
 were coals of fire kindled.
 YHWH thundered from Heaven,
 and the Most High Uttered his Voice.
 And he sent out Arrows, and scattered them.
 lightning, and discomfitted them.
 And the Channels of the Sea Appeared,
 the Foundations of the World were Discovered,
 at the rebuking of YHWH,
 at the Blast of his Breath of his Nostrils.
 He sent from above, he took me,
 he drew me out of Many Waters;
 He delivered me from my strong enemy,
 and from them that hated me;
 for they were too strong for me.
 They prevented me in the Day of my Calamity
 but YHWH was my Stay.
 He brought me forth also into a large place;
 he delivered me, because he Delighted in me.
 YHWH Rewarded me according to my Righteousness;
 according to the Cleanness of my hands hath he Recompensed me.
 For I have kept the Ways of YHWH,
 and have not wickedly departed from my God.
 For all his Judgments were before me;
 and as for his statutes, I did not depart from them.
 I was also Upright before him,
 and have kept myself from mine iniquity.
 Therefore YHWH hath Recompensed me
 according to my Righteousness;
 according to my Cleanness in his Eye Sight.
 With the merciful thou wilt Show thyself Merciful,
 and with the Upright man thou wilt Show thyself Upright.
 With the Pure thou wilt Show thyself Pure;
 and with the froward thou wilt Show thyself Unsavory.
 And the afflicted people thou wilt Save;
 but thine Eyes are upon the haughty,
 that thou mayest bring them down.
 For thou art my Lamp, O YHWH:
 and YHWH will Lighten my Darkness.
 For by thee I have run through a troop:
 by my God have I leaped over a wall.

As for God, his Way is Perfect;
 the Word of YHWH is tried:
 he is a Buckler to all them that trust in him.
 For who is God, save YHWH?
 and who is a Rock, save our God?
 God is my Strength and Power:
 and he Maketh my Way Perfect.
 He maketh my feet like hinds' feet;
 and setteth me upon my High Places.
 He Teacheth my hands to War;
 so that a bow of steel is broken by my arms.
 Thou hast also given me the Shield of thy Salvation:
 and thy Gentleness hath Made me Great.
 Thou hast enlarged my steps under me;
 so that my feet did not slip.
 I have pursued mine enemies, and destroyed them:
 and turned not again until I had consumed them.
 And I have consumed them, and wounded them,
 that they could not arise: yea, they are fallen under my feet.
 For thou hast girded me with strength to battle:
 them that rose up against me hast thou subdued under me.
 Thou hast also give me the necks of mine enemies,
 that I might destroy them that hate me.
 They looked, but there was none to save:
 even unto YHWH, but he answered them not.
 Then did I beat them as small as the dust of the Earth.
 I did stamp them as the mire of the street,
 and did spread them abroad.
 Thou also hast delivered me from the strivings of my people,
 thou hast kept me to be Head of the Gentiles;
 a people which I know not shall serve me.
 Strangers shall submit themselves unto me;
 as soon as they hear, they shall be obedient unto me.
 Strangers shall fade away, and they shall be afraid
 out of their close places.
 YHWH Liveth: and Blessed be my Rock;
 and exalted be the God of the Rock of my Salvation.
 It is God that Avengeth me,
 and that bringeth down the people under me.

And that bringeth me forth from mine enemies:
 thou also hath Lifted me Up on High above them
 that rose up against me;
 thou hast delivered me from the violent man.
 Therefore I will give thanks unto thee, O YHWH,
 among the Gentiles, and I will sing praises unto thy Name.
 He is the Tower of Salvation for his King:
 and Showeth Mercy to his Christ,
 unto David, and to his Seed for evermore.
 – II Samuel 22/Psalm 18 [The prelude to this Psalm
 states that David wrote it after God delivered him
 from the hand of all his enemies, and the hand of Saul.]

Origin of Jethro's Kenite YHWH Cult in Edom/ Petra

And he [Moses] said, YHWH came from Sinai,
 and rose up from Seir unto them;
 he Shined forth from Mount Paran,
 and he came with ten thousand of Holy Ones:
 from his Right Hand went a Fiery Law for them.
 – Deuteronomy 33:2

YHWH, when thou wentest out of Seir,
 when thou marchedst out of the Field of Edom,
 the Earth trembled, and the Heavens dropped,
 the clouds also dropped water.
 The mountains melted from before YHWH,
 even that Sinai from before
 YHWH God of Israel.
 – Judges 5:4-5

[Indicating that Mt. Sinai/Horeb is not in the Sinai Peninsula,
 but in Petra, the Land of Edom, or in the words of Paul,
 in Arabia: Galatians 4:25.]

God came from Teman, and the Holy One
 from Mount Paran.
 Selah.

His Glory Covered the Heavens,
 and the Earth was full of his Praise.
 – Habakkuk 3:3

The Pre-Deluge Origin of the YHWH Cult Predates the Kenite/Midianite Cult

And to Seth, to him also there was born a son;
and he [Seth] called his name Enos;
then began men to call upon the Name of YHWH.
– Genesis 4:26

Another Source Claims the Name of YHWH Was Only Revealed to Moses

And I Appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac,
and unto Jacob, by the Name of El Shaddai:
[God of the Mountains, or Many Breasts,
but almost always translated as Almighty God]
but by my Name YHWH was I not Known to them.
– Exodus 6:3 [thus negating almost all of
the references to YHWH in the Book of Genesis.]

Other Names for YHWH

And Abraham planted a Grove in Beer-sheba [Well of the Oath],
and called there on the Name of YHWH, El Olam [the Everlasting God].
– Genesis 21:33

And he took up his Oracle and said, Balaam the son of Beor hath said,
and the man whose Eyes are Open hath said:
He hath said, which Heard the Words of El, which Saw the Vision
of Shaddai, falling into a trance, but having his eyes Open.

...And he took up his Oracle, and said, Balaam the son of Beor hath said,
and the man whose Eyes are Open hath said:
He hath said, which Heard the Words of El, and Knew the Knowledge
of Elyon [Most High], which Saw the Vision of Shaddai,
falling into a trance, but having his Eyes Open.
– Numbers 24:3-4, 15-16

And Joshua said, Hereby ye shall Know that El Chay [the Living
God] is among you.
– Joshua 3:10

And they gave him threescore and ten pieces of silver
 out of the House of Baal-Berith [Lord of the Covenant]....
 And when all the men of the Tower of Shechem heard that,
 they entered into an Hold of the House of El-Berith [God of
 the Covenant].
 – Judges 9:4, 46

YHWH Originally Equated With El and Baal, Canaanite Gods

El

And the king of Sodom went out to meet him after his return from the
 Slaughter of Chedorlaomer, and of the kings who were with him, at the
 Valley of Shaveh, which is the King's Dale.
 And Melchizedek King of Salem brought forth bread and wine,
 and he was the Priest of El Elyon [God Most High].
 And he Blessed him, and said, Blessed be Abram of El Elyon,
 Possesor of Heaven and Earth: and Blessed be El Elyon,
 which hath delivered thine enemy's into thy hand.
 And he gave him tithes of all.
 And the King of Sodom said unto Abram, Give me the persons,
 and take the goods to thyself.
 And Abram said to the king of Sodom, I have lift up mine hand
 to YHWH, El Elyon, the Possessor of Heaven and Earth.
 – Genesis 14:17-22 [The Israelites had many names for El:
 El Shaddai (God of the Mountains), El Olam (God of Eternity);
 El Berith (God of the Covenant) and so forth.

Baal

And David arose, and went with all the people that were with him
 from Baale of Judah, to bring up thence the Ark of God, whose
 Name is called by the Name of YHWH of Hosts [The Stars,
 the Army of God] that Dwelleth between the Cherubim.
 – II Samuel 6:2 [Enough said. There are many more
 instances, and if you do a word study you should agree.
 Wait! I'll give one more example.]

And David came to Baal-Perazim, and David smote there, and said,
 YHWH hath broken forth upon mine enemies before me,
 as the breach of waters. Therefore he called the name of that
 place Baal-Perazim
 – II Samuel 5:20

YHWH Synonymous with El and Baal

YHWH...the Holy One over the gods, prepare (yourself)
 [to] Bless Baal on a Day of War...to the Name of El
 on a Day of War.
 – 8th Century B.C. Inscription Found at Kuntillet ‘Arjud

YHWH Replaces Baal in an Old Canaanite Hymn

Give unto YHWH, O ye Sons of God, give unto YHWH
 Glory and Strength.
 Give unto YHWH the Glory due unto his Name;
 worship YHWH in the Beauty of Holiness.
 The Voice of YHWH is upon the waters:
 The God of Glory Thundereth:
 YHWH is upon many waters.
 The Voice of YHWH is Powerful:
 The Voice of YHWH is full of Majesty.
 The Voice of YHWH breaketh the cedars;
 yea, YHWH breaketh the Cedars of Lebanon.
 He maketh them also to skip like a calf;
 Lebanon and Sirion like a young unicorn.
 The Voice of YHWH divideth the flames of fire.
 The Voice of YHWH shaketh the wilderness;
 YHWH shaketh the Wilderness of Kadesh.
 YHWH maketh the hinds to calve,
 and discovereth the forests: and in his Temple
 doth every one speak of his Glory.
 YHWH sitteth upon the Flood;
 yea, YHWH sitteth King Forever.
 YHWH will give strength unto his people;
 YHWH will Bless his people with Peace.
 – Psalm 29

Jethro the Kenite, the Priest of Midian, Directs Moses to the Holy Mountain

Now Moses kept the flock of Jethro, his father in law,
the Priest of Midian: and he led the flock to the backside
of the desert, and came to the Mountain of God,
even to Horeb.

...When Jethro, the Priest of Midian, Moses' father in law,
heard of all that God had done for Moses,
and for Israel his people, and that YHWH
had brought Israel out of Egypt.

...And Jethro, Moses' father in law, came with his sons
and his wife unto Moses into the Wilderness,
where he encamped at the Mount of God:
and he said unto Moses, I thy father in law,
Jethro, am come unto thee, and thy wife,
and her two sons with her.

And Moses went out to meet his father in law,
and did obeisance, and kissed him;
and they asked each other of their welfare;
and they came into the Tent.

And Moses told his father in law all that
YHWH had done unto Pharaoh and to the
Egyptians for Israel's sake, and all the travail
that had come upon them by the way,
and how YHWH delivered them.

And Jethro rejoiced for all the Goodness which
YHWH had done to Israel, whom he had delivered
out of the hands of the Egyptians.

Now I Know that YHWH is greater than all gods:
for in the thing wherein they dealt proudly
he was above them.

And Jethro, Moses' father in law, took a burnt-offering
and sacrifices for God: and Aaron came,
and all the Elders of Israel, to eat bread with
Moses' father in law before God.

– Exodus 3:1; 18:1, 5-12

[The Kenites were descendants of Cain,
thus proving that not all people,
other than Noah and his family,
died in the Flood; the same holds

true for the Nephilim: Genesis 6:4;
of course YHWH's Name might have been
forgotten by all except the Kenites.]

The Fear of YHWH

I Form the Light, and Create Darkness,
I Make Good, and Create Evil.
I YHWH Do All these Things.
– Isaiah 45:7 [1QIsa]

Woe unto them that call Evil Good,
and Good Evil:
that put Darkness for Light,
and Light for Darkness;
that put Bitter for Sweet,
and Sweet for Bitter!
– Isaiah 5:20

And God Saw Every Thing that he had Made,
and, Behold, it was Very Good.
– Genesis 1:31a

The Fear of YHWH is the beginning of Knowledge:
but Fools despise Wisdom and Instruction.
– Proverbs 1:7

The Fear of YHWH is the beginning of Wisdom:
and the Knowledge of the Holy is Understanding.
– Proverbs 9:10

The Angel of YHWH encampeth round about them
that Fear him, and delivereth them.
...O Fear YHWH, ye his Holy Ones:
for there is no want to them that Fear him.

...Come, ye children, hearken unto me:
I will Teach you the Fear of YHWH.
What man is he that desireth Life,
and loveth many days,
that he may See Good?

Keep thy tongue from Evil,
and thy lips from speaking guile.
Depart from Evil, and do Good;
seek Peace, and pursue it.

The Eyes of YHWH are upon the Righteous,
and his Ears are open unto their cry.
The Face of YHWH is against them that do Evil,
to cut-off the remembrance of them from the Earth.
The Righteous cry, and YHWH Heareth,
and delivereth them out of all their troubles.
YHWH is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart:
and sayeth such as be of a contrite spirit.
– Psalm 34:7, 9, 11-18

He hath Made Every Thing Beautiful in his time:
also he hath Set the World in their heart,
so that no man can find out the Work
that God Maketh from the Beginning to the End.
I Know there is no Good in them,
but for a man to rejoice, and to do Good in his life.
And also that every man should eat and drink,
and enjoy the Good of all his labor, it is the Gift of God.
I Know that whatever God doeth, it shall be for ever:
nothing can be put to it, nor any thing taken from it:
and God doeth it, that man should Fear before him.

...Keep thy foot when thou goest to the House of God,
and be more ready to hear, than to give
the Sacrifice of Fools: for they consider not
that they do Evil.
Be not rash with thy mouth, and let not thine heart
be hasty to utter any thing before God:
For God is in Heaven, and thou upon Earth:
therefore let thy words be few.
For a Dream cometh through the multitude
of business: and a Fool's voice is known
by a multitude of words.
When thou vowest a vow unto God,
defer not to pay it;
for he hath no pleasure in Fools:
pay that which thou has vowed.

Better is it that thou shouldest not vow,
 than that thou shouldest vow and not pay.
 Suffer not thy mouth to cause thy flesh to sin;
 neither say thou before the Angel [with YHWH's
 Name in him], that it was an error;
 wherefore should God not be angry at thy voice,
 and destroy the work of thine hands.
 For in the multitude of Dreams and many Words
 there are also divers vanities: but Fear thou God.

...Wisdom is Good with an Inheritance;
 and by it there is profit to them that see the sun.
 For Wisdom is a Shadow,
 and Money is a Shadow:
 but the excellency of Knowledge is,
 that Wisdom giveth life to them that have it.

...Though a sinner do Evil an hundred times,
 and his days be prolonged,
 yet surely I Know that it shall be Well
 with them that Fear God,
 which Fear before him.
 But it shall not be Well with the Wicked,
 neither shall he prolong his days,
 which are as a Shadow;
 because he Feareth not before God.

...Let us Hear the conclusion of the whole matter:
 Fear God, and keep his commandments:
 for this is the whole duty of man.
 For God shall bring every Work into Judgment,
 with every Secret Thing,
 whether it be Good,
 or whether it be Evil.
 – Ecclesiastes 3:11-14; 5:1-7; 7:11-12;
 8:12-13; 10:19:12:13-14

The Love of YHWH

YHWH is my shepherd, I shall not want.
 He maketh me to lie down in green pastures:
 He leadeth me beside the still waters.
 He restoreth my Soul: He leadeth me in the paths
 of Righteousness for His Name's sake.
 Yea, though I walk through the Valley of the Shadow of Death,
 I will fear no Evil: for thou art with me;
 thy rod and thy staff they comfort me.
 Thou preparest a table before me in the
 presence of mine enemies:
 thou anointest my head with oil:
 my cup runneth over.
 Surely Goodness and Mercy shall follow me
 all the days of my life: and I will dwell
 in the House of YHWH forever.
 – Psalm 23

Wisdom, Understanding, Knowledge, and Instruction
The Goddess Asherah Becomes Wisdom

My son, despise not the chastening of YHWH;
 neither be weary of his correction:
 For whom YHWH loveth he correcteth;
 even as a Father the Son in whom he delighteth.
 Happy is the man that findeth Wisdom,
 and the man that getteth Understanding.
 For the merchandise of it is better than the
 merchandise of silver, and the gain thereof than fine gold.
 She is more precious than rubies: and all the things
 thou canst desire are not to be compared unto her.
 Length of days is in her right hand; and in her
 left hand riches and honor.
 Her ways are ways of pleasantness,
 and all her paths are Peace.
She is a Tree of Life to them that lay hold upon her.
 YHWH by Wisdom hath founded the Earth;
 by Understanding hath he established the Heavens.
 By his Knowledge the depths are broken up,
 and the clouds drop down the dew.

My son, let not them depart from thine eyes:
 keep Sound Wisdom and Discretion;
 so shall they be Life unto thy Soul,
 and Grace to thy neck.
 Then shalt thou walk in thy way safely,
 and thy foot shall not stumble.
 When thou liest down,
 thou shalt not be afraid:
 yea, thou shalt lie down,
 and thy sleep shall be sweet.
 Be not afraid of sudden fear,
 neither of the desolation of the Wicked,
 when it cometh.
 For YHWH shall be thy confidence,
 and shall keep thy foot from being taken.

...Get Wisdom, get Understanding:
 forget it not; neither decline from the words of my mouth.
 Forsake her not, and she shall preserve thee;
 Love her and she shall keep thee.
Wisdom is the Principal Thing;
 therefore get Wisdom:
 and with all thy getting get Understanding.
 Exalt her, and she shall promote thee:
 she shall bring thee to honor,
 when thou dost embrace her.
 She shall give to thine head an ornament of Grace:
 a Crown of Glory shall she deliver to thee.

...Say unto Wisdom, Thou art my Sister;
 and call Understanding thy Kinswoman.

...Doth not Wisdom cry? and Understanding put forth her Voice?
 She standeth in the top of High Places,
 by the way in the places of the paths.
 She crieth at the gates, at the entry of the city,
 at the coming in at the doors.
 Unto you, O men, I Call;
 and my Voice is to the sons of man.
 O ye Simple, Understand Wisdom;
 and ye Fools, be ye of an Understanding Heart.

Hear; for I will Speak of Excellent Things;
 and the Opening of my Lips shall be Right Things.
 For my Mouth shall Speak Truth;
 and Wickedness in an Abomination to my Lips.
 All the Words of my Mouth are in Righteousness;
 there is nothing froward or perverse in them.
 They are all plain to him that Understandeth,
 and Right to them that find Knowledge.
 Receive my Instruction, and not silver;
 and Knowledge rather than choice gold.
 For Wisdom is better than rubies;
 and all the things that may be desired
 are not to be compared to it.
 I Wisdom dwell with Prudence,
 and find out Knowledge of Witty Inventions.
 The Fear of YHWH is to hate Evil:
 pride, and arrogancy, and the Evil Way,
 and the froward mouth, do I hate.
 Counsel is mine, and Sound Wisdom:
 I am Understanding; I have strength.
 By me Kings reign, and Princes decree Justice.
 By me Princes rule, and Nobles,
 even all the Judges of the Earth.
 I Love them that Love me;
 and those that seek me early shall find me.
 Riches and Honor are with me;
 yea, durable Riches and Righteousness.
 My Fruit is better than gold;
 and my Revenue than choice silver.
 I lead in the Way of Righteousness,
 in the Midst of the Paths of Judgment:
 that I may cause those that Love me
 to Inherit Substance;
 and I will fill their treasures.
 YHWH Possessed me in the Beginning of his Way,
 before his Works of Old.
 I was set up from Everlasting,
 from the Beginning, or ever the Earth was.
 When there were no Depths,
 I was brought forth;
 when there were no Fountains abounding with water.

Before the mountains were settled,
 before the hills was I brought forth:
 while as yet he had not Made the Earth,
 nor the fields, nor the highest part of the dust of the World.
 When he Prepared the Heavens, I was there:
 when he set a Compass upon the Face of the Depth:
 when he established the clouds above:
 when he strengthened the Fountains of the Deep:
 When he gave to the Sea his decree,
 that the waters should not pass his commandment:
 when he Appointed the Foundations of the Earth:
 then I was by him: and I was daily his Delight,
 rejoicing always before him:
 rejoicing in the habitable part of his Earth:
 then I was by him, as one brought up with him;
 and my Delight were with the sons of men
 Now therefore hearken unto me, O ye Children:
 for Blessed are they that keep my Ways.
 Hear Instruction, and be Wise, and refuse it not.
 Blessed is the man that Heareth me,
 watching daily at my Gates,
 waiting at the Posts of my Doors.
 For whoso findeth me findeth Life,
 and shall obtain Favor of YHWH.
 But he that sinneth against me
 wrongeth his own Soul:
 all they that hate me love Death.
 Wisdom hath buildeth her House,
 she hath hewn out her Seven Pillars:
 she has killed her beasts; she hath mingled her wine;
 she hath also furnished her table.
 She hath sent forth her Maidens:
 she crieth upon the Highest Places of the city,
 Whoso is Simple, let him turn in hither:
 as for him that wanteth Understanding,
 she sayeth to him,
 Come, eat of my bread, and drink of the wine
 which I have mingled.
 Forsake the Foolish, and Live;
 and go in the Way of Understanding.

...A True Witness delivereth Souls:
 but a Deceitful Witness speaketh Lies.
 In the Fear of YHWH is strong confidence:
 and his Children shall have a Place of Refuge.
 The Fear of YHWH is a Fountain of Life,
 to depart from the Snares of Death.

...The Eyes of YHWH are in every Place,
 beholding the Evil and the Good.
 A wholesome tongue is a Tree of Life:
 but perverseness therein is a breach of the spirit.

...The Fear of YHWH is the Instruction of Wisdom;
 and before honor is humility.
 The preparations of the heart in man,
 and the Answer of the tongue, is from YHWH.
 All the ways of man are clean in his own eyes;
 but YHWH weigheth the spirits.
 Commit thy works unto YHWH,
 and thy thoughts shall be established.
 YHWH hath Made All Things for himself:
 yea, even the Wicked for the Day of Evil.
 Every one that is proud in heart is an Abomination to YHWH:
 though hand join in hand, he shall not be unpunished.
 By Mercy and Truth Iniquity is purged:
 and by the Fear of YHWH men depart from Evil.

...He that getteth Wisdom Loveth his own Soul:
 he that keepeth Understanding shall find Good.
 A False Witness shall not be unpunished,
 and he that speaketh Lies shall perish.

...Who hath Ascended up into Heaven, or Descended?
 Who hath gathered the Wind in his fists?
 Who hath bound the waters in a garment?
 Who hath established all the ends of the Earth?
 What is his Name,
 and what his Son's Name?
 If thou canst tell?
 Every Word of God is Pure:
 he is a Shield unto them that put their trust in him.

Add thou not unto his Words,
 lest he reprove thee,
 and thou be found to be a Liar.
 – Proverbs 3:11-.26; 4:5-9; 7:4; 8:1-36; 9:1-6:
 14:25-27; 15:3-4, 33 - 16:1-6; 19:8-9; 30:4-6

David Purchases the Temple Mount from the Previous Jebusite King

YHWH Moves David to Sin

**And again the Anger of YHWH was kindled against Israel,
 and he moved David against them to say, Go, Number Israel
 and Judah....**

And David's heart smote him after that he had Numbered
 the people. And David said unto YHWH, I have Sinned
 Greatly in that I have done; and now, I beseech thee, O YHWH,
 take away the Iniquity of thy Servant; for I have done very
 Foolishly.

For when David was up in the morning, the Word of YHWH
 came unto the Prophet Gad, David's Seer, saying, Go and say
 unto David, Thus saith YHWH, I offer thee three things; choose
 thee one of them, that I may do it unto thee.

So Gad came to David, and told him, and said unto him,
 Shall seven years of famine come unto thee in thy Land?
 or wilt thou flee three months before thine enemies,
 while they pursue thee? or that there be three day's pestilence
 in thy Land? now Advise, and See what Answer I shall return
 to him that Sent me.

And David said unto Gad, I am in a Great Strait, Let us fall now
 into the Hand of YHWH, for his Mercies are Great: and let me
 not fall into the hand of man.

So YHWH Sent a Pestilence upon the Land from the morning
 even to the Time Appointed; and there Died of the people from
 Dan even to Beer-Sheba seventy thousand men.

And when the Angel stretched out his hand upon Jerusalem,
 to Destroy it, YHWH Repented him of the Evil, and said to
 the Angel that Destroyed the people, It is enough: Stay now
 thine hand. And the Angel of YHWH was by the Threshing-
 Place of Arauna the Jebusite.

And David spake unto YHWH when he Saw the Angel
 that smote the people, and said, Lo, I have Sinned and I have
 done Wickedly; but these sheep, what have they done?

Let thy Hand, I Pray thee, be against me, and against
my father's House.

And Gad came that day to David, and said unto him,
Go up, rear an altar unto YHWH in the Threshing-
Floor of Arauna the Jebusite.

And David, according to the saying of Gad, went up
as YHWH Commanded.

And Arauna looked, and saw the King and his servants
coming on toward him: and Arauna went out, and bowed
himself before the King on his face upon the ground.

And Arauna said, Wherefore is the Lord my King come
to his servant?

And David said, To buy the Threshingfloor of thee, to build
an altar to YHWH, that the Plague may be Stayed from the people.
And Arauna said unto David, Let my Lord the King take and offer up
what seemeth Good unto him: behold, here be oxen for burnt-sacrifice,
and threshing instruments and other instruments of the oxen for wood.

All these things did Arauna, as a King, give unto the King.
YHWH thy God Accept thee.

And the King said unto Arauna, Nay; but I will surely buy it of thee
at a price; neither will I offer burnt-offerings unto YHWH my God
of that which cost me nothing.

So David bought the Threshingfloor and the oxen for fifty shekels
of silver. And David built there an altar unto YHWH, and offered
Burnt-offerings and Peace offerings. So YHWH was Intreated
for the Land, and the Plague was Stayed from Israel.

– II Samuel 24:1, 10-25 [This was a hard lesson to take
for the Scribe Ezra in the Babylonian Exile, for he edits
the text drastically in I Chronicles 21 as shown below,
to free any accusation that God moved David to Sin.]

Satan Moves David to Sin

**And Satan stood up against Israel, and provoked David
to Number Israel...**

And David said unto God, I have Sinned Greatly,
because I have done this thing: but now, I beseech thee,
do away the Iniquity of thy Servant; for I have done very
Foolishly.

And YHWH Spake unto Gad, David's Seer, saying,
Go and tell David, saying, Thus saith YHWH, I offer thee
three things; choose thee one of them, that I may do it unto thee.

And Gad came to David, and said unto him, Thus saith YHWH,
 Choose thee: either three years' famine; or three months to be
 Destroyed before thy foes, while that the sword of thine enemies
 overtake thee; or else three days the Sword of the YHWH,
 even the Pestilence, in the Land, and the Angel of YHWH
 Destroying throughout all the coasts of Israel. Now therefore
 Advise thyself what word I shall bring again to him that Sent me.
 And David said unto Gad, I am in a Great Strait; let me fall now
 into the Hand of YHWH; for Very Great are his Mercies: but let
 me not fall into the hand of man.

So YHWH Sent Pestilence upon Israel: and there fell of Israel
 seventy thousand men.

And God Sent an Angel unto Jerusalem to Destroy it; and as he
 was Destroying, YHWH beheld, and he Repented him of the Evil,
 and said to the Angel that Destroyed, It is enough, Stay now thine hand.
 And the Angel of YHWH stood by the Threshingfloor of Ornan the
 Jebusite.

And David lifted up his eyes, and Saw the Angel of YHWH stand
 between the Earth and the Heaven, having a drawn Sword in his hand
 stretched out over Jerusalem. Then David and the Elders of Israel,
 who were clothed in sackcloth, fell upon their faces.

And David said unto God, Is it not that I commanded the people
 to be Numbered? even I it is that have Sinned and done Evil indeed;
 but as for these sheep, what have they done? let thine Hand, I Pray
 thee, O YHWH my God, be on me, and on my father's House;
 but not on thine people, that they should be Plagued.

Then the Angel of YHWH Commanded Gad to say to David,
 that David should go up, and set up an altar unto YHWH in
 the Threshingfloor of Ornan the Jebusite.

And David went up at the saying of Gad, which he spake
 in the Name of YHWH.

And Ornan turned back, and Saw the Angel; and his four sons
 with him hid themselves. Now Ornan was threshing wheat.
 And as David came to Ornan, Ornan looked and saw David, and
 went out of the threshingfloor, and bowed himself to David
 with his face to the ground.

Then David said to Ornan, Grant me the Place of this threshing-
 floor, that I may build an altar therein unto YHWH; thou shalt
 grant it me for the full price; that the Plague may be stayed
 from the people.

And Ornan said unto David, Take it to thee, and let my Lord the King do which is Good in his eyes; lo, I give thee the oxen also for burnt-offerings, and the threshing instruments for wood, and the wheat for the meal-offering, I give it all. And David said to Ornan, Nay; but I will verily buy it for the full price: for I will not take that which is for YHWH, nor offer burnt-offerings without cost.

So David gave to Ornan the Place six hundred shekels of gold by weight. And David built there an altar unto YHWH, and offered burnt-offerings, and Called upon YHWH; and he Answered him from Heaven by fire upon the altar of burnt-offering.

And YHWH Commanded the Angel; and he put up his Sword again into the sheath thereof.

At that time that David Saw that YHWH had Answered him in the Threshingfloor of Ornan the Jebusite, then he sacrificed there. For the Tabernacle of YHWH, which Moses made in the Wilderness, and the altar of the burnt-offering, were at that season in the High Place at Gibeon.

But David could not go before it to Inquire of God: for he was afraid because of the Sword of the Angel of YHWH.

– I Chronicles 21:1, 8-20 [It is easy to see how Ezra removed the motivation to Number the people from YHWH to Satan. Ornan is most likely an alternate way of saying Arauna, but the offerings and the price paid for the threshingfloor are totally contradictory, and the story is increasingly embellished. More importantly, the Kingship of Arauna is omitted.

I believe when David took Jerusalem from the Jebusites, it was a bloodless coup, for his mother, and the mother of his two sisters, was the High Priestess of Asherah, and one of the sons of one of his sisters, was Joab, who took the city for David, after he entered the city surreptitiously through the Karstic limestone water shafts of the Gihon Spring. The Jebusite King although deposed, was allowed to keep his property, the lucrative threshingfloor on top of Mount Moriah that became the Temple Mount, and the future site of Solomon's Temple, after David constructed the altar to YHWH. This is another instance

where accounts are changed and any argument that these accounts don't contradict is Evil.]

David Brings the Ark into Jerusalem and Performs Sacrifices as King-Priest After the Order of Melchizedek

Again, David gathered together all the chosen men of Israel, thirty thousand. And David arose, and went with all the people that were with him from Baale of Judah, to bring up from thence the Ark of God, whose Name is called by the Name of YHWH of Hosts that Dwelleth between the Cherubim....

And it was so, that when they that bare the Ark of YHWH had gone six paces, he sacrificed oxen and fatlings.

And David danced before YHWH with all his might: and David was girded with a Linen Ephod.

So David and all the House of Israel brought up the Ark of YHWH with shouting, and with the sound of the trumpet.

And as the Ark of YHWH came into the City of David, Michal Saul's daughter looked through a window, and saw King David leaping and dancing before YHWH; and she despised him in her heart.

And they brought in the Ark of YHWH, and set it in its Place, in the midst of the Tabernacle that David had pitched for it; **and David offered burnt-offerings, and peace-offerings before YHWH. And as soon as David had made an end of offering burnt-offerings and peace-offerings, he Blessed the people in the Name of YHWH of Hosts.**

– II Samuel 6:1-2, 13-18

David's Sons Were Priests After the Order of Melchizedek

And David Reigned over all Israel; and David executed Judgment and Justice unto all his people. And Joab, the son of Zeruah was over the Host; and Jehoshaphat, the son of Ahilud was Recorder; and Zadok the son of Ahitub, and Abimelech, the son of Abiathar were the Priests; and Seraiah was the Scribe; and Benaiah the son of Jehoiada was over both Cherethites and the Pelethites;

and David's Sons were Priests.

– II Samuel 8:15-18 [The Cherethites and Pelethites were mercenaries from the collapsed Minoan Empire, to wit, from Crete and the Grecian Islands. The KJV translates "cohen," as "Chief Rulers," instead of rightfully as "Priests." This becomes apparent as various sons perform sacrifices.]

Absalom, Adonijah, and Solomon Perform Priestly Sacrifices

And Absalom sent for Ahithophel the Gilonite, David's Counselor, from his city, even from Giloh, **while he offered sacrifices**. And the conspiracy was strong: for the people increased continually with Absalom.

– II Samuel 15:12

And Adonijah slew sheep and oxen and fat cattle by the Stone of the Serpent, which is by En-Rogel, and called all his Brothers the King's Sons, and all the men of Judah the King's servants....

And Bathsheba bowed, and did obeisance unto the King.

And the King said, What wouldst thou?

And she said unto him, My Lord, thou Swearest by YHWH thy God unto thine Handmaid, saying, Assuredly, Solomon thy Son shall Reign after me, and he shall sit upon my Throne.

And now, behold, Adonijah reigneth; and now, my Lord the King, thou knowest it not: **and he hath slain oxen and fat cattle and sheep in abundance**, and hath called all the Sons of the King, and Abiathar the Priest, and Joab the Captain of the Host: but Solomon thy Servant hath he not called.

– I Kings 1:9, 17-19 [You might ask, what is the significance of sacrificing by the Stone of the Serpent? Canaan had long practiced some form of serpent worship, especially ones made of metal.

Maciej Munnich states in "The Cult of Bronze Serpents in Ancient Canaan and Israel" (World Union of Jewish Studies, Jerusalem 2008): "Canaan – a land inhabited by many nations – shows scholars interested in ancient religions an unusually rich landscape of beliefs....One such religious phenomenon is the cult of metal serpents. This cult is firmly attested in archaeological data..." (P. 2/20).]

And Jonathan answered and said to Adonijah, Verily, our Lord King David hath made Solomon King. And the King hath sent with him Zadok the Priest, and Nathan the Prophet, and Benaiah the son of Jehoiada, and the Cherethites, and the Pelethites, and they have caused him to Ride upon the King's Mule: and Zadok the Priest and Nathan the Prophet have Anointed him King in Gihon; and they are come up from thence rejoicing, so that the City rang again.

This is the noise ye have heard. And also Solomon sitteth on the Throne of the Kingdom.

– I Kings 1:43-46 [This is, of course, the basis of the Prophecy in Zechariah 9:9: “Rejoice greatly, O Daughter of Zion; shout, O Daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee; he is Just, and having Salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass.” This scripture being noted when Jesus entered Triumphantly as the Rightful King into Jerusalem and the Temple, riding King David’s Mule (Matthew 21:1-14).]

And Solomon stood before the Altar of YHWH in the presence of all the Congregation of Israel, and spread forth his hands towards Heaven....**And the King, and all Israel with him, offered sacrifice before YHWH. And Solomon offered a sacrifice of peace-offerings, which he offered unto YHWH, two and twenty thousand oxen, and an hundred and twenty thousand sheep.** So the King and all the children of Israel dedicated the House of YHWH.

– I Kings 8:62-63

Turn! Turn! Turn!

To every thing there is a Season,
and a Time for every Purpose under Heaven:
a Time to be born, and a Time to die;
a Time to plant, and a Time to pluck up
that which has been planted;
A Time to kill, and a Time to heal;
a Time to break down, and a Time to build up;
a Time to weep, and a Time to laugh;
a Time to mourn, and a Time to dance;
a Time to cast away stones, and a Time
to gather stones together;
a Time to embrace, and a Time
to refrain from embracing;
a Time to get, and a Time to lose;
a Time to keep, and a Time to cast away;
a Time to rend, and a Time to sew;
a Time to keep silence, and a Time to speak;

a Time to love, and a Time to hate;
 a Time of war, and a Time of peace,
 – Ecclesiastes 3:1-8

[The song by Pete Seeger and the Byrds
 adds the phrase after “peace”: “I swear
 it’s not too late.”]

The Wisdom of King Solomon

And God Gave Solomon Wisdom and Understanding
 exceeding much, and largement of heart, even as the sand
 that is on the sea shore.

And Solomon’s Wisdom excelled the wisdom of all the children
 of the East Country, and all the wisdom of Egypt.
 For he was Wiser than all men; than Ethan the Ezrahite,
 and Heman, and Chalco, and Darda, the sons of Mahol:
 and his Fame was in All Nations round about.

The Solomonic Enlightenment

And he spake three thousand proverbs: and his songs
 were a thousand and five. And he spake of trees, from the
 cedar tree that is in Lebanon even unto the hyssop that
 springeth out of the wall: he spake also of beasts, and of fowl,
 and of creeping things, and of fishes.

And there came of all people to hear the Wisdom of Solomon
 from all kings of the Earth, which had heard of his Wisdom.
 – I Kings 4:29-34 [During this period the Scriptures began
 to take form that dealt with the history, legends, and myths
 of Israel up to that period of time.]

Eat, Drink, and Be Merry

And Gaal the son of Ebed came with his brothers, and went over
 to Shechem: and the men of Shechem put their confidence in him.
 And they went out unto the fields, and gathered their vineyards,
 and trode the grapes, **and made merry**, and went into the House
 of their God, **and did eat and drink**, and cursed Abimelech.
 – Judges 9:26-27

He brought me to the Banqueting House [the House of the Forest of Lebanon], and his Banner over me was Love.

Stay me with flagons, comfort me with apples:

for I am sick with Love.

His left hand is under my head, and his right hand doth embrace me. I charge you, O ye Daughters of Jerusalem, by the roes, and by the hinds of the field, that ye stir not up, nor awake my love, till he please.

– Song of Solomon 2:4-7

Ye that put far away the Evil Day, and cause the Seat of Violence to come near; that lie upon beds of ivory, and stretch themselves upon their couches, **and eat the lambs out of the flock, and the calves out of the midst of the stall; that chant to the sound of the viol, and invent to themselves instruments of music, like David; that drink wine in bowls,** and anoint themselves with the chief ointments: but they are not grieved for the affliction of Joseph.

– Amos 6:3-6

Contra

And in that day did the Lord YHWH of Hosts
Call to weeping, and to mourning, and to baldness,
and to girding with sackcloth.

And behold, joy and gladness, slaying oxen,
and killing sheep, eating flesh, and drinking wine:
let us eat and drink; for tomorrow we shall Die.

– Isaiah 22:12-13

And he spake a Parable unto them, saying,
The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully:
and he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do,
because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?
And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns,
and build greater; and there I will bestow all my fruits
and goods. And I will say to my Soul, Soul, thou hast
much goods laid up for many years: take thine ease,
eat, drink, and be merry.

But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thine Soul shall be required of thee; then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided? So is he that layeth up treasures for himself, and is not rich toward God.

– Luke 12:16-21

If after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me if the Dead Rise not?

let us eat and drink: for tomorrow we Die.

Be not deceived; Evil Communications corrupt Good Manners.

– I Corinthians 15:32-33

David and Solomon Worshipped as the Sons of God

O YHWH God of Abraham, Isaac, and of Israel, our fathers, keep this for ever in the imagination of the thoughts of the heart of thy people, and prepare their heart unto thee: and Give unto Solomon my son a perfect heart, to keep thy commandments, thy testimonies, and thy statutes, and to do all these things, and to build the Palace, for the which I have made provision. And David said to all the congregation, Now bless YHWH your God. And all the congregation blessed YHWH God of their fathers, and bowed down their heads, **and worshipped YHWH, and the King.**

And they sacrificed sacrifices unto YHWH, and offered burnt-offerings unto YHWH, on the morrow after that day, even a thousand bullocks, a thousand rams, and a thousand lambs, with their drink-offerings, and sacrifices in abundance for all Israel: and did eat and drink before YHWH on that day with Great Gladness. And they made Solomon the son of David King the second time, and Anointed him unto YHWH to be the Chief Governor, and Zadok to be Priest.

Then Solomon sat on the Throne of YHWH as King instead of David his father, and prospered; and all Israel obeyed him.

And all the Princes, and the Mighty Men, and all the sons likewise of King David, submitted themselves unto Solomon the King. And YHWH magnified Solomon exceedingly in the sight of all Israel, and bestowed upon him such Royal Majesty as had not been on any king before him in Israel.

– I Chronicles 29:18-25 [Note that there is no mention of the rebellion of Adonijah and betrayal of Abiathar the Priest.]

Evidence of Dream Divination/Incubation

And God came unto Balaam at night, and said unto him,
If the men come to call thee, rise up, and go with them;
but yet the Word which I shall Say unto thee, that shall
thou do. And Balaam rose up in the morning, and
saddled his ass, and went with the Princes of Moab.

– Numbers 22:20-21

In Gibeon YHWH Appeared to Solomon, in a Dream
by night: and God said, Ask what I shall give thee.
And Solomon said, Thou hast Showed unto thy Servant
David my father Great Mercy, according as he walked
before thee in Truth, and in Righteousness, and in Uprightness
of heart with thee; and thou hast kept for him this Great Kindness,
that thou hast given him a Son to sit on his Throne, as it is this day.

And now, O YHWH my God, thou hast Made thy Servant
King instead of David my father; and I am but a little child:

I Know not how to go out or come in.

And thy Servant is in the midst of thy people which thou hast Chosen,
a great people, that cannot be numbered nor counted for multitude.

Give therefore thy Servant an Understanding heart to Judge
thy people, that I may Discern between Good and Evil:

for who is able to Judge this thy so great a people?

And the speech pleased YHWH, that Solomon had asked this thing.
And God said unto him, Because thou has asked this thing, and hast
not asked for thyself long life; neither hast asked riches for thyself,
nor has asked the life of thine enemies; but has asked for thyself
Understanding to Discern Judgment; Behold, I have done according
to thy words: I have given thee a Wise and Understanding heart:

so that there was none like thee before thee, neither after thee
shall any arise like unto thee.

And I have also given thee that which thou hast not askcd,
both riches and honor: so that there shall not be any among
the Kings like unto thee all thy days.

And if thou wilt walk in my Ways, to keep my statutes
and my commandments, as thy father David did walk,
then I will lengthen thy days.

And Solomon awoke; and behold, it was a Dream.

And he came to Jerusalem, and stood before
 the Ark of the Covenant of YHWH,
 and offered up burnt-offerings, and offered
 Peace-offerings, and made a Feast to all his servants.
 Then came there two women, that were [Sacred Prostitutes
 of Asherah], unto the King, and stood before him.
 And the one woman said, O my Lord, I and this woman dwell
 in one House; and I was delivered of a child with her in the House.
 And it came to pass the third day after that I was delivered,
 that this woman was delivered also: and we were together;
 there was no stranger with us in the House, save we two
 in the House. And this woman's child died in the night;
 because she overlaid it. And she arose at midnight,
 and took my son from beside me, while thine Handmaid
 slept, and laid it in her bosom, and laid her dead child
 in my bosom. And when I arose in the morning to give
 my child suck, behold, it was dead:
 but when I had considered it in the morning, behold,
 it was not my son, which I did bear.
 And the other woman said, Nay; but the living is my son,
 and the dead is thy son. Thus they spake before the King.
 Then said the King, The one saith, This is my son that liveth,
 and thy son is the dead: and the other saith, Nay; but thy son
 is the dead, and my son is the living.
 And the King said, Bring me a sword. And they brought
 a sword before the King. And the King said,
 Divide the living child in two, and give half to the one,
 and half to the other.
 Then spake the woman whose the living child was unto
 the King, for her bowels yearned upon her son, and she said,
 O my Lord, give her the living child, and in no wise slay it.
 But the other said, Let it be neither mine nor thine, but Divide it.
 Then the King answered and said, Give her the living child,
 and in no wise slay it: she is the mother thereof.
 And all Israel heard of the Judgment which the King
 had Judged; and they feared the King for they saw
 that the Wisdom of God was in him, to do Judgment.
 – I Kings 3:9-28 [It really gets me whenever lawyers
 or judges say they are going to do like Solomon
 and split the baby – meaning to equally divide

the property in controversy – when Solomon never split the baby in half, but gave it whole to the rightful party.]

King Solomon's Paradox

Answer not a Fool according to his Folly,
lest thou also be like unto him.

Answer a Fool according to his Folly,
lest he be wise in his own conceit.
– Proverbs 26:4-5

Solomon's Temple: the House of YHWH

And it came to pass in the four hundred and eightieth year after the children of Israel were come out of the land of Egypt, in the fourth year of Solomon's reign over Israel, in the month of Zif, which is the second month, that he began to build the House of YHWH.

And the House which King Solomon built for YHWH, the length thereof threescore cubits, and the breadth thereof twenty cubits, and the height thereof thirty cubits.

And the Porch before the Temple of the House, twenty cubits was the length thereof, according to the breadth of the House; and ten cubits was the breadth thereof before the House.

And for the House he made Windows of Narrow Lights.
...And the House, when it was in building, was built of stone made ready before it was brought thither: so that there was neither hammer nor axe nor any tool of iron heard in the House, while it was in building.

The Door and Spiral Stairway to the Upper Chambers Above the Oracle

The Door for the Middle Chamber was in the Right Shoulder of the House: and they went up with Winding Stairs into the Middle Chamber, and out of the Middle into the Third.

– II Kings 6:1-4; 7-8 [Most modern scholars explain this by inventing a door outside of the House, entering the side chambers which are stated explicitly not to be part of the House. In my experience,

only the Freemasons understand the location of the door to the Upper Chambers, but even they don't understand the true location of the Spiral Staircase and Chambers themselves. My guess is that the doorway was on the Right Shoulder before the wall sealing off the Oracle; otherwise, in a strict interpretation, it would be in the corner inside the Oracle; but that is unlikely since one would have to enter the Oracle to gain entrance to it.]

The Door Also Known as the Third or King's Entry

And the Covert for the Sabbath that they had built in the House, and the King's Entry without, turned he from the House of YHWH for the king of Assyria.
– II Kings 16:18

Then Zedekiah the King sent, and took Jeremiah unto him into the Third Entry that is in the House of YHWH: and the King said unto Jeremiah, I will ask thee a thing; hide nothing from me.
– Jeremiah 38:14

Upper Middle Chamber Above Oracle For Dream Divination/Incubation Parlors

Then David gave to Solomon his son the Pattern of the Porch, and of the Houses thereof, and of the Treasuries thereof, and of the Upper Chambers thereof, and of the Inner Parlors, and of the Place of the Mercy Seat.
...And for the Altar of Incense refined gold by weight; and gold for the Pattern of **the Chariot of the Cherubim**, that spread out their wings, and covered the Ark of the Covenant of YHWH.
...And he overlaid the Upper Chambers with gold.
– I Chronicles 28:11, 18; II Chronicles 3:9b
[One cannot argue that the Upper Chambers mentioned in I & II Chronicles refer to the side storage chambers described in I Kings, and do it honestly, because the Chronicler never discusses the side storage chambers.]

Thus, the Upper Chambers can only be in one place:
Above the Oracle!]

And when Athaliah the mother of Ahaziah saw that her son was dead,
 she arose and destroyed all the Seed Royal.
 But Jehosheba the daughter of King Joram, sister of Ahaziah,
 took Joash the son of Ahaziah, and stole him from among
 the King's sons which were slain; and they hid him, even him
 and his nurse, **in the Bedchamber** from Athaliah,
 so that he was not slain. And he was with her hid
 in the House of YHWH six years.
 – II Kings 11:1-3

Evidence of Hieros Gamos in Upper Chamber

Arise, my love, my fair one, and come away.
 O my dove, thou art in the clefts of the rocks,
in the Secret Places of the Stairs,
 let me see thy countenance, let me hear thy voice,
 for sweet is thy voice,
 and my countenance is comely.
 Take us the foxes, the little foxes,
 that spoil the vines: for our vines
 have tender grapes.
 My beloved is mine, and I am his:
 he feedeth among the lilies.
 Until the day break, and the shadows flee away,
 turn, my beloved, and be thou like a roe
 or a young hart upon the mountains of Bether.
 – Song of Solomon 2:13b-17

Evidence of Dream Divination/Incubation in the Secret Covert or Upper Chambers

David therefore besought God for the child; and David fasted,
and went in, and lay all night upon the earth.
 – II Samuel 12:16

And the King went to Gibeon to sacrifice there; for that was
 the Great High Place; a thousand burnt-offerings did Solomon
 offer upon that altar.
 In Gibeon YHWH Appeared to Solomon in a Dream by night.
 – I Kings 3:4-5a

YHWH, how are they increased that trouble me. Many
there are they that rise up against me. Many there be
which say of my soul, There is no help for him in God.

Selah.

But thou, O YHWH, art a shield for me; my Glory, and the
lifter up of mine head. I cried unto YHWH with my voice,
and he heard me out of his Holy Hill.

Selah.

I laid me down and slept; I awaked; for YHWH sustained me.
I will not be afraid of ten thousands of people, that have set
themselves against me round about.

Arise, O YHWH; Save me, O my God; for thou hast smitten
all mine enemies upon the cheek bone; thou hast broken
the teeth of the ungodly.

Salvation belongeth unto YHWH; thy Blessing is upon thy people.

Selah.

– Psalm 3, a Psalm of David when he fled
from Absalom his son.

Hear me when I call, O God of my Righteousness:
thou hast enlarged me when I was in distress;
have Mercy upon me, and Hear my prayer.

O ye sons of men, how long will ye turn my Glory into Shame?
how long will ye love vanity, and seek after leasing?

Selah.

But Know that YHWH hath set apart him that is godly for himself:

YHWH will Hear when I call unto him.

Stand in awe, and Sin not:

commune with your own heart upon your bed, and be still.

Selah.

Offer the Sacrifices of Righteousness,
and put your trust in YHWH.

There be many that say, Who will show us any Good?
YHWH, lift thou up the Light of thy Countenance upon us.

Thou hast put gladness in my heart,
more than in the time that their corn and their wine increased.

I will both lay me down in peace, and sleep:
for thou, YHWH, only makest me dwell in safety.

– Psalm 4, A Psalm of David

Hear the Right, O YHWH, attend unto my cry,
 give Ear unto my prayer, that goeth not out of feigned lips.
 Let my Sentence come forth from thy Presence;
 let thine Eyes behold the things that are equal.
 Thou hast proved mine heart;
 thou has visited me in the night;
 thou hast Tried me, and shall find nothing;
 I am purposed that my mouth shall not transgress.
 Concerning the works of men, by the Word of thy Lips
 I have kept me from the Paths of the Destroyer.
 Hold up my goings in thy Paths, that my footsteps slip not.
 I have called upon thee, for thou wilt Hear me, O God:
 incline thine Ear unto me, and Hear my speech.
 Show thy marvelous Lovingkindness,
 O thou that Savest by thy Right Hand them which put
 their trust in thee from those that rise up against them.
 Keep me as the Apple of the Eye,
 Hide me under the Shadow of thy Wings.
 From the Wicked that oppress me, from my deadly enemies,
 who compass me about. They are inclosed in their own fat:
 with their mouth they speak proudly.
 They have now compassed us in our steps:
 they have set their eyes bowing down to the earth;
 Like as a lion that is greedy of his prey,
 and as it were a young lion lurking in secret places.
 Arise, O YHWH, disappoint him, cast him down:
 deliver my Soul from the Wicked, which is thy Sword:
 from men which are thy Hand, O YHWH,
 from men of the world, which have their portion in this life,
 and whose belly thou fillest with thy Hid Treasure:
 they are full of children, and leave the rest of their
 substance to their babes.
 As for me, I will behold thy Face in Righteousness:
 I shall be satisfied, when I awake, with thy Likeness.
 – Psalm 17, A Prayer of David

Upper Third Chamber Above Oracle is the King's Covert

For in the time of trouble he shall hide me in his Pavilion:
 in the Secret of his Tabernacle shall he hide me;
 he shall set me upon a Rock.
 – Psalm 27:5

Thou shalt hide them in the Secret of thy Presence from the pride of man;
thou shalt keep them Secretly in a Pavilion from the strife of tongues.

– Psalm 31:20

I will abide in thy Tabernacle for ever; I will trust
in the Covert of thy Wings. Selah.

– Psalm 61:4

He that Dwelleth in the Secret Place of the Most High
shall abide under the Shadow of Shaddai.

– Psalm 91:1

And the altars that were on the top of the Upper Chamber of Ahaz,
which the Kings of Judah had made.

– II Kings 23:12a

Queen of Sheba Breathless Over Spiral Stairway

And when the Queen of Sheba had seen all Solomon's Wisdom,
and the House that he had built, and the meat of his table, and
the sitting of his servants, and the attendance of his ministers,
and their apparel, and his cupbearers, and his Ascent
by which he went up unto the House of YHWH,
she was Breathless....

And King Solomon gave unto the Queen of Sheba all her Desire,
whatsoever she asked, beside that which Solomon gave
of his Royal Bounty.

– I Kings 10:4-5 [The Ethiopian legend that Solomon
impregnated the Queen of Sheba is based on these verses.

It isn't hard to imagine Solomon giving the Queen a tour
of the House of YHWH, then entering the King's Entrance,
Ascending the Spiral Stairway to the Upper Chamber,
for a good old Hieros Gamos quickie.]

Except for Spiral Stairway in the Wall, No Stairs Inside the House of YHWH

Neither shalt thou go up by steps unto mine altar,
that thy nakedness be not discovered thereon.

– Exodus 20:26 [Many modern scholars believe
the missing ten cubits above the Oracle are
explained best by raising the Oracle ten
cubits above the main level with stairs

leading up to it, thus violating the Exodus prohibition of stairs leading to an Altar. Solomon built no altar for animal sacrifice; he used the one made under the direction of Moses. That altar was not replaced until King Ahaz had Uriah the High Priest make a new one, built on a Damascus model; it was shaped like a stepped pyramid, and is the same one presented in 1 Chronicles 4:1 as the one Solomon built. Coincidentally it had the same dimensions as the Upper Chambers in the Temple; thus exposing the kind of editing of Scripture by Ezra after the Captivity. By the way in the same section, [6:13], it is said that he also made a scaffold, which happens to be the same dimensions as the altar Moses built. (Cf. Exodus 27:1).]

The Oracle For the Ark of the Covenant

And he built twenty cubits on the sides of the House, both the floor and the walls with boards of cedar: he even built them for it within, even for the Oracle, even for the Most Holy Place.
 ...And the Oracle he prepared in the House within to set there the Ark of the Covenant of YHWH.
 And the Oracle in the forepart was twenty cubits in length, and twenty cubits in breadth, and twenty cubits in the height thereof: and he overlaid it with pure gold; and so covered the altar which was of cedar.
 So Solomon overlaid the House within with pure gold: and he made a Partition by the Chains of Gold before the Oracle; and he overlaid it with gold.
 And the whole House he overlaid with gold, until he had finished all the House: also the whole altar that was by the Oracle he overlaid with gold.
 And within the Oracle he made two Cherubim of olive tree, each ten cubits high. And five cubits was the one wing of the Cherubim, and five cubits the other wing of the Cherubim: from the uttermost part of the one wing unto the uttermost part of the other were ten cubits. And the other Cherubim was ten cubits:

both the Cherubim were of one measure and one size.
The height of the one Cherubim was ten cubits, and so was it of
the other Cherubim.

And he set the Cherubim within the Inner House: and they stretched
forth the wings of the Cherubim, so that the wing of the one touched
the one wall, and the wing of the other Cherubim touched the other wall:
and their wings touched one another in the midst of the House.

And he overlaid the Cherubim with gold.

– I Kings 6:16, 19-28 [Everyone wants to know what
happened to the Ark of the Covenant, but no one asks
what happened to the two Giant Cherubim known as
the Chariot of the Cherubim? Amazingly, almost
all Christians ignore the fact that the Ark and the
Cherubim are graven images forbidden by the
Ten Commandments. (Exodus 20:4)]

The Chariot of the Cherubim

And for the Altar of Incense refined gold by weight; and gold for
the Pattern of **the Chariot of the Cherubim**, that spread their wings,
and covered the Ark of the Covenant of YHWH.

– II Samuel 28:18

King Solomon made himself a Chariot of the wood of Lebanon.
He made the Pillars thereof of silver, the bottom thereof of gold,
the covering of it of purple, the midst thereof being paved with love,
for the Daughters of Jerusalem.

Go forth, O ye Daughters of Zion, and behold King Solomon
with the Crown wherewith his Mother crowned him in the days
of his espousals, and in the day of the gladness of his heart.

– Song of Solomon 3:9-11

The Two Trees of Eden on the Porch Before the House of YHWH

For he [Hiram from Tyre] cast Two Pillars of bronze, of eighteen cubits
high apiece: and a line of twelve cubits did compass either of them about.
And he made Two Chapters of molten bronze, to set upon the tops of the
Pillars: the height of the one Chapter was five cubits, and the height of
the other Chapter was five cubits: and Nets of Checker Work, and Wreaths
of Chain Work, for the Chapters which were on top of the Pillars; seven
for the one Chapter, and seven for the other Chapter.

And he made the Pillars, and two rows round about upon the one Network, to cover the Chapters that were upon the top, with Pomegranates: and so did he for the other Chapter. And the Chapters that were upon the top of the Pillars were of Lily Work in the Porch, four cubits. And the Chapters upon the Two Pillars had Pomegranates also above, over against the belly which was by the Network: and the Pomegranates were two hundred in rows round about upon the other Chapter.

And he set up the Pillars in the Porch of the Temple: and he set up the Right Pillar, and called the name thereof Jachin, and he set up the Left Pillar, and called the name thereof Boaz. And upon the top of the Pillars was Lily Work: so was the work of the Pillars finished.

– I Kings 7:15-22 [I imagine the House of YHWH to be a recreation of the Garden of Eden, where there were Two Trees guarded by Cherubim, suggesting that the Forbidden Fruit were Pomegranates.]

II Chronicles Invents Three Objects Not in I Kings

Moses Builds a Bronze Altar for the Tabernacle

And thou shalt make an altar of shittim wood, five cubits long, and five cubits broad; the altar shall be foursquare: and the height thereof shall be three cubits. And thou shalt make the horns of it upon the four corners thereof; his horns shall be of the same: and thou shalt overlay it with bronze.

– Exodus 27:1-2

Solomon Uses Moses' Bronze Altar for His Temple

The same day did the King hallow the middle of the Court that was before the House of YHWH: for there he offered burnt-offerings and meat-offerings, and the fat of the peace-offerings: because the Bronze Altar that was before YHWH was too little to receive the burnt-offerings, and meat-offerings, and the fat of the peace-offerings.

– I Kings 8:22, 64 [The account in I Kings does not mention Solomon building another altar outside the Temple. Nor does he cover the Ark with a Veil, but with Golden Chains instead. II Chronicles invents both an outside altar other than the one Moses built; in fact, it has Solomon building the Damascus Stepped Pyramid altar; plus a scaffold before the altar to stand on. The scaffold has the same dimensions as the Bronze Altar that Moses built. The Damascus Stepped

Pyramid Altar has the same dimensions as the Upper Chambers inside the House of YHWH (see below). The original purpose of the Temple was to be the King's Private Chapel, not a place for regular animal sacrifice. But that changed.]

II Chronicles Invents a Bronze Altar

Moreover he made an altar of bronze, twenty cubits the length thereof, and twenty cubits the breadth thereof, and ten cubits the height thereof.

– II Chronicles 4:1

Ezekiel Gives the Design

And these are the measures after the altar after the cubits; the cubit is a cubit and an hand breadth; even the bottom shall be a cubit, and the breadth a cubit, and the border thereof by the edge thereof round about shall be a span: and this shall be the higher place of the altar.

And from the bottom upon the ground even to the lowest settle shall be two cubits, and the breadth one cubit: and from the lesser settle even to the greater settle shall be four cubits, and the breadth one cubit.

So the altar shall be four cubits; and from the altar and upwards shall be four horns.

And the altar shall be twelve cubits long, twelve broad, square in the four squares thereof.

And the settle shall be fourteen cubits long and fourteen broad in the four squares thereof: and the border about it shall be half a cubit; and the bottom thereof shall be a cubit about: and his stairs shall look toward the East.

And he said unto me, Son of man, thus saith the Lord YHWH; These are the ordinances of the altar in the day when they shall make it, to offer burnt-offerings thereon, and to sprinkle blood thereon.

– Ezekiel 43:13-18 [This altar was after the pattern of an altar King Ahaz saw in Damascus (see below). The fact that this altar has stairs is a dead giveaway.]

King Ahaz Replaces Moses' Bronze Altar with a Stepped Pyramid Altar

And King Ahaz went to Damascus to meet Tilgath-pileser King of Assyria, and saw an altar that was at Damascus: and King Ahaz sent to Urijah the Priest the fashion of the altar, and the pattern of it, according to all the workmanship thereof. And Urijah the Priest built an altar according to all that King Ahaz had sent from Damascus: so Urijah the Priest made it against King Ahaz came from Damascus. And when the King was come from Damascus, the King saw the altar:

And the King approached to the altar, and offered thereon.

And he burnt his burnt-offering and his meat-offering, and poured his drink-offering, and sprinkled the blood of his peace-offerings, upon the altar. And brought also the Bronze Altar, which was before YHWH, from the forefront of the House, from between the altar and the House of YHWH, and put it on the north side of the altar.

And King Ahaz commanded Urijah the Priest, saying, Upon the Great Altar burn the morning burnt-offering, and the evening meat-offering, and the King's burnt sacrifice, and his meat-offering, with the burnt-offering of the people of the land, and their meat-offering, and their drink-offering, and the blood of the sacrifice: and the Bronze Altar shall be for me to enquire by.

– II Kings 16:10-15 [This is the altar the Chronicler attributes to King Solomon as shown above.]

II Chronicles Also Invents a Veil

And he made the veil of blue, and purple, and crimson, and fine linen, and wrought Cherubim thereon.

– II Chronicles 3:14 [This is total fiction. Cf. I Kings 6:11, where Solomon builds a partition for hanging the Chains of Gold. The House of YHWH was not built for animal sacrifice but was built to be the King's Chapel, where he could privately offer incense and Inquire of God in his Oracle.]

The Chronicler Also Invents a Scaffold

And he stood before the Altar of YHWH in the presence of all the Congregation of Israel, and spread forth his hands: for Solomon had made a Bronze Scaffold, of five cubits long, and five cubits broad, and three cubits high, and had set it in the midst of the Court:

and upon it he stood, and kneeled down upon his knees before all the Congregation of Israel, and spread forth his hands toward Heaven.

– II Chronicles 8:12-13 [These dimensions are exactly the same for Moses' Bronze Altar (see above), which King Ahaz used exclusively for his own inquiring/divination. The Chronicler was likely Ezra writing from a post-Exile time when you could get away with rewriting history.]

II Chronicles Adds Ninety Cubits to the Height of the Porch

And the Porch that was in front of the House, the length of it was according to the breadth of the House, twenty cubits, and the height was an hundred and twenty: and he overlaid it within with pure gold.

– II Chronicles 3:4 [This account omits the distance between the House and the entrance to the Porch, thus allowing the placement of the Upper Chambers to be in the Porch, and not above the Oracle. That this was the purpose is suggested by the omission of the King's Entry in the Right Shoulder of the House. Thus, the House of YHWH is no longer the King's Chapel, but a priest-only type of Temple. Moreover, a stone structure 120 cubits high (180 feet) would need side support, like the flying buttresses of Notre Dame Cathedral. The construction of the House of the Forest of Lebanon, to wit, the Temple of Asherah, is also omitted from the account, although it is mentioned as the place Solomon kept the golden shields and the golden drinking vessels and the golden vessels for the House (II Chron. 9:16, 20.) If Ezra, the Chronicler, could lie so easily about the House of YHWH, what else is he not to be relied on? The readers must be on their toes when comparing Chronicles with Kings. When they contradict, the account in Kings is always to be preferred.]

King Solomon Brings the Ark Into the House of YHWH

Then Solomon assembled the Elders of Israel, and all of the heads of the Tribes, the Chief of the Fathers of the children of Israel, unto King Solomon in Jerusalem, that they might bring up the Ark of the Covenant of YHWH out of the City of David, which is Zion....And they brought up the Ark of YHWH, and the Tabernacle of the Congregation, and all the Holy Vessels that were in the Tabernacle, even these did the Priests and the Levites

bring up...And the Priests brought in the Ark of the Covenant of YHWH unto his Place, into the Oracle of the House, to the Most Holy Place, even under the Wings of the Cherubim. For the Cherubim spread forth their two Wings over the Place of the Ark, and the Cherubim covered the Ark and the staves thereof above.

...The spake Solomon, YHWH said that he would Dwell in the Thick Darkness. I have surely built thee an House to Dwell in, a settled Place for thee to abide in for ever....

And it was in the heart of David my father to build an House for the Name of YHWH God of Israel.

And YHWH said unto David my father, Whereas it was in thine heart to build an House unto my Name, thou didst well that it was in thine heart.

Nevertheless thou shalt not build the House; but by thy son that shall come forth out of thy loins, he shall build the House unto my Name.

And YHWH hath performed his Word that he Spake, and I am risen up in the Room of David my father, and sit upon the Throne of Israel, as YHWH Promised, and have built an House for the Name of YHWH God of Israel. And I have set there a Place for the Ark, wherein is the Covenant of YHWH, which he Made with our fathers, when he brought them out of the Land of Egypt...

And now, O God of Israel, let thy Word, I pray thee, be verified, which thou Spakest unto thy Servant David thy father. But will God indeed Dwell on the Earth? behold, the Heaven and the Heaven of Heavens cannot contain thee; how much less this House that I have builded.

Yet have thou respect unto the prayer of thy Servant, and to his supplication, O YHWH my God, to hearken to the cry and to the prayer, which thy Servant prayeth before thee to day: that thine eyes may be open toward this House night and day, even toward the Place of which thou hast said,

My Name shall be there:

that thou mayest hearken unto the prayer which thy Servant shall make toward this Place.

And hearken thou to the supplication of thy Servant, and of thy people Israel, when they shall pray toward this Place; and Hear thou in Heaven thy Dwelling Place: and when thou Hearest, Forgive.

– I Kings 8:1, 4, 6-7, 12-13, 17-21, 26-30

Asherah's Temple: the House of the Forest of Lebanon

But Solomon was building his own House thirteen years, and he finished all his House. He built also the House of the Forest of Lebanon; the length thereof was an hundred cubits, and the breadth thereof fifty cubits, and the height thereof thirty cubits, upon four rows of cedar pillars, with cedar beams upon the pillars. And it was covered with cedar upon the beams, that lay on forty-five pillars, fifteen in a row. And there were windows in three rows, and light was against light in three ranks. And all the doors and posts were square, with the windows: and light was against light in three ranks. And he made a Porch of Pillars; the length thereof was fifty cubits, and the breadth thereof thirty cubits: and the Porch was before them; and the other pillars and the thick beam were before them.

Then he made a Porch for the Throne where he might Judge, even the Porch of Judgment: and it was covered with cedar from one side of the floor to the other.

– I Kings 7:1-6 [I imagine a stone rectangular temple with four aisles, with three rows of thirty cubit high cedar pillars, with a Porch of Pillars in front, with the Porch of Judgment on the opposite end. Since this was originally a Temple of Asherah, Sacred Prostitutes, both male and female, performed their fertility magic inside. This Temple had a graven image of Asherah, and the women would weave hangings for the idol (see, i.e. II Kings 23:7). Thus, like the House of YHWH, where there was a Porch, a Palace Hall, and the Oracle, likewise with the House of the the Forest of Lebanon, there were a Porch of Pillars, a Palace Hall of cedar pillars, and a Porch of Judgment. I further imagine these two temples being side by side, with Asherah's Temple being to the south of YHWH's Temple, so the Divine Son of YHWH, King Solomon, sat on the Right Hand of YHWH's Throne Between the Cherubim.]

The House of the Forest of Lebanon Used as an Armory and Banquet Hall

And King Solomon made two hundred large shields of beaten gold: six hundred shekels of gold went into one large shield. And he made three hundred small shields of beaten gold; three pound of gold went to one small shield: and the King put them in the House of the Forest of Lebanon.

– I Kings 10:26-17 [Solomon likely put them there because Asherah was both a Goddess of Sexual Love and War (see below).

And he discovered the Covering of Judah, and thou didst look in that day to the Armor of the House of the Forest.

– Isaiah 22:8

He brought me to the Banqueting House, and his Banner
 over me was Love.
 – Song of Solomon 2:4

The Throne of Solomon and the Queen Mother

Moreover the King made a Great Throne of Ivory, and overlaid it with the best gold. The Throne had Six Steps, and the top of the Throne was round behind: and there were stays on either side on the Place of the Seat, and Two Lions stood beside the Stays. And Twelve Lions stood there on the one side and on the other upon the Six Steps: there was not the like made in any Kingdom. And all King Solomon's Drinking Vessels were of gold, and all the Vessels of the House of the Forest of Lebanon were of pure gold: none were of silver: it was nothing accounted of in the Days of Solomon.

– I Kings 10:16-21 [Note that you had to go through Asherah's Temple before you got to the Throne Room in the Porch of Judgment. I imagine that there was another Throne for the Queen Mother, as High Priestess of Asherah, at Solomon's Right Hand, like the arrangement for the Throne of David (see below.) Asherah's Temple was arrayed in glory, with two hundred Targets (large shields) of gold, and three hundred (small) Shields of pure gold adorning the walls, and there must have been some kind of shelving to handle the drinking vessels. Perhaps large banquets occurred in the Temple. The shields didn't last for long, for after Solomon died, Pharaoh Shishak of Egypt invaded Jerusalem and took as spoil all the Golden Shields (see below).]

And it came to pass in the fifth year of King Rehoboam, that Shishak King of Egypt came up against Jerusalem: and he took away the treasures of the House of YHWH, and the treasures of the King's House: he even took away all: and he took away all the Shields of Gold which Solomon had made. And King Rehoboam made in their stead Bronze Shields, and committed them unto the hands of the Chief of the Guard, which kept the Door of the King's House. And it was so, when the King went into the House of YHWH, that the Guard bare them, and brought them back into the Guard Chamber.

– I Kings 14:25-28 [I imagine the Guard consisting of 500 men, for their were 200 Targets, and 300 Bronze Shields.]

The Throne of David

Then sat Solomon upon the Throne of David his father;
and the Kingdom was Established greatly...
Bathsheba therefore went unto King Solomon, to speak
unto him for Adonijah. And the King rose up to meet her,
and bowed himself unto her, and sat down on his Throne,
and caused a Seat to be set for the King's Mother; and she
sat at his Right Hand.
– I Kings 2:12, 19

The Fiery Bronze Seraphim Serpent

And YHWH sent Seraphim among the people, and they bit the people:
and much people of Israel died. Therefore the people came to Moses,
and said, We have sinned, for we have spoken against YHWH, and
against thee; pray unto YHWH, that this he take away the Serpents
from us. And Moses prayed for the people.
And YHWH said unto Moses, Make thee a Fiery Serpent, and set it
upon a pole: and it shall come to come to pass, that everyone that is bitten,
when he looketh upon it, shall live.
And Moses made a Fiery Serpent of Bronze, and put it upon a pole,
and it came to pass, that if a Seraphim had bitten any man,
when he beheld the Serpent of Bronze, he lived.
– Numbers 21:6-9 [Pure Sympathetic Magic.]

In the year that King Uzziah died I Saw also the Lord sitting upon a Throne,
high and lifted up, and his train filled the Temple. Above it stood the Seraphim:
each one had six wings; with twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered
his feet, and with twain he did fly. And one cried unto another, and said,
Holy, Holy, Holy, is YHWH of Hosts: the whole Earth is full of his Glory.
And the posts of the door moved at the voice of him that cried, and the House
was filled with smoke. Then said I, Woe is me! for I am undone; because I am
a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips; for
mine eyes have Seen the King, YHWH of Hosts.
Then flew one of the Seraphim unto me, having a live coal in his hand, which
he had taken with tongs from off the altar: and he said, Lo, this hath touched
thy lips; and thine iniquity is taken away, and thy sin purged.
Also I Heard the Voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will
go for us? Then said I, Here am I; send me. And he said, Go and tell this people,
Hear ye indeed, but Understand not; and See ye indeed, but Perceive not.

Make the heart of this people fat, and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes, lest they See with their eyes, and Hear with their ears, and Understand with their with their heart, and convert, and be healed. Then said I, Lord, how long? And he answered, Until the cities be wasted without inhabitant, and the houses without man, and the land be utterly desolate, and YHWH have removed men far away, and there be a great forsaking in the midst of the land. But yet in it shall be a tenth, and it shall return, and shall be eaten: as a tiel tree, and as an oak, whose substance is in them, when they cast their leaves: so the Holy Seed shall be the substance thereof.
 – Isaiah 6:1-13[The Seraphim, like the Cherubim, are Heavenly Creatures, part of the Serpent Worship in the Ancient Near East.]

The Sons of God on Earth as Reincarnations of the Sons of God in Heaven:

King Hezekiah and the Angel of YHWH Named Wonderful.

And there was a certain man of Zorah, of the family of the Danites, whose name was Manoah; and his wife was barren, and bare not. And the Angel of YHWH Appeared unto the woman, and said unto her, Behold now, thou art barren, and bearest not: but thou shalt conceive, and bear a son. Now, therefore, beware, I pray thee, and drink not wine nor strong drink, and eat not any unclean thing: for, lo, thou shalt conceive, and bear a son: and no razor shall come on his head: for the child shall be a Nazarite unto God from the womb: and he shall begin to deliver Israel out of the hand of the Philistines.

Then the woman came and told her husband, saying, A Man of God came unto me, and his countenance was like the countenance of an Angel of God, very terrible: but I asked him not whence he was, neither told he me his Name: but he said unto me, Behold, thou shalt conceive, and bear a son: and now drink no wine nor strong drink, neither eat any unclean thing: for the child shall be a Nazarite to God from the womb to the day of his death.

Then Manoah intreated YHWH, and said, O my Lord, let the Man of God which thou didst send come again unto us, and teach us what we shall do unto the child that shall be born.

And God hearkened to the voice of Manoah; and the Angel of God came again unto the woman as she sat in the field: but Manoah her husband was not with her. And the woman made haste, and ran, and showed her husband, and said unto him, Behold, the Man hath Appeared unto me, that came unto me the other day. And Manoah arose, and went after his wife, and came to the Man, and said unto him, Art thou the Man that Spakest unto the woman? And he said, I am.

And Manoah said, Now let thy Words come to pass. How shall we order
the child, and how shall we do unto him?

And the Angel of YHWH said unto Manoah, Of all that I said unto the woman
let her beware. She may not eat of any thing that cometh from the vine, neither
let her drink wine or strong drink, nor eat any unclean thing: all that I commanded
her let her observe. And Manoah said unto the Angel of YHWH, I pray thee,
let us detain thee, until we shall have made ready a kid for thee.

And the Angel of YHWH said unto Manoah, I will not eat of thy bread:
and if thou wilt offer a burnt-offering, thou must offer it unto YHWH.

For Manoah Knew not that he was an Angel of YHWH.

And Manoah said unto the Angel of YHWH, What is thy Name,
that when thy sayings come to pass we may do thee honor?

And the Angel of YHWH said unto him, Why askest thou thus after
my Name, seeing it is

Wonderful?

– Judges 13:2-18

Zechariah the Prophet,

Then all the people of Judah took Uzziah, who was sixteen years old,
and make him King in the room of his father Amaziah....And he did
that which is Right in the Sight of YHWH, according to all that
his father Amaziah did. **And he sought God in the days of
Zechariah, who had Understanding in the Visions of God:**
And as long as he sought YHWH, God made him to prosper.

– II Chronicles 26:1, 4-5

Isaiah Announces Birth of Hezekiah Via Prior Hieros Gamos.

And it came to pass in the days of Ahaz the son of Jotham,
the son of Uzziah, King of Judah, that Rezin the king of Syria,
and Pekah the son of Remaliah, king of Israel, went up toward
Jerusalem to war against it, but could not prevail against it.
...Moreover, YHWH Spake again unto Ahaz, saying, Ask thee a Sign of
YHWH thy God; ask it either in the depth, or in the height above.

But Ahaz said, I will not ask, neither will I tempt YHWH.

And he said, Hear ye now, O House of David; Is it a small thing for you
to weary men, but will ye weary my God also?

Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a Sign;
Behold, a Virgin [Prophetess] shall conceive, and bear a Son,
and shall call his Name Immanuel.

Butter and honey shall he eat, that he may Know to refuse

the Evil, and choose the Good. For before the child shall Know
to refuse the Evil, and choose the Good, the land that thou abhorrest
shall be forsaken of both her kings.

– Isaiah 7:1, 10-16

Isaiah's Prior Hieros Gamos With the Prophetess Daughter of Zechariah

Moreover YHWH said unto me, Take thee a great roll,
and write in it with a man's pen concerning Maher-shalal-hash-baz.

And I took unto me faithful witnesses to record, Uriah the priest,
and Zechariah [the Prophet, father of the Prophetess] the son of Jeberechiah.

And I went unto the [Virgin] Prophetess; and she conceived, and bare a Son.

Then said YHWH to me, Call his name Maher-shalal-hash-baz.

For before the child shall have knowledge to cry, My father, and my mother,
the riches of Damascus and the spoil of Samaria shall be taken away before
the king of Assyria.

YHWH Spake also unto me again, saying,
Forasmuch as this people refuseth to the Waters of Shiloah
that go softly, and rejoice in Rezin and Remaliah's son;
now, therefore, behold, the Lord bringeth up upon them
the Waters of the River, strong and many,
even the King of Assyria, and all his glory;
and he shall come up over all his channels,
and go over all his banks; and he shall pass through Judah;
he shall overflow and go over, he shall reach even to the neck;
and the stretching out of his wings shall fill the breadth
of thy land, O Immanuel.

– Isaiah 8:1-8

King Hezekiah is Called Wonderful

For unto us a child is born, unto us a Son is given: and the government
shall be upon his shoulder: and his Name shall be called,

Wonderful,
Counsellor, the Mighty God,
the Everlasting Father,
the Prince of Peace.

Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end,
upon the Throne of David, and upon his Kingdom,
to order it, and to establish it with Judgment and with Justice
from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of YHWH of Hosts
will perform it.
– Isaiah 9:6-7

King Ahaz Marries Abi, Zechariah's Virgin Prophetess
Daughter, and Adopts Her Son as His Own.

Now it came to pass in the third year of Hoshea son of Elah king of Israel,
that Hezekiah the Son of Ahaz King of Judah began to reign.
Twenty and five years old was he when he began to reign; and he reigned
twenty and nine years in Jerusalem. His mother's name also was Abi,
the [Prophetess] daughter of Zechariah [the Prophet].
And he did that which was right in the Sight of YHWH, according
to all that David his father did.
...He trusted in YHWH God of Israel; so that after him was none
like him among all the Kings of Judah, nor any that were before him.
– II Kings 18:1-3, 5[This is another clue that Hezekiah was not the
true son of Ahaz, for Hezekiah was twenty-five when he began to
to reign, meaning that Ahaz was only nine or ten when Hezekiah
was conceived. Thus, he had another father.]

King Hezekiah Prophesied to Conquer Palestina.

In the year King Ahaz died was this Burden. Rejoice not thou,
whole Palestina, because the Rod of him that smote thee is broken:
for out of the Serpent's Root shall come forth a Cockatrice,
and his Fruit shall be a Fiery Flying Seraphim.
– Isaiah 14:28-29

Isaiah's Prophecies Fulfilled

And Hoshea the son of Elah made a conspiracy against Pekah the
son of Remaliah, and smote him, and slew him, and reigned
in his stead, in the twentieth year of Jotham the son of Uzziah.
...And the king of Assyria hearkened unto [Ahaz]: for the king of Assyria
went up against Damascus and took it, and carried the people of it captive
to Kir, and slew Rezin.

...[Hezekiah] smote the Philistines, even unto Gaza, and the borders thereof, from the Tower of the Watchmen to the fenced city.

– II Kings 15:30; 16:9; 18:8

King Hezekiah Fulfills Another One of Isaiah's Prophecies

And there shall come forth a Rod out of the Stem of Jesse,
and a Branch shall grow out of his Roots:
and the Spirit of YHWH shall rest upon him, the
Spirit of Wisdom, and Understanding, the Spirit
of Counsel and Might, the Spirit of Knowledge
and of the Fear of YHWH.

And shall Make him of Quick Understanding
in the Fear of YHWH: and he shall not Judge
after the sight of his eyes, neither Reprove
after the hearing of his ears: but with Righteousness
shall he Judge the poor, and Reprove with Equity
for the meek of the Earth: and he shall smite
the Earth with the Rod of his mouth, and with
the breath of his lips shall he slay the Wicked.

And Righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins,
and Faithfulness the girdle of his reins....

And in that Day there shall be a Root of Jesse,
which shall stand for an Ensign of the people
to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest
shall be Glorious.

– Isaiah 11:1-5, 10

Hezekiah's Revival of the Solomonic Enlightenment

These are also the Proverbs of Solomon, which the
men of Hezekiah King of Judah copied out.

– Proverbs 25:1[Proverbs 25:1 – 29:27 are the
proverbs that are copied out.]

And he did that which was Right in the Sight of YHWH,
according to all that David his father did.

He removed the High Places, and brake the Images,
and cut down the [Asherah] groves, and brake in pieces
the Bronze Serpent that Moses had made:
for unto those days the children of Israel
did burn incense to it: and he called it Nehushtan.

He trusted in YHWH God of Israel; so that after
 him was none like him among all the Kings of Judah,
 nor any that were before him.
 For he clave to YHWH, and departed not from
 following him, and kept his commandments,
 which YHWH had commanded Moses.
 And YHWH was with him, and he prospered
 whithersoever he went forth.
 – II Kings 18:3-7a

Myself

Xenon's Message: p. 274
March Into Darkness: p. 345

Evidence of Asherah Worship After the Flood

And Noah began to be an husbandman, and he planted
 a vineyard: and he drank of the wine, and was drunken;
 and he was uncovered within his tent.

Hieros Gamos with the High Priestess

And Ham, the father of Canaan, saw the nakedness
 of his father [had sex with his mother:
 Leviticus 18:6-8; 20:11, 17-21],
 and told his two brothers without.
 And Shem and Japheth took a garment, and laid it
 upon both their shoulders, and went backward,
 and covered the nakedness of their father;
 and their faces were backward,
 and they saw not their father's nakedness.
 And Noah awoke from his wine, and knew
 what his younger son had done unto him.
 And he said, Cursed be Canaan [son of Hieros Gamos]:
 a servant of servants shall be unto his brothers.
 And God shall enlarge Japheth, and he shall dwell
 in the tents of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant.
 – Genesis 9:20-27 [cf. Joshua 9:1-27]

Evidence of Asherah Worship in Pre-Exilic Israel

And Abraham planted a Grove in Beer-sheba and called
there on the Name of YHWH, the Everlasting God [El Olam].

– Genesis 21:33

Then [Judah] asked the men of that place, saying, Where is the Sacred
Prostitute [Tamar], that was openly by the way side?

– Genesis 38:21

And [Moses] made the Laver of Bronze, and the foot of it of bronze;
of the mirrors of the Women Performing [Sacred Prostitutes], which Performed
at the Door of the Tabernacle of the Congregation.

– Exodus 38:8 [This confirms that Sacred Prostitutes were Holy,
otherwise, their mirrors would have been unclean and not worthy
for the Bronze Laver, which the Priests used to wash their hands.]

Evidence of the Midianite-Israelite Confederacy

Then came Amalek, and fought with Israel in Rephidim. And Moses said
unto Joshua, Choose us out men, and go out, fight with Amalek: to morrow
I will stand on the top of the hill with the Rod of God in mine hand.

So Joshua did as Moses had said to him, and fought with Amalek:
and Moses, Aaron, and Hur [a Midianite King] went up to the top of the hill.

And it came to pass, when Moses held up his hand, that Israel prevailed:
and when he let down his hand, Amalek prevailed. But Moses' hands were
heavy; and they took a stone, and put it under him, and he sat thereon;
and Aaron and Hur stayed up his hands, the one on the one side, and the
other on the other side: and his hands were steady until the going down of the Sun.

And Joshua discomfited Amalek and his people with the edge of the sword.
...When Jethro, the Priest of Midian, Moses' father in law, heard of all that God
had done for Moses, and for Israel his people, and that YHWH had brought

Israel out of Egypt: then Jethro, Moses' father in law, took Zipporah,
Moses' wife, and he had sent her back. And her two sons; of which the name
of the one was Gershom; for he said, I have been a Stranger in a Strange Land:
and the name of the other was Eliezer; for the God of my father, said he,
was mine Help, and delivered me from the sword of Pharaoh: and Jethro,
Moses' father in law, came with his sons and his wife unto Moses into
the Wilderness, where he encamped at the Mount of God.

And he said unto Moses, I thy father in law Jethro and am come unto thee,
and thy wife, and her two sons with her.

...[A]nd Jethro said, Blessed be YHWH, who hath delivered you out of the hand of the Egyptians, and out of the hand of Pharaoh, who hath delivered the people from under the hand of the Egyptians. Now I know that YHWH is greater than all gods: for in the thing wherein they dealt proudly he was above them. And Jethro, Moses' father in law, took a burnt-offering and sacrifices for God: and Aaron came, and all the elders of Israel, to eat bread with Moses' father in law before God.
 – Exodus 17:8-13: 18:1-6, 10-12

Evidence of Hieros Gamos Performed in the Tabernacle:

Moses Attempts to Renew the Midianite-Israelilte Confederacy

And Israel abode in Shittim, and the people began to commit whoredom with the daughters of Moab. And they called the people unto the sacrifices of their gods: and the people did eat, and bowed down to their gods. And Israel joined himself unto Baal-Peor: and the anger of YHWH was kindled against Israel. And YHWH said unto Moses, Take all the heads of the people, and hang them up before YHWH against the Sun, that the fierce anger of YHWH may be turned away from Israel. And Moses said unto the judges of Israel, Slay ye every one his men that were joined unto Baal-Peor. And, behold, one of the children of Israel came and brought unto his brethren a Midianite woman in the sight of Moses and in the sight of all the Congregation of the children of Israel, who were weeping before the Door of the Tabernacle of the Congregation. And when Phinehas, the son of Eleazar, the son of Aaron the priest, saw it, he rose up from among the Congregation, and took a javelin in his hand; and he went after the man of Israel into the Tabernacle, and thrust both of them through, the man of Israel, and the woman through her belly....Now the name of the Israelite that was slain, even that was slain with the Midianitish woman, was Zimri, the son of Salu, a Prince of a Chief House among the Simeonites. And the name of the Midianitish woman that was slain was Cozbi, the daughter of Zur; he was Head over a people, and of a Chief House in Midian. And YHWH spake unto Moses, saying, Vex the Midianites, and smite them: for they vex you with their wives, wherewith they have beguiled you in the matter of Peor, and in the matter of Cozbi, the daughter of a Prince of Midian, their sister, which was slain in the Day of the Plague for Peor's sake.

...And they slew the Kings of Midian, beside the rest of them that were slain; namely, Evi, and Rekem, and Zur [father of Cozbi], and Hur [of Rephidim], and Reba, five Kings of Midian; Balaam also the son of Beor, they slew with the sword.
 – Numbers 25:1-8a, 14-18; 31:8 [King Zur of Midian made a League with the Tribe of Simeon, by marrying his daughter, Cozbi, to Salu, the son of the Prince of Simeon. As the result the Tribe of Simeon was located in a small area inside the Tribe of Judah (Joshua 19:1-9).]

Eli's Sons with the Sacred Prostitutes at the Tabernacle at Shiloh

Then they said, Behold, there is a Feast of YHWH at Shiloh yearly in a place which is on the north side of Beth-El, on the eastside of the highway that goeth up from Beth-El to Shechem, and on the south of Lebonah.
 Therefore they commanded the children of Benjamin, saying, Go and lie in wait in the vineyards: and see, and behold, if the Daughters of Shiloh [precursors to the Daughters of Zion] come out to dance in dances, then come ye out of the vineyards, and catch you every man his wife of the Daughters of Shiloh, and go to the land of Benjamin.
 – Judges 21:19-21

Now Eli was very old, and heard all that his sons did unto Israel; and how they lay with the Women who Performed at the Door [Sacred Prostitutes] of the Tabernacle of the Congregation.
 – I Samuel 2:22

The Daughters [Sacred Prostitutes] of Zion/Jerusalem

Draw me, we will run after thee:
 the King hath brought me into his Chambers:
 we will be glad and rejoice in thee,
 we will remember thy love more than wine:
 the Upright love thee.

...As the lily among thorns,
 so is my love among the Daughters.

...I charge you, O ye Daughters of Jerusalem,
 by the roes, and by the hinds of the field,
 that ye stir not up, nor awake my love,
 till he please.

...Go forth, O ye Daughters of Zion,
 and behold King Solomon with the crown
 wherewith his mother crowned him
 in the day of his espousals,
 and in the day of the gladness of his heart.

...Awake, O north wind; and come, thou south:
 blow upon my Garden,
 that the Spices thereof may flow out.
 Let thy beloved come into his Garden,
 and eat his Pleasant Fruits.

I have come into my Garden, my sister, my spouse:
 I have gathered my Myrrh with my Spice;
 I have eaten my Honeycomb with my Honey;
 I have drunk my wine with my milk:
 eat, O friends; drink, yea, drink abundantly, O beloved.

...I charge you, O Daughters of Jerusalem,
 if ye find my beloved, that ye tell him,
 that I am sick of love.

...There are threescore Queens,
 and fourscore Concubines,
 and Virgins without number.
 My Dove, my undefiled is but one:
 she is the only one of her mother,
 she is the Choice One of her that bare her.
 The Daughters saw her, and blessed her;
 yea, the Queens and the Concubines,
 and they praised her.

...O that thou wert as my brother,
 that sucked the breasts of my mother!
 when I should find thee without,
 I would kiss thee; yea, I should not be despised.
 I would lead thee into my mother's House,
 who would instruct me: I would cause thee

to drink of spiced wine of the juice of my pomegranate.
 His left hand should be under my head,
 and his right hand should embrace me.
 I charge you, O Daughters of Jerusalem,
 that ye stir not up, nor awake my love,
 until he please.

– Song of Solomon (a Song of Hieros Gamos) 1:4; 2:7;
 3:11; 4:16 – 5:1, 8; 6:8-9; 8:1-4

Evidence Why David was Chosen by Saul and
Evidence that David Was Disrespected by His Brothers

And YHWH said unto Samuel, How long wilt thou mourn for Saul,
 seeing that I have rejected him from Reigning over Israel? fill thy
 horn with oil, and go, I will send thee to Jesse the Bethlehemite:
 for I have Provided me a King among his sons.

And Samuel said, How can I go? if Saul hear it, he will kill me.

And YHWH said, Take an heifer with thee, and say, I am come
 to sacrifice to YHWH. And call Jesse to the sacrifice, and, I will
 Show you what thou shalt do: and thou shalt Anoint unto me him
 whom I name unto thee.

And Samuel did that which YHWH Spake, and came to Bethlehem.

And the Elders of the town trembled at his coming, and said,
 Comest thou peacefully?

And he said, Peacefully: I am come to sacrifice unto YHWH:
 sanctify thyself, and come with me to the sacrifice. And
 he sanctified Jesse and his sons, and called them to the sacrifice.
 And it came to pass, when they were come, that he looked upon
 Eliab, and said, Surely YHWH's Anointed is before thee.

But YHWH said unto Samuel, Look not on his countenance, or
 the height of his stature; because I have refused him: for YHWH
 seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh upon the outward
 appearance, but YHWH looketh on the heart.

Then Jesse called Abinadab, and made him pass before Samuel.

And he said, Neither hath YHWH chosen this.

Then Jesse made Shammah to pass by. And he said, Neither
 hath YHWH chosen this.

Again, Jesse made seven of his sons to pass before Samuel.

And Samuel said unto Jesse, Are here all thy children?

And he said, There remaineth yet the youngest, and, behold,
 he keepeth the sheep.

And Samuel said unto Jesse, Send and fetch him: for we will not sit down till he come hither.

And he went, and brought him in. Now he was ruddy, and withal of a beautiful countenance, and goodly to look to.

And YHWH said, Arise, Anoint him: for this is he.

Then Samuel took the horn of oil, and Anointed him in the midst of his brothers: and the Spirit of YHWH came upon David from that day forward. So Samuel rose up, and went to Ramah....

Now David was the son of that Ephrathite of Bethlehem-Judah, whose name was Jesse; and he had eight sons: and the man went among men for an old man in the days of Saul. And the three eldest sons of Jesse went and followed Saul to the field of battle: and the names of his three sons that went to the battle were Eliab the firstborn, and next unto him Abinadab, and the third Shammah. And David was the youngest: and the three eldest followed Saul. But David went and returned from Saul to feed his father's sheep at Bethlehem.

And the Philistine drew near morning and evening, and presented himself forty days. And Jesse said unto David his son, Take now for thy brothers an ephah of this parched corn, and these ten loaves, and run to the camp of thy brothers: and carry these ten cheeses unto the captain of their thousand, and look how thy brothers fare, and take their pledge.

Now Saul, and they and all the men of Israel, were in the Valley of Elah, fighting with the Philistines.

And David rose up early in the morning, and left the sheep with a keeper, and took, and went, as Jesse had commanded him; and he came to the trench, as the Host was going forth to the fight, and brought for the battle. For Israel and the Philistines had put the battle in array, army against army.

And David left his carriage in the hand of the keeper of the carriage, and ran into the army, and came and saluted his brothers. And as he talked with them, behold, there came up the Champion, the Philistine of Gath, Goliath by name, out of the armies of the Philistines, and spake according to the same words: and David heard them.

And all the men of Israel, when they saw the man, fled from him, and were sore afraid.

And the men of Israel said, Have ye seen this man that is come up? surely to defy Israel is he come up: and it shall be, that the man who killeth him, the King will enrich him with great riches, and will give him his daughter, and make his father's house free in Israel.

And David spake to the men that stood by him, saying, What shall be done to the man that killeth this Philistine, and taketh away the reproach from Israel? for who is this uncircumcised Philistine, that he should defy the armies of the Living God?

And the people answered him after this manner, saying, So shall it be done to the man that killeth him.

And Eliab his eldest brother heard when he spake unto the men; and Eliab's anger was kindled against David, and he said, Why camest thou down hither? and with whom hast thou left those few sheep in the wilderness? I know thy pride, and the naughtiness of thine heart; for thou art come down that thou mightest see the battle. And David said, What have I now done? Is there not a cause? – I Samuel 16:1-13; 17:12-29 [I just love the way YHWH tells Samuel how to deceive Saul about his purpose.

And there must have been some kind of scandal Jesse attempted to avoid, because Jesse did not present David to Samuel. Also David appears different from his brothers because he is noted to be ruddy and handsome. We are told that Jesse is David's father, but not who is mother was. We know he had a different mother than his other brothers, because the text informs us that David had two sisters, and one of them, Abigail, had a different father, namely King Nahash of Ammon (II Sam. 17:25). Thus it easily explains his brother's hostility toward him.

The only reasonable explanation that covers these facts is that David's mother, that he shares with his two sisters, Zeruah and Abigail, was a High Priestess of Asherah, the Handmaid of YHWH.

Thus David was Holy from birth, which explains why he brought the head of Goliath to Jerusalem, to wit, to the Millo, the Tower-Temple of El Elyon, under the Priest-Kingly Royal Order of Melchizedek.

Thus King Nahash of Ammon, as well as Jesse, a Prince of Judah, had Hieros Gamos with the High Priestess of Asherah, in other words,

following the practice of Canaanite Religion. This also explains how Joab, Zeruah's son, led a bloodless coup against Jerusalem and his grandmother. Moreover, we find another contradiction in I Chronicles 2:13-15 where we are told that Jesse only had seven sons, not the eight presented in I Samuel.]

Archaeological Evidence of YHWH's Wife, Asherah, in Ancient Israel

“I bless you by YHWH of Tieman and by his Asherah.”

“I have blessed you by YHWH of Samaria and his Asherah.”
 – Inscriptions found on Pithoi (large container jars) at the fortified caravan pit stop at Kuntillet ‘Arjud. [YHWH means “I AM,” and Asherah means “Happiness, Prosperity, Bliss, and/or Fortune.”]

“Blessed be Urijahu by YHWH; and by his Asherah, from his enemies, he saved him.”
 – Inscription found on a Pillar at Khirbet El-Qom

Queen as High Priestess of Asherah and Her Divine Daughters

And in the thirty and eighth year of Asa King of Judah: began Ahab the son of Omri to reign over Israel: and Ahab the son of Omri reigned over Israel in Samaria twenty and two years. And Ahab the son of Omri did Evil in the Sight of YHWH above all that were before him.

And it came to pass, as if it had been a light thing for him to walk in the sins of Jeroboam the son of Nebat, that he took to wife Jezebel the daughter of Ethbaal king of the Sidonians, and went and served Baal, and worshipped him. And he reared up an altar for Baal in the House of Baal, which he had built in Samaria.

And Ahab made an Asherah idol; and Ahab did more to provoke YHWH God of Israel to anger than all the kings of Israel that were before him....And it came to pass, when Ahab saw Elijah, that Ahab said unto him, Art thou he that troubleth Israel? And he answered, I have not troubled Israel; but thou and thy father's house, in that ye have forsaken the commandments of YHWH, and thou hast followed Baalim. Now therefore send, and gather to me all Israel unto Mount Carmel, and the

prophets of Baal four hundred and fifty, and the prophet[esses] of the Asherah groves four hundred, which eat at Jezebel's table.

– I Kings 16:29-33; 18:17-19 [Elijah slays the four hundred prophets of Baal, but not the prophetesses of Asherah (I Kings 18:40).]

And in the twentieth year of Jeroboam king of Israel reigned Asa over Judah. And forty and one years reigned he in Jerusalem. And his mother's name was Maacha, the daughter of Absalom. And Asa did that which was Right in the Eyes of YHWH, as did David his father. And he took away the Sacred Male Prostitutes out of the land and removed all the idols that his fathers had made. And also Maacha his mother, even her he removed from being Queen, because she had made an idol of Asherah; and Asa destroyed her idol, and burnt it by the Brook Kidron.

– I Kings 15:9-13

[Hezekiah] removed the High Place, and brake the Images, and cut down the Asherah groves, and brake in pieces the Bronze Serpent that Moses had made: for unto those days the children of Israel did burn incense to it: and he called it Nehushtan.

– II Kings 18:4

Isaiah's Critique of the Divine Daughters of Asherah

Moreover YHWH saith, Because the Daughters of Zion are haughty, and walk with stretched forth necks and wanton eyes, walking and mincing as they go, and making a tinkling with their feet: therefore YHWH will smite with a scab the crown of the head of the Daughters of Zion, and YHWH will discover their hidden parts. In that day the Lord will take away the bravery of their tinkling ornaments about their feet, and their cauls, and their round tires like the Moon, the chains, and the bracelets, and the mufflers, the bonnets, and the ornaments of the legs, and the headbands, and the tablets, and the earrings, the rings, and nose jewels, the changeable suits of apparel, and the mantles, and the wimples, and the crisping pins, the glasses, and the fine linen, and the hoods, and the veils. And it shall come to pass, that instead of sweet smell there shall be stink; and instead of a girdle a rent; and instead of well set hair baldness; and instead of a stomacher a girding of sackcloth; and burning instead of beauty.

– Isaiah 3:16-24

Hilkiah Writes then Finds the Book of Deuteronomy

And Hilkiah the High Priest said unto Shaphan the Scribe, I have found the Book of the Law in the House of YHWH. And Hilkiah gave the Book to Shaphan, and he read it. And Shaphan the Scribe came to the King, and brought the King word again, and said, Thy servants have gathered the money that was found in the House, and have delivered it unto the hand of them that do the work that have the oversight of the House of YHWH. And Shaphan the Scribe showed the King, saying, Hilkiah the Priest hath delivered me a Book. And Shaphan read it before the King. And it came to pass, when the King had heard the words of the Book of the Law, that he rent his clothes.

And the King commanded Hilkiah the Priest, and Ahikam the son of Shaphan, and Achbor the son Michaiah, and Shaphan the Scribe, and Asahiah a servant of the King's, saying, Go ye, enquire of YHWH for me, and for the people, and for all Judah, concerning the words of this Book that is found: for great is the Wrath of YHWH that is kindled against us, because our fathers have not hearkened unto the words of this Book, to do according unto all that which is written concerning us.

And Hilkiah the Priest and Ahikam, and Achbor, and Shaphan, and Asahiah, went unto Huldah the Prophetess, the wife of Shallum the son of Tikva, the son of Harhas, Keeper of the Wardrobe; (now she dwelt in Jerusalem in the college;) and they communed with her.

Huldah's False Prophecy

And she said unto them, Thus saith YHWH God of Israel, Tell the man who sent you to me. Thus saith YHWH, Behold, I will bring Evil upon this Place, and upon the inhabitants thereof, even all the words of the Book which the King of Judah hath read: Because they have forsaken me, and have burned incense unto other gods, that they might provoke me to anger with all the works of their hands; therefore my Wrath shall be kindled against this Place, and shall not be quenched. But to the King of Judah which sent you to enquire of YHWH, thus shall ye say to him, Thus saith YHWH God of Israel, As touching the words which thou hast heard; because thine heart was tender, and thou hast humbled thyself before YHWH, when thou heardest what I spake against this Place, and against the inhabitants thereof, that they should become a desolation and a curse, and hast rent thy clothes, and wept before me: I also have heard thee, saith YHWH.

Behold therefore, I will gather thee unto thy fathers, and thou shalt be gathered into thy grave in peace; and thine eyes shall not see all the Evil which I will bring upon this Place.

Contra

...Now the rest of the acts of Josiah, and all that he did, are they not written in the Book of the Chronicles of the Kings of Judah?

In his days Pharaoh-Nechoh king of Egypt went up against the king of Assyria to the River Euphrates; and King Josiah went against him; and he slew him at Megiddo, when he had seen him.

And his servants carried him in a chariot dead from Megiddo, and brought him to Jerusalem, and buried him in his own sepulchre.

And the people of the land took Jehoahaz the son of Josiah, and annointed him [made him Christ], and made him King in his father's stead.

– II Kings 22:8-20; 23:28-30 [Now that's what I call being gathered to your grave in peace. Why would Josiah oppose Pharaoh at Megiddo, an act that could only benefit Assyria? Did this occur after the battle at the Euphrates, or was the army of Pharaoh on their way to the Euphrates? It makes little sense, especially since Pharaoh controls the Kings of Judah until the Babylonians take over (II Kings 23:31 - 24:1).]

Evidence of Anti-Sacrificial Ideology

And Samuel said, Hath YHWH as great delight in burnt-offerings and sacrifices, as in Obeying the Voice of YHWH?

Behold, to Obey is better than sacrifice, and to Hearken better than the fat of rams.

– I Samuel 15:22

O YHWH, open thou my lips; and my mouth shall show forth thy praise. For thou Desirest not Sacrifice; else would I give it; thou Delightest not in burnt-offering.

The Sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not Despise.

– Psalm 51:16-17

To do Justice and Judgment is more acceptable to YHWH than sacrifice.

– Proverbs 21:3

Keep thy foot when thou goest to the House of God,
 and be more ready to Hear, than to give the
 Sacrifice of Fools: for they consider
 not that they do Evil.
 – Ecclesiastes 5:1

For I desired Mercy, and not sacrifice; and the
 Knowledge of God more than burnt-offerings.
 – Hosea 6:6

He hath Showed thee, O man, what is Good;
 and what doth YHWH require of thee,
 but to do Justly, and to Love Mercy,
 and to walk Humbly with thy God?
 – Micah 6:8

The Test for False Prophecy

Wherefore I give you to Understand, that no man speaking by
 the Spirit of God calleth Jesus Accursed: and that no man can say
 that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Spirit.
 – I Corinthians 12:3

Beloved, believe not every Spirit, but try the Spirits whether they are
 of God: because many False Prophets are gone out into the Kosmos.
 Hereby Know ye the Spirit of God: Every Spirit that Confesseth
 that Jesus Christ is come in the Flesh [a real Human Being,
 with a human father and mother] is of God.
 And every spirit that Confesseth Not that Jesus Christ is come
 in the Flesh, is not of God: and this is that spirit of Antichrist,
 whereof ye have heard that it should come,
 and even now is in the Kosmos.
 – I John 4:1-3

If there arise among you a Prophet, or a Dreamer of Dreams,
 and giveth thee a Sign or a Wonder, and the Sign or the Wonder
 come to pass, whereof he spake unto thee, saying, Let us go after
 other gods, which thou hast not known, and let us serve them;
 Thou shalt not hearken unto the words of that prophet,
 or that dreamer of dreams: for YHWH your God
 Proveth you, to Know whether ye Love YHWH
 your God with all your heart and with all your Soul.

...But the prophet, which shall presume to speak a Word in my Name, which I have not commanded him to speak, or that shall speak in the name of other gods, even that prophet shall die.

And if thou say in thine heart, How shall we Know the Word which YHWH hath not Spoken?

When a prophet speaketh in the Name of YHWH, if the thing follow not, nor come to pass, that is the thing which YHWH hath not Spoken, but the prophet hath spoken it presumptuously: thou shall not be afraid of him.

– Deuteronomy 13:1-3; 18:20:22

[Thus revealing that the Prophecy of Huldah Proved False, as well as the Book of Revelation.]

The Date of the Book of Revelation

It is not expedient for me doubtless to glory.

I [Paul] will come to Visions and Revelations of the Lord.

I knew a man in Christ [the Apostle John] above 14 years ago [at the Circumcision Summit in Jerusalem],

(whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God Knoweth:) such an one caught up to the Third Heaven [cf. Revelation 4:1-3].

– II Corinthians 12:1-2 [14 years earlier would place Paul's knowledge of this Revelation to the time of the Circumcision Summit (Acts 15; Galatians 2). Thus, if the letter to the Galatians was written somewhere in 55-56 A.D., the date of John's Revelation is dated to somewhere in 41-42 A.D., to wit, the time Caligula [the Beast from the Sea: Rev. 13:1] ordered Herod Agrippa I [the Beast from the Earth: Rev. 13:11] to place a giagantic statue of Caligula in the Holy of Holies, an event on which Acts is silent.]

Evidence that the Book of Revelation is False Prophecy

The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to Show unto his servants **things which must shortly come to pass.** and he sent and **Signified it by his Angel** unto his servant John.

...**Behold, I come quickly;** hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

...And he said unto me, These sayings are faithful and true:
and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his Angel
to Show unto his servants the things which must shortly be done.

Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keepeth the sayings
of the prophecy of this book.

And I John saw these things, and heard them.

And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship
before the feet of the Angel which shewed me these things.

Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy
fellow servant, and of thy brothers the prophets,
and of them which keep the sayings of this bookd:
worship God. And he saith unto me, Seal not the
sayings of the prophecy of this book:

for the time is at hand.

...And, behold, **I come quickly;**
and my reward is with me, to give
every man according to his work, shall be.

...He which testifieth these things saith,

Surely I come quickly.

– Revelation 1:1; 3:11; 22:6-10, 12, 20

[Even allowing for the common date of Revelation,
to wit, in the '90's under Domitian, Christ
did not come quickly, shortly, and
surely the time was not at hand.
To argue that the things prophesied
are yet to be fulfilled is to deny the
historical context of the prophecy.]

Further Evidence of an Early Date of Revelation

And there was given me a reed like unto a rod:
and the Angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure
the Temple of God, and the altar, and them
that worship therein. But the court that is without
the Temple leave out, and measure it not;
for it is given unto the Gentiles:
and the Holy City shall they tread under foot
forty and two months.

– Revelation 11:1-2 [the Temple was still standing
at the time Revelation was written; it was destroyed

by the Romans in 70 A.D., within the Generation
of Jesus, as he truthfully prophesied in 30 A.D.
(see below).]

True Prophecy:

Jesus Prophesies the Destruction of the Temple Within 40 Years

And as he went out of the Temple, one of his disciples saith,
Master, see what manner of stones and what buildings are here!
And Jesus answering said unto him,
Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone
upon another, that shall not be thrown down....
Amen I say unto you, that this Generation shall not pass,
till all these things be done.
– Mark 13:1-2, 30

Jesus Threatens the Temple's Destruction

And the Jews' Passover was at hand, and Jesus went up
to Jerusalem, and found in the Temple those that sold
oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money
sitting: and when he had made a scourge of small cords,
he drove them all out of the Temple, and the sheep and
the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and
overthrew the tables; and said unto them that sold doves,
Take these things hence; make not my Father's House
an House of Merchandise.

And his disciples remembered that it was written,
The Zeal of thine House hath eaten me up.
Then answered the Jews and said unto him,
What Sign Showest thou unto us, seeing that thou
doest these things?

Jesus answered and said unto them,

**Destroy this Temple, and in Three Days
I will Raise it Up.**

Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was
this Temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up
in three days?

– John 2:13-20 [Almost every modern scholar
is convinced that all four Gospels were written
after the Roman destruction of Jerusalem and the
Temple (70 A.D.), and thus equate this prediction

as after the fact, thus denying that Jesus ever made it. But I believe that Jesus made this prediction on the evidence that not one book or letter in the New Testament speaks about the actual event, and seeing that later evangelists would have shown how this prophecy was fulfilled, and thus proof of True Prophecy, speaks against such an idea in my opinion. After all, in Mark's Apocalypse (13:32-33) Jesus warns: "But of that Day and that Hour Knoweth no man, no, not the Angels which are in Heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. Take ye heed, watch and pray; for ye Know not when the Time is." Mt. 24:36 omits "neither the Son"; there is no parallel in Luke 21.]

Jeremiah's Paradox

For thus saith YHWH; David shall never want a man to sit upon the Throne of the House of Israel.
 – Jeremiah 33:17 [Fulfilled by Jesus Christ, son of Joseph, of the Line of Nathan, son of David and Bathsheba: Luke 3:23-31; I Chronicles 3:4]

Therefore thus saith YHWH of Jehoiakim King of Judah; He shall have none to sit upon the Throne of David; and his dead body shall be cast out in the day to the heat, and in the night to the frost.
 – Jeremiah 36:30 [Fulfilled by Zerubbabel through James the Just, son of Joseph, of the Royal Line of Solomon, son of David and Bathsheba (Matthew 1:1-17; Mark 6:3).]

Evidence of Post-Exilic Suppression of Asherah Worship

Ten Commandments Amended by Hilkiyah to Prohibit Graven Images in the Time of Josiah King of Judah and Jeremiah the Prophet, Son of Hilkiyah the High Priest

Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in Heaven above [like Cherubim and Bronze Seraphim Serpents], or that is in the Earth beneath [like Golden Calves, Asherah Idols, Groves/Trees, Pomegranates, Wooden Poles/Pillars], Lions, Oxen, Open Flowers, Lily Work],

or that is in the Water under the Earth.
 – Exodus 20:4

When YHWH thy God shall bring thee unto the land whither thou goest
 to possess it, and hath cast out many Nations before thee,
 the Hittites, and the Girgashites, and the Amorites and the
 Canaanites, and the Perizzites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites,
 Seven Nations greater and mightier than thou;
 and when YHWH thy God shall deliver them before thee;
 thou shalt smite them; thou shalt make no covenant with them,
 nor show mercy unto them: neither shalt thou make marriages
 with them; thy daughter thou shalt not give unto his son,
 nor his daughter shalt thou take unto thy son.
 For they will turn away thy son from following me,
 that they may serve other gods: so will the anger of
 YHWH be kindled against you, and destroy thee suddenly.
 But thus shall ye deal with them; ye shall destroy their altars,
 and break down their images, and cut down their Asherah groves,
 and burn their graven images with fire.
 ...Thou shalt not plant thee an Asherah grove of any trees near
 unto the altar of YHWH thy God, which thou shalt make thee.
 Neither shalt thou set thee up any Pillar which YHWH God Hateth.

...There shall be no Sacred Prostitute of the daughters of Israel, nor a Sacred
 Male Prostitute of the sons of Israel. Thou shalt not bring the hire of a
 Prostitute, or the price of a Dog, into the House of YHWH thy God
 for any vow: for even both these are abomination to YHWH thy God.
 – Deuteronomy 7:1-5; 16:21-22; 22:17-18

The Last Known Possessors of the Ark of the Covenant
 with the Graven Images of the Cherubim on the Mercy Seat

And [King Josiah] said unto the Levites that taught all Israel,
 which were Holy unto YHWH, Put the Holy Ark in the House
 which Solomon the son of David the King of Israel did build;
 it shall not be a burden upon your shoulders.
 – II Chronicles 35:3

The Last Mention of the Ark of the Covenant in the Old Testament

And it shall come to pass, when ye be multiplied and increased in the land, in those days, saith YHWH, They shall say no more, the Ark of the Covenant of YHWH:

neither shall it come to mind; neither shall they remember:

neither shall they visit it: neither shall that be done any more.

– Jeremiah 3:16 [The Ark likely was destroyed when the Commandment prohibiting graven images was added by Hilkiah, during the reform of Josiah: the Levites were last to possess it.]

A Funny Thing Happened On the Way to Beth-Shemesh

So they sent and gathered together all the Lords of the Philistines, and said, Send away the Ark of the God of Israel, and let it go again to his own Place, that it slay us not, and our people: for there was a Deadly Destruction throughout all the city; the Hand of God was very heavy there. And the men that died not were smitten with the emerods: and the cry of the city went up to Heaven....And the Philistines called for the priests and the diviners, saying, What shall we do to the Ark of YHWH? tell us wherewith we shall send it to its Place.

And they said, If ye send away the Ark of the God of Israel, send it not empty; but in any wise return him a trespass-offering: then ye shall be healed, and it shall be known to you why his Hand is not removed from you.

Then said they, What shall be the trespass-offering which we shall return to him? They answered, Five Golden Emerods, and Five Golden Mice, according to the number of the Lords of the Philistines: for one Plague was on you all, and on your Lords. Wherefore ye shall make Images of your emerods, and Images of your mice that mar the land; and ye shall give Glory unto the God of Israel: peradventure he will lighten his Hand from off you, and from off your gods, and from off your land. Wherefore then do ye harden your hearts, as the Eygptians and Pharaoh hardened their hearts? when he had Wrought Wonderfully among them, did they not let the people go and they departed? Now therefore make a new cart, and take two milch kine, on which there hath come no yoke, and tie the kine to the cart, and bring their calves home from them: and take the Ark of YHWH, and lay it upon the cart; and put the Jewels of Gold, which ye return him for a trespass-offering, in a coffer by the side thereof; and send it away,

that it may go. And see, if it goeth up by the way of his own coast to Beth-Shemesh, then he hath done us this Great Evil: but if not, then we shall know that it is not his Hand that smote us; it was a Chance, that happened to us.

And the men did so; and took two milch kine, and tied them to the cart, and shut up their calves at home: and they laid the Ark of YHWH upon the cart, and the coffer with the Mice of Gold and the Images of their Emerods. And the kine took the straight way to the way of Beth-Shemesh, and went along the highway, lowing as they went, and turned not aside to the right hand or to the left; and the Lords of the Philistines went after them unto the border of Beth-Shemesh. And they of Beth-Shemesh were reaping their wheat harvest in the valley; and they lifted up their eyes, and saw the Ark, and rejoiced to see it. And the cart came into the field of Joshua, a Beth-Shemite, and stood there, where there was a Great Stone: and they clave the wood of the cart, and offered the kine a burnt-offering unto YHWH. And the Levites took down the Ark of YHWH, and the coffer that was with it, wherein the Jewels of Gold were, and put them on the Great Stone: and the men of Beth-Shemesh offered burnt-offerings and sacrificed sacrifices the same day unto YHWH.

And when the Five Lords of the Philistines had seen it, they returned to Ekron the same day. And these are the Golden Emerods which the Philistines returned for a trespass-offering unto YHWH; for Ashdod one, for Gaza one, for Askelon one, for Gath one, for Ekron one; and the Golden Mice, according to the number of all the cities of the Philistines belonging to the Five Lords, both of fenced cities, and of country villages, even unto the Great Stone of Abel, whereon they set down the Ark of YHWH; which Stone remaineth unto this day in the field of Joshua, the Beth-Shemeshite.

And he smote the men of Beth-Shemesh, because they had looked into the Ark of YHWH, even he smote of the people fifty thousand and threescore and ten men: and the people lamented, because YHWH had smitten many of the people with a Great Slaughter. And the men of Beth-Shemesh said, Who is able to stand before this Holy YHWH God? and to whom shall he go up from us? And they sent messengers to the inhabitants of Kirjath-Jearim, saying, The Philistines have brought again the Ark of YHWH; Come ye down, and fetch it up to you.

And the men of Kirjath-Jearim came, and fetched up the Ark of YHWH, and brought it into the House of Abinadab in the Hill, and sanctified Eleazar his son to Keep the Ark of YHWH. And it came to pass, while the Ark bode in Kirjath-Jearim, that the time was long; for it was twenty years: and all the House of Israel lamented after YHWH.

– I Samuel 5:11-12; 6:2 - 7:2 [This story is not only very funny when you see and hear the female milk cows heavy with milk lowing, in utmost misery, as God directs them to Beth-Shemesh. But then the story gets strange. I mean, why didn't the Levites take charge after the fifty thousand and seventy men were slain? Did the Levites do the slaying? They seemed to have a knack for killing their own people.

And why was the Ark left in the hands of Gentiles? Why did the Levites allow the people to look inside the Ark?

And those poor kine, never getting back to nurse their calves. They never had a choice in the matter.

And what a totally brilliant way of divining the Will of God. The Philistine priests and diviners suggested something impossible in normal life to happen in order to see if the Will of God was against them, in an almost fool-proof plan to avoid the Heavy Hand of God. Imagine their surprise when the kine acted contrary to their nature. God seemed pleased to let the Ark remain in the hands of Gibeonites.

Anyway, the Levites avoided the Ark like a Plague after this event and didn't get back into the game until David brought the Ark from the House of Abinadab on the Hill in Gibeah (i.e. a High Place), now called Baale of Judah, to Jerusalem.

When they say that God acts in mysterious ways, they are not kidding considering this story.

I mean, the Beth-Shemeshites were rejoicing one moment, then being slain with a Great Slaughter moments later. Go figure.]

God is Known By the Things He has Made

For the Invisible Things of him [YHWH & Asherah]
from the Creation of the Kosmos are clearly Seen,
being Understood by the Things that are Made,
even his Eternal Power and Godhead.

– Romans 1:20

Evidence of Magic and Magicians in the Bible

And YHWH said unto Moses, Say unto Aaron, Stretch out
thy Rod, and smite the dust of the land, that it may become lice
throughout all the Land of Egypt. And they did so; for Aaron
stretched out his hand with his Rod, and smote the dust of
the earth, and it became lice in men, and in beast; all the dust
of the land became lice throughout all the Land of Egypt.
And the Magicians did so with their Enchantments to bring
forth lice, but they could not: so there were lice upon man,
and upon beast.

Then the Magicians said unto Pharaoh, This is the Finger of God;
and Pharaoh's heart was Hardened, and he hearkened not unto
them; as YHWH had said.

– Exodus 8:16-19

Then the king made Daniel a Great Man, and gave him
many great gifts, and made him ruler over the whole
province of Babylon, and Chief of the Governors
over all the Wise Men [Magi] of Babylon.

...But at the last Daniel came in before me, whose name was
Beltshazzar, according to the name of my god,
and in whom is the Spirit of the Holy Gods:
and before him I told the Dream, saying,
O Beltshazzar, Master of the Magicians,
because I know that the Spirit of the Holy Gods is in thee:
and no secret troubleth thee, tell me the Visions
of my Dream that I have Seen, and the
Interpretation thereof.

...I Saw in the Visions of my head upon my bed,
and, behold, a Watcher and an Holy One came
down from Heaven.

...This matter is by the Decree of the Watchers,
and the Demand by the Word of the Holy Ones;
to the intent that the living may Know that the
Most High Ruleth in the kingdom of men,
and giveth it to whomsoever he will,
and setteth up over it the basest of men.

...And whereas the king Saw a Watcher
and an Holy One coming down from Heaven.
– Daniel 2:48; 4:8-9, 13, 17, 23a

Jacob Practices Sympathetic Magic

And Laban said, Behold, I would it might be according to thy
word. And he removed that day the he goats that were ringstraked
and spotted, and all the she goats that were speckled and spotted,
and everyone that had some white in it, and all the brown among
the sheep, and gave them into the hands of his sons.

And he set three days' journey betwixt himself and Jacob: and
Jacob fed the rest of Laban's flocks.

And Jacob took him rods of green poplar, and of the hazel and
chestnut tree; and pilled white strakes in them, and made the white
appear that was in the rods. And he set the rods which he had pilled
before the flocks in the gutters in the watering troughs when the flocks
came to drink, that they should conceive when they came to drink.
And the flocks conceived before the rods, and brought forth cattle
ringstraked, speckled, and spotted.

And Jacob did separate the lambs, and set the faces of the flocks
toward the ringstraked, and all the brown in the flock of Laban;
and he put his own flocks to themselves, and put them not unto
Laban's cattle. And it came to pass, whensoever the stronger
cattle did conceive, that Jacob laid the rods before the eyes of
the cattle in the gutters, that they might conceive among the rods.
But when the cattle were feeble, he put them not in: so the feebler
were Laban's, and the stronger Jacob's.

– Genesis 30:34-42

Joseph Practices Cup Divination

And he commanded the steward of his house, saying, Fill the men's sacks with food, as much as they can carry, and put every man's money in his sack's mouth. And put my Cup, the silver Cup, in the sack's mouth of the youngest, and his corn money. And he did according to the word that Joseph had spoken.

As soon as the morning was light, the men were sent away, they and their asses. And when they were gone out of the city, and not yet far off, Joseph said unto his steward, Up, follow after the men; and when thou dost overtake them, say unto them, Wherefore have ye rewarded Evil for Good? Is not this it in which my lord drinketh, and whereby indeed he Divineth? ye have done Evil in so doing.

– Genesis 44:1-5

David Practices Ephod Magic With the Urim and Thummin

And they shall make the Ephod of gold, of blue, and of purple, of scarlet, and fine twined linen, with cunning work....
And thou shalt make the Breastplate of Judgment with cunning work; after the work of the Ephod thou shalt make it of gold, and of scarlet, of blue, and of purple, and of fine twined linen, shalt thou make it.

...Thou shalt put in the Breastplate of Judgment the Urim and the Thummin: and they shall be upon Aaron's heart, when he goeth in before YHWH: and Aaron shall bear the Judgment of the children of Israel upon his heart continually.

– Exodus 28:6, 15, 30

And he [Moses] put upon him [Aaron] the coat, and girded him with the girdle, and clothed him with the robe, and put the Ephod upon him, and he girded him with the curious girdle of the Ephod, and bound it unto him therewith. And he put the Breastplate upon him; also he put in the Breastplate the Urim and Thummin.

– Leviticus 8:7-8 [I imagine the Urim and Thummin as a pair of dice, one white, and one black. As long as you ask yes or no questions, this kind of divination will always give you an answer.]

And he [Joshua] shall stand before Eleazar the Priest, who shall ask counsel for him after the Judgment of Urim before YHWH: at his word shall they go out, and at his word they shall come in, both he, and all the children of Israel with him, even all the Congregation.

– Numbers 27:21 [I imagine the Judgment of Urim to be positive.]

And it came to pass, when Abiathar the son of Ahimelech fled to David to Keilah, that he came down with an Ephod in his hand....
 And David knew that Saul secretly practiced mischief against him; and he said to Abiathar the Priest, Bring hither the Ephod. Then said David, O YHWH God of Israel, thy servant hath certainly heard that Saul seeketh to come to Keilah, to destroy the city for my sake.
 Will the men of Keilah deliver me up into his hand? will Saul come down, as thy servant hath heard? O YHWH God of Israel, I beseech thee, tell thy servant.

And YHWH said, He will come down.

Then said David, Will the men of Keilah deliver me and my men into the hand of Saul?

And YHWH said, They will deliver thee up.

– I Samuel 28:6, 9-12

And David said to Abiathar the Priest, Ahimelech's son, I pray thee, bring me hither the Ephod. And Abiathar brought thither the Ephod to David.

And David enquired at YHWH, Shall I pursue after this troop? shall I overtake them?

And he answered him, Pursue: for thou shalt surely overtake them, and without fail recover all.

– I Samuel 30:7-8

The Later Suppression of Magic

When thou art come into the land which YHWH thy God giveth thee, thou shalt not learn to do after the abominations of those Nations. There shall not be found among you any one that maketh his son or daughter pass through the fire, or that useth Divination, or an Observer of Times, or an Enchanter, or a Witch, or a Charmer, or a Consulter with Familiar Spirits, or a Wizard, or a Necromancer.

For all that do these things are an abomination
 unto YHWH: and because of these abominations
 YHWH thy God doth drive them out from before thee.
 Thou shalt be Perfect with YHWH thy God.
 For these Nations, which thou shalt possess,
 hearkened unto Observers of Times,
 and unto Diviners: but as for thee,
 YHWH thy god hath not suffered thee to do so.
 – Deuteronomy 18:9-14

The Magi from the East Were Disciples of Daniel and the 70 Weeks

Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea
 in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came
 Wise Men [Magi] from the East [Babylon] to Jerusalem,
 saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews?
 for we have Seen his Star [Conjunction of Jupiter
 and Saturn] in the East [Babylon],
 and we are come to worship him.
 – Matthew 2:1-2

An Astrological Prophecy

I Beheld in the Night Visions, and, behold,
 One like the Son of Man came with the Clouds of Heaven,
 and came to the Ancient of Days, and they brought
 him near before him. And there was given him Dominion,
 and Glory, and a Kingdom, that all people, nations,
 and languages, should serve him:
 his Dominion is an Everlasting Dominion,
 which shall not pass away, and his Kingdom
 that which shall not be destroyed.
 – Daniel 7:12-14 [Foretelling a Conjunction
 of Saturn (Ancient of Days) and Jupiter
 (One like the Son of Man: the King);
 signifying a Royal Birth.]

The Evolution of a Lie

And all the people of Judah took Azariah [Uzziah],
which was sixteen years old, and made him King
instead of his father Amaziah.

He built Elath, and restored it to Judah,
after that the King slept with his fathers....

In the twenty and seventh year of Jeroboam King
of Israel began Azariah King of Judah to reign.

Sixteen years old was he when he began to reign,
and he reigned two and fifty years in Jerusalem.

And his mother's name was Jecoliah of Jerusalem.

And he did that which was Right in the Sight of YHWH,
according to all that his father Amaziah had done;
save that the High Places were not removed:
the people sacrificed and burnt incense
still on the High Places.

And YHWH smote the King, so that he was a leper
unto the day of his death, and dwelt in a several house.

And Jothan the King's son was over the House,
Judging the people of the land.

And the rest of the acts of Azariah, and all that he did,
are they not written in the Book of the Chronicles
of the Kings of Judah?

So Azariah slept with his fathers; and they buried him
with his fathers in the City of David: and Jothan
his son reigned in his stead.

– II Kings 14:21-22; 15:1-7 [We are not told why YHWH
smote the King with leprosy, but that's not going to stop
the Chronicler from Inventing one. This account predates
the Chronicler, and likely was composed by the
Deuteronomist. But before we get to the Chronicler, we
must lay the groundwork for his Invention.]

The words of Amos, who was among the herdmen of Tekoa,
which he saw concerning Israel in the days of Uzziah
King of Judah, and in the days of Jeroboam the son of
Joash King of Israel, two years before the Earthquake.

– Amos 1:1 [This must have been a very powerful
earthquake, because it is still on the mind of
prophets hundreds of years later; see below.]

And ye shall flee to the valley of the mountains;
 for the valley of the mountains shall reach unto Azal:
 yea, ye shall flee, like as ye fled from before the Earthquake
 in the days of Uzziah King of Judah: and YHWH my God
 shall come and all the Holy Ones with him.
 – Zechariah 14:5 [This was written just after the Exiles returned
 from Babylon. And now we get to the Chronicler's invention.]

Then all the people of Judah took Uzziah, who was
 sixteen years old, and made him King in the Room
 of his father Amaziah...

But when he was strong, his heart was lifted up to
 his destruction: for he transgressed against YHWH
 his God, and went into the Temple of YHWH
 to burn incense upon the Altar of Incense.
 And Azariah the Priest went in after him,
 and with him fourscore Priests of YHWH,
 that were valiant men.

And they withstood Uzziah the King,
 and said unto him, It appertaineth not unto thee,
 Uzziah, to burn incense unto YHWH, but to the Priests
 the sons of Aaron, that are consecrated to burn incense;
 go out of the Sanctuary; for thou hast Trespasped;
 neither shall it be for thine honor from YHWH God.

Then Uzziah was wroth, and had a censer in his hand
 to burn incense: and while he was wroth with the Priests,
 the leprosy even rose up in his forehead before the Priests
 in the House of YHWH, from beside the Incense Altar.

– II Chronicles 14:5 [This is a coup by the Priests,
 forbidding the King from doing what Solomon had
 built the Golden Altar of Incense to be for, mainly for
 the King's worship in his private chapel. But note
 how sly the Chronicler was when he linked the
 leprosy to the incense. Hold on, Josephus takes
 it even farther down the road; see below.]

While Uzziah was in this state, and making preparations
 [for futurity,] he was corrupted in his mind by pride, and
 became insolent, and this on account of that abundance
 which he had of things that will soon perish, and despised
 that power which is of eternal duration, (which consisted of
 in piety toward God, and in the observation of his Laws;)

so he fell by the occasion of the good success of his affairs, and was carried headlong into those sins of his father, which the splendor of that prosperity he enjoyed, and the glorious actions he had done, led him into, while he was not able to govern himself well about them.

Accordingly, when a remarkable day was come, and a general festival was to be celebrated, he put on the holy garment, and went into the Temple to offer incense to God upon the Golden Altar, which he was prohibited to do by Azariah the High Priest, who had fourscore Priests with him, who told him that it was not Lawful for him to offer sacrifice, and that “none besides the posterity of Aaron were permitted so to do.” And when they cried out, that he must go out of the Temple, and not Trespass against God, he was wroth with them, and threatened to kill them, unless they would hold their peace.

In the meantime, a Great Earthquake shook the ground, and a rent was made in the Temple, and the bright rays of the Sun shone through it, and fell upon the King’s face, inasmuch that the leprosy seized upon him immediately.

– Josephus, Antiquities of the Jews [Whiston] IX:10.4a
[You see how later editors were tempted to slant the story their way. Josephus was a Priest and obviously pro-Aaron. But I believe we can use the Call of Isaiah as a better link to the Great Earthquake; see below.]

In the year King Uzziah died I saw also the Lord sitting upon a Throne, High and Lifted Up, and his train filled the Temple. Above it stood the Seraphim: each one had six wings; and twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered his feet, and with twain he did fly.

And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is YHWH of Hosts: the whole Earth is full of his Glory.

And the posts of the door moved at the Voice of him that cried, and the House was filled with smoke.

– Isaiah 6:1-4 [I believe this is when the Great Earthquake occurred. And since neither Amos or Zechariah can tell us the time, they both agree that it was in the days of Uzziah.]

Isaiah's Messianic Prophetic Song of the Servant

And there shall come forth a Rod out of the Stem of Jesse,
and a Branch shall grow out of his Roots: and the Spirit of YHWH
shall rest upon him, the Spirit of Wisdom and Understanding,
the Spirit of Counsel and Might, the Spirit of Knowledge and
the Fear of YHWH; and shall make him of Quick Understanding
in the Fear of YHWH: and he shall not Judge after the Sight of
his Eyes, neither Reprove after the Hearing of his Ears:
but with Righteousness shall he Judge the poor, and Reprove
with Equity for the meek of the Earth; and he shall Smite the
Earth with the Rod of his Mouth, and with the Breath of his Lips
shall he Slay the Wicked. And Righteousness shall be the
Girdle of his Reins...

They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my Holy Mountain; for the Earth shall
be full of the Knowledge of YHWH, as the waters cover the Sea. And in that
Day there shall be a Root of Jesse, which shall Stand for an Ensign of the people;
to it shall the Gentiles Seek: and his Rest shall be Glorious.

– Isaiah 11:1-5, 9-10

The Wind Bloweth Where It Listeth

And it shall come to pass afterward, that I Will Pour Out my Spirit
upon All Flesh; and your Sons and Daughters shall Prophecy, your
Old Men shall Dream Dreams, your Young Men shall See Visions:
and also upon the Servants and upon the Handmaids in those Days
Will I Pour Out my Spirit.

– Joel 2:28-29

Section V is a work in progress...

THE 22 CHRIST KINGS OF ZION AND THE DATES OF THEIR REIGNS

Counting David, there were 22 Christ Kings of Zion, one for every letter in the Hebrew Alphabet, the Beginning and the End. The sources for the dates are from: (1) I Kings, by Mordichai Cogan (Anchor Bible: Doubleday, Appendix II: 2001); (2) 1 and 2 Kings, by Donald J. Wiseman (Leicester, GB: IVP Press; 1993, pp. 28-29); and (3) The NIV Study Bible (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Pub., pp. 496-497; 1995). The dates are not set in stone but are by and by accurate and all but one of the Kings were Before Jesus Christ (B.C.). Dates may reflect overlaps in different reigns.

1. King David.....	(1) 1005 - 965	(2) 10010 - 970	(3) N/A
2. King Solomon.....	(1) 968 - 928	(2) 970 - 930	(3) N/A
3. King Rehoboam.....	(1) 928 - 911	(2) 930 - 913	(3) 930 - 913
4. King Abijah.....	(1) 911 - 908	(2) 913 - 910	(3) 913 - 910
5. King Asa.....	(1) 908 - 867	(2) 910 - 869	(3) 910 - 869
6. King Jehoshaphat.....	(1) 870 - 846	(2) 872 - 848	(3) 872 - 848
7. King Jehoram.....	(1) 851 - 853	(2) 853 - 842	(3) 848 - 841
8. King Ahaziah.....	(1) 843 - 842	(2) 842 - 841	(3) 841
9. King Joash.....	(1) 836 - 798	(2) 835 - 796	(3) 835 - 796
10. King Amaziah.....	(1) 798 - 769	(2) 795 - 767	(3) 796 - 767
11. King Azariah/Uzziah.....	(1) 785 - 733	(2) 792 - 740	(3) 792 - 740
12. King Jotham.....	(1) 759 - 743	(2) 750 - 735	(3) 750 - 735
13. King Ahaz.....	(1) 743 - 727	(2) 735 - 719	(3) 735 - 715
14. King Hezekiah.....	(1) 727 - 698	(2) 715/727 - 698	(3) 715 - 686
15. King Manasseh.....	(1) 698 - 642	(2) 697 - 642	(3) 697 - 642
16. King Amon.....	(1) 641 - 640	(2) 642 - 640	(3) 642 - 640
17. King Josiah.....	(1) 639 - 609	(2) 640 - 609	(3) 640 - 609
18. King Jehoahaz.....	(1) 609	(2) 609	(3) 609
19. King Jehoiakim.....	(1) 608 - 598	(2) 609 - 596	(3) 609 - 598
20. King Jehoiachin.....	(1) 599	(2) 597	(3) 598 - 597
21. King Zedekiah.....	(1) 596 - 586	(2) 597 - 586	(3) 597 - 586
22. King Jesus Christ.....	6 B.C. - 33 A.D.	(2) Same	(3) Same

These Christ Kings possessed the Holy Spirit under a Covenant of Grace that was Eternal and is the same Covenant as the New Covenant Jesus passed on to his Brothers and Sisters by shedding his blood for everyone. One can study them as past examples of how certain personalities handled the status of Kings under God's Grace. Some took advantage and others were more obedient to the Law of Moses. Some didn't worry about following it for they lived under Grace not by the Works of the Law.